THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 15

Blood Red

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Magus Era

(巫神纪)

by

Blood Red

(血红)

Synopsis

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1401: For What Purpose

Orders spread in all directions. Under the pressure from Emperor Xuanyuan and the other three former emperors, those large families were mobilized too this time.

Since the first war of aggression started by the non-humankind in Pan Gu world, this was the first time for all human forces to mobilize fully. Countless weapon depots were opened, several hidden forces were put in use, and a large number of elites who had been cultivating themselves in isolation were woken up. For quite a long while, one could hear conversations like this in Pu Ban City — 'Eh? Old dude, you're still alive? Everyone thought you died centuries ago!'

Emperor Xuanyuan visited the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind himself. No one knew what he said to the dragons and phoenixes, but as a result of his trip, the dragons and phoenixes made their moves too, even if they had always been proud and never liked to be too close to the humankind.

Pu Ban City became a giant military camp. Food, armaments, and elite warriors were sent to Pu Ban City ceaselessly. Fierce mounts ran about on the ground, quaking the ground slightly. Enormous birds hovered in the sky, even covering the sun with their wings.

Countless water-kind captives who were enslaved by human warriors were gathered as well. They filled all rivers, lakes, and streams around the city, releasing their spirit creature power straight to the sky and forming dense dark clouds that covered the sky. Each day, these water-kind spirit creatures needed to absorb natural powers to cultivate themselves. Therefore, Pu Ban City was suffused with a strong fishy smell.

Strong creatures worshipped by human clans, such as treemen, jungle spirits, stone men, earth spirits, and all kinds of mysterious non-human creatures also gathered in Pu Ban City because of the

general mobilization of the humankind. One could see large groups of strange creatures crossing or even dancing on the streets.

Many clans woke up their strongest worshipped creatures. Therefore, some rare, ancient species showed up in Pu Ban City. According to the legends, some of these species were extinct already, but now, one could find them all in Pu Ban City. Hiderigami[1] was one of these legendary creatures. According to the legend, she attended the war against Chi You with Emperor Xuanyuan. Hiderigami was pretty and slim, looking like a young girl. Less than three hours after she arrived in Pu Ban City, the city was dried. All plants died, and a strong burning stink could be sensed from every area of the city.

Within six hours after she arrived, hundreds of fire accidents happened in the city. Thousands of buildings were burned, even including a granary.

Without a choice, Emperor Xuanyuan visited Hiderigami and respectfully invited her to rest in a large mansion ten-thousand miles away, which was built especially for her. The same evening, the mountain range where the mansion was located suffered a massive wildfire. All plants in that area were incinerated.

While all forces were heading to Pu Ban City, Ji Hao went northward alone.

Chi Ban Mountain line of defense...

The flood was gone, and the mountains, which were soaked in water for years, were already covered in moss and tender grass. Some ancient trees with strong life-force were rooted deep in the mountains. As the flood sank, these trees were again full of vigor and vitality, sprouting new leaves.

The humankind spent incalculable efforts, time, and resources on the Chi Ban Mountain line of defense. Every mountain in this tremendous mountain range were thickly carved with spell symbols, and had a defensive formation buried in it.

Once the flood was gone, the Chi Ban Mountain line of defense was reactivated, and a sizeable number of troops settled in it. Once the army led by Yi Di, Hao Tao, Tao Sha, and the other commanders returned, the Chi Ban Mountain line of defense would have a sufficient force.

The twelve cities of calamity lined up above the Chi Ban Mountain line of defense. Last time, the Blood Moon launched an offensive by sending their troops directly into the Chi Ban Mountain area, starting intensives fight against human warriors. But this time, they did it in a different way. Patiently and unhurriedly, they gradually pushed the twelve cities of great calamity forward.

When Ji Hao arrived in Chi Ban Mountain, he saw a city of great calamity release a dazzling beam of light. Within the light, a towering mountain down below burst with countless spell symbols and defensive screens. The ground was shaking while the defensive formation buried in the mount was crazily extracting the earth power to generated miles thick defensive screens to fight against the strike launched by the city of great calamity.

Followed by a thunderous bang, the defensive formations shattered eventually, and the mountain was flattened. Hundreds of human warriors stationed on the mountain had left with their flying mounts long ago, while hundreds of Jia Clan warriors on metal plates chased closely after them. An intense fight was immediately started between them, as warriors from both sides suffered injuries.

Before long, the Jia Clan warriors gave on chasing, and the human warriors escaped successfully.

On the ground, countless non-humankind slaves had been yelling and shouting. They were busy at flattening the collapsed mountain to the ground with a large number of large-scale machines they controlled. They broke large rocks, filled them into large pits on the ground, flattened the road surface with heavy metal machines,

then poured a grey-coloured, sticky liquid on the road.

The gray liquid quickly melted rocks and sands. Soon, the melted rocks and sands solidified again, and the road surface became a translucent, gray-colored crystalline solid body. These non-humankind slaves had been working quite efficiently. Not long afterward, they paved a hundred-miles-wild road through the collapsed mountain.

The city of great calamity slowly moved south. Reaching the next mount, it again released a dazzling light beam and tore down the next mountain. Afterward, hundreds of Jia Clan warriors chased after a group of human warriors for a short while, and non-humankind salves on the ground paved another section of the road.

The twelve cities of calamity kept moving south, unhurriedly destroying mountains while countless non-humankind slaves were paving the twelve broad roads on the ground. They worked fairly hard, that sweat had been streaming down their backs. By the time Ji Hao arrived, the twelve roads had already reached into the Chi Ban Mountain range from the north side for over two-thousand miles.

Ji Hao looked at the twelve cities of great calamity in the air, stunned.

Were these non-humankind beings trying to create twelve paths that led straight to Pu Ban City?

Glancing at the boundless military camp of the non-humankind on the grassland by the north of Chi Ban Mountain, Ji Hao's heart was heavy. Without the Chi Ban Mountain line of defense, the non-humankind army would be able to head straight in through the twelve broad roads, which meant the human force had to put up a desperate fight against them on the grassland. But honestly, in both terms of military strength and equipment, the non-humankind was far stronger than the humankind. If the decisive

battle really happened on the grassland, the humankind would definitely suffer a severe loss, even if they managed to stop the non-humankind from approaching Pu Ban City. Not to mention the fact that the non-humankind now had twelve cities of great calamity!

However, these non-humankind beings didn't seem to be starting a real war! While frowning, Ji Hao looked at the twelve slowly moving cities of great calamity. A thought popped up in his head.

They didn't seem to start a real war because if they did, they could have launched a series of strike to the valleys and canyons, where the majority of human troops were stationed in, and the human force would have suffered heavy casualties long ago.

Pondering for a short while, Ji Hao transformed into a fiery light and flew to the nearest city of great calamity.

———————————

[1] Hiderigami, (Chinese: hànbá, 旱魃) is a mythical species that holds the power to cause droughts.

Chapter 1402: Perfect Offense and Defense

Following muffled swishing noises, tens of metal plates rose from a valley, flickering with dim lightning bolts. Treading on the metal plates, tens of Jia Clan warriors pounced on Ji Hao while laughing viciously.

Over ten human-shank-thick bows buzzed brightly, while spear-like metal arrows flew towards Ji Hao. The Jia Clan warriors laughed confidently. They believed that Ji Hao would die.

Ji Hao threw a sideways glance at those enormous arrows shot out by the Jia Clan warriors. The arrowheads were transparent, crystalline, three-feet-long, and covered with countless rolling spell symbols. Inside each arrowhead, spell symbols gathered into a black and red cloud. This kind of an arrow was extremely powerful, normally used to break cities. But with these arrows, these Jia Clan monsters attacked Ji Hao, a single human being!

"You're rich, aren't you?" Seeing these Jia Clan warriors releasing over ten powerful explosive arrows for him alone, Ji Hao smirked and pushed his palm out. Along with a resonant, high-pitched sound, his palm vibrated the air and generated a, hundreds of meters wide, cyan-colored, hand-shaped circle of light which slapped on those arrows.

Before the arrows were detonated by the spell symbols buried inside them, the cyan-colored hand-shaped light circle vibrated at a high frequency and shattered the arrows, disintegrating them into the finest grains.

The pupils of the tens of Jia Clan warrior immediately shrank to the size of needle points, their eyeballs almost popping out of their sockets. They glanced at Ji Hao in shock, then silently turned around and flew right away. The dim lightning bolts sparkling on their metal plates instantly grew brighter, leaving tens of meters long lightning bolts in the air.

Ji Hao made a step forward and reached near those fleeing Jia Clan warriors. Then, he threw out his pair of fists and caused muffled whooshing noises. Heavy punches landed on the backs of the Jia Clan warrior's heads. One after another, these Jia Clan warriors were knocked out.

Taking out a dark, triangular small flag, Ji Hao pointed at these Jia Clan warriors. As a stream of Netherworld power puffed out, a twenty-meters-long space-crack appeared in the air. Along with clear metal clangs, tens of black chains flew out of the crack, tied up these fainted Jia Clan warriors, and dragged them in.

This small flag was a treasure gifted to Ji Hao from Netherworld Hierarch after their last deal. With this small flag, Ji Hao could break the space and build a connection with the Netherworld whenever he wanted to send captives to Netherworld Hierarch. Netherworld Hierarch had arranged his people to wait on the other side. This was the main function of this flag. Netherworld Hierarch had been keeping a 'receiving record', according to which, every time the captives Ji Hao sent over achieved a certain number, Netherworld Hierarch would settle a payment. He would pay Ji Hao with valuable natural treasures from the Netherworld, or weapons or tools that he made, or all kinds of his zombie works, ghosts, devils, etc. With enough captives, everything could be negotiable.

Sending away these poor Jia Clan warriors, Ji Hao rolled up his sleeves and collected their metal plates. All non-humankind products had important reference value to the humankind. Before, human warriors had captured many similar metal plates from battlefields, but the metal plates used by these Jia Clan warriors Ji Hao encountered were three times faster than the regular ones. Clearly, the non-humankind had made a great progress in their techniques. Ji Hao would send these new metal plates to the Magi Palace, which might be able to crack them and create some new techniques.

In a short distance away, a group of Yu Clan people on a city of calamity, who had been gazing afar from the city wall, noticed Ji Hao.

Tens of Jia Clan warriors on patrol were taken down so easily by Ji Hao, and somehow, he sent them to an unknown place. Watching this, a Yu Clan young man in a gray cloak angrily pointed at Ji Hao and yelled aloud. Following his voice, the erect eye of a, hundreds of meters tall statue on the city wall shone suddenly, and a dazzling beam of light landed on Ji Hao's body.

Buzz! Ji Hao took a strike from the city of calamity even before he could activate the Pan Gu bell.

So fast, indescribably fast! Ji Hao saw nothing but a blinding light flashing across his eyes. Instinctively, he attempted to dodge, but before that, the light beam had already landed on him. The Taiji cloak released two streams of mist in the colors of black and white, blocking the beam of light. But still, Ji Hao felt his entire body was burning; he even sensed a faint scorching smell from his hair and eyebrows.

The tremendous impact force pushed him back for nearly a hundred miles. The water-tank-thick light beam didn't fade, while the black and white mist streams rotated at a high speed, forming an enormous whirlpool that shredded the light beam and sent it away.

The strike launched by the city of great calamity happened within a moment. As the group of Yu Clan people laughed wildly out on the city wall, Ji Hao flashed across the sky and showed up outside the city. Along with a sizzling noise, bright lightning bolts flickered before Ji Hao's body. In the air, numerous water-tank-sized, hexagon-shaped, transparent defensive screens emerged and pieced together into a strong shield against Ji Hao.

Those loudly laughing Yu Clan people were silenced immediately, choking on their laughter and almost dying of

suffocation.

They looked at Ji Hao, stunned. They couldn't believe their eyes, as they failed to figure out how on earth Ji Hao survived a strike from the great city of calamity, even though that was only a small-scale limited strike!

"A Divine Magus?" murmured a Yu Clan young man, "No, Divine Magi will also be injured by such a strike. So, it's because of his treasures! That cloak of his is not only beautiful, but its defensive power is also way too strong!"

The group of Yu Clan people greedily looked at Ji Hao's cloak, even ignored him.

Ji Hao paid no attention to these Yu Clan people. He carefully reached out his hands and pressed on the sparkling defensive screen before his face.

Pop! Pop! A dreadfully strong force burst from the screen. As a lightning bolt dazzled across, smoke puffed up from Ji Hao's ten fingers. Sensing a piercing pain, Ji Hao instinctively took his fingers away from the defensive screen.

Ji Hao stared at this sparkling defensive screen in surprise. By now, he was incredibly strong. His body was over a hundred times stronger than any Divine Magus. However, this defensive screen bought him a pain. Clearly, this was an amazingly strong defensive screen, which could definitely block an attack from a Supreme Magus. Breaking this defensive screen would require a sizable number of Divine Magi and a long period of time. But during this process, this city of great calamity would certainly cause a major loss to those Divine Magi.

"Stupid, undeveloped barbarian, these twelve cities are treasures from our homeworld. We got them thirty years ago!" Through the defensive screen, a Yu Clan young man laughed at Ji Hao aloud, "For these twelve treasures, we almost emptied our treasuries. This time, we will show you their powers!"

"Unstoppable attacks, unbreakable defenses... These treasures are perfect for both defense and offense!" Bragged another Yu Clan young man proudly, "Send out your so-called Supreme Magi. We will teach them a good lesson!"

Ji Hao frowned. All of a sudden, he threw a fierce punch at the defensive screen of the city of great calamity in front of him.

Chapter 1403: Facing Fan Hai

With all of his strength, Ji Hao's embryo of Dao released strong waves of power, while the cultivation method with nine turns was instantly boosted up to an extreme level. Ji Hao gave a deep, rumbling roar as he expanded his body to thousands of meters tall. Dragon-like Chaos power streams surged out of his pores, while his skin, flesh, and bones simultaneously turned crystalline and colorless.

His three eyes shone with a blinding light while his right fist swished down like a shooting star, which could shatter the sky, smashing towards the city of great calamity.

The five moves were combined. Behind Ji Hao, countless stars flashed across, as all natural powers were stirred up around him and cracked the space. From the endless chaos around him, a bright light full of vitality erupted and drilled into his fist.

Deafening alarm went off in the city of great calamity. Twelve statues on the city wall dazzled simultaneously, while the metal petals around the city began quaking intensively, crazily absorbing natural powers from the surrounding environment.

Before Ji Hao's face, the defensive screen was silk-thin, but along with the ear-piercing alarm, it had been thickening rapidly. Within a blink of an eye, it turned hundreds of meters thick.

Coiled in rolling Chaos power streams, Ji Hao's fist landed on the defensive screen. The corners of his three eyes ruptured suddenly. Blood flowed out in streams, then flew back into the wounds.

Launching the move of sky-opening, Ji Hao discovered a slight weakness in the defensive screen. However, this defensive screen was based on a special spell symbol system created by the non-humankind. It was the power that originated from another world. The moment Ji Hao discovered this weakness, his eyes suffered a counterforce and were injured.

The heavy punch landed like a bolt of thunder. Following the earthshaking boom, the city of great calamity quaked slightly. Before Ji Hao's face, a three-thousand-meters-wide part of defensive screen was shattered. A fierce tornado started by his fist roared towards the group of Yu Clan people standing on the city wall like an evil dragon.

"Help!" A Yu Clan young man shrieked hysterically.

"A barbarian is killing people!" Another few Yu clan people yelled out some ridiculous words.

"Ah!" The other few especially good-looking Yu Clan young men were scared straight into unconsciousness. They were frightened by the fact that Ji Hao shattered the defensive screen of the city of great calamity with a punch, then freaked out by the tornado coming towards them.

Following a slight snort, a dense gray mist rose into the sky. From within the mist, two lifeless, giant dragons rushed out, transforming into thousands of meters tall, muscular giants with human bodies and dragon heads. The four strong arms of the two giants swung towards Ji Hao's fist, raising the dense, lifeless gray mist.

Boom! The thick scales of the giants cracked inch by inch and their skins chapped. Next, their dried skins and muscles exploded into grains of sand. Their bones broke and turned into thumb-sized pieces, darting all over the sky.

The tens of Yu Clan people standing on the city wall shivered intensely. The bone pieces of the two dragon-head giants penetrated their bodies like countless sharp arrows, leaving fist-sized holes on their bodies.

The tens of Yu Clan people died right on the spot. Hundreds of Jia Clan warriors trod on metal plates and flew over from the distance. Tens of them at the front also suffered from the darting bone pieces of the two giants. They vomited blood and fell from

the sky.

Nearly a hundred metal plates were broken by those bone pieces. As spell symbol groups buried in these metal plates were disordered, and the exquisite engines of these flying machines exploded, these metal plates slantingly fell to the ground, tailed by black smoke.

With a series of boom, nearly a hundred metal plates exploded, turning a clean street in the city of great calamity into a mess.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao!" A dry, hoarse voice shouted. A strand of gray mist drifted over. A strong death power spread, while Fan Hai showed up in front of Ji Hao,in anger. Fan Hai was the Nether Moon Emperor. He was tall and slim, looking like a skeleton wrapped in a thin layer of muscle and skin.

Holding a gray crystal ball in his left hand, and a large scepter that seemed to be woven from countless white bones, Fan Hai's eyes sparkled with a green fire. Glaring at Ji Hao, he shouted, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao! You! It's you! Why didn't you go to the others? Am I, Fan Hai, the easiest to bully?"

Chaos power streams rolled around Ji Hao's body. Activating the cultivation method with nine turns fully, his entire body looked like a giant piece of crystal. All of his exposed skin had been dazzling with a blinding light. Hearing Fan Hai's raging shouts, Ji Hao felt speechless. 'What? What did Fan Hai even mean?'

The war had already been started, hadn't it? It would be reasonable for Ji Hao to go to anyone on the enemy's side, right? But why did Fan Hai sound so strange?

"We're enemies. It's nothing about bullying." Looking at Fan Hai, Ji Hao said coldly, "You're not thinking about suppressing our humankind with merely twelve cities of great calamity, are you?"

Along with a series of tinkle, the defensive screen which was broken by Ji Hao violently had been speedily healing itself. From

the edge of the broken part, hexagonal screens had been growing out. Countless silk-thin pieces of screen pieced together, causing silvery tinkles as they quickly fixed the giant hole.

"No?" Dropping the ridiculous topic about bullying, Fan Hai looked at Ji Hao in a complicated way and said, "You humankind may have about ten powerful beings, but I have enough equally powerful ones to handle them."

"When your so-called Supreme Magi are busy, the twelve cities of great calamity will destroy your civilization." Fan Hai said, "You have to admit this, human being, you can't rival us. As long as we want to, we can destroy you."

"Which means, you don't want to destroy the humankind, do you?" Ji Hao raised his eyebrows, opened his erect eye, and illuminated the area with a clear beam of light, locking on Fan Hai. With the eye of Dao, Ji Hao could grasp even the slightest expression change from Fan Hai's face.

"Destroy you? What's in it for us?" Gently stroking the grey crystal ball which was wrapped in faint gray mist with his left hand, Fan Hai chuckled with his hoarse voice and said, "You never extorted me, neither did I lose a Sun and Moon stage powerful guard to you...Hehe, some people want to seize the chance and teach you a lesson, but I think that once we've shown our power, we can, and we should, sit down and talk."

Shaking his head, Fan Hai smiled and continued, "I've carefully calculated. Your Supreme Magi are living isolated lives, and will not show their faces without a good reason. These people are very strong. We have equally powerful ones to deal with them. But if we truly intend to destroy humanity, we would certainly pay a heavy price. I don't care...But the powerful ones among us aren't willing to pay such a price."

Looking at Ji Hao, Fan Hai said seriously, "Therefore, frankly speaking, we are only showing you our powers this time. Have you

clearly seen how powerful we are yet?"

Chapter 1404: A Woman's Hatred

Fan Hai straightforwardly told Ji Hao that Yu Dynasty made a show of their force because they wanted to sit down and have a talk with human leaders.

They were strong. Back then when they invaded Pan Gu world, their ancestors only had one old version city of great calamity. In both terms of size and lethality, that old city of great calamity was far weaker than the twelve new ones.

Back then, that old version city of great calamity nearly destroyed the human civilization, which was still at the stage of tribal culture. In the past countless centuries, the human civilization had indeed been developing thrivingly, but in the meantime, Yu Dynasty had improved even more largely.

They traded the resources they plundered from Pan Gu world for countless good things, including these twelve cities of great calamity. These twelve tremendous metal pieces were their strongest weapons by now. They got them from Pan Yu world thirty years ago by emptying their pockets.

Therefore, they unhurriedly made a show of their force in Chi Ban Mountain area, similar to cracking walnuts with an iron hammer. They destroyed the strong mounts of defense one after another, which were strengthened by human beings with incalculable efforts and resources, and forcibly paved twelve broad roads in this mountain area.

By doing all this, they silently yet strongly told the humankind, 'We are powerful enough to go straight down to Pu Ban City!'

Fan Hai told Ji Hao even more clearly that Yu Dynasty had the power to destroy the humanity for good, but they didn't do it, only because the powerful beings among them weren't willing to. They had powerful beings among them, and so did the humankind. Once Yu Dynasty showed an intent to overturn the alliance of human

clans and destroy the human civilization, Emperor Xuanyuan and the other former emperors would definitely lose their minds!

Once the group of former human emperors lost their minds, people would die! Those Sun and Moon stage powerful beings behind Fan Hai and the other non-humankind emperors had been enjoying a luxurious life. Like most Yu Clan people, they had attained high positions and great wealth, and weren't willing to risk their lives against human beings anymore.

Therefore, a negotiation?

Fan Hai squeezed a faint smile out of his scrawny face and said with his dry voice, "I hope you human beings can stay calm, sit down, and talk with us this time. This is not only about us, it's related to your life and death too!"

"Who would you like to talk to?" Ji Hao let out a breath and slowly dispelled the power accumulated inside his body. Gradually, his thousands of meters tall body began shrinking back to the normal size. "Emperor Shun? Or anyone else?" Ji Hao asked.

"Not only Emperor Shun, but also the twelve Supreme-level former emperors, and all Supreme-level old freaks among you, such as Candle Jiuyin, Winged Dragon King, Green Hill Fox Queen, Zhu Rong...These people, they better all show up."

Ji Hao raised his eye corners. He mentioned the twelve former emperors, but other than them, Fan Hai mentioned Zhu Rong and the others by names. Who was Winged Dragon King? The king of all winged dragons? Who was Green Hill Fox Queen? The ten-tailed sky fox Ji Hao met in You Xiong City?

Licking his lips, Ji Hao threw a complicated glimpse at Fan Hai.

Fan Hai seemed to understand Ji Hao's feeling. With a bland tone, he said, "You human beings are very strong. Otherwise, we would have destroyed you long ago, instead of maintaining 'peace' like we're doing now. But this time, we truly need to talk to you

about something important. And, you don't have a choice."

"You can either sit down and talk to us, or watch us reach Pu Ban City like this." Fan Hai continued.

Ji Hao nodded and said with a deep voice, "I will return to Pu Ban City and report to Emperor Shun and the other leaders about this. Is this what all twelve emperors of yours think?"

Stroking the grey crystal ball, Fan Hai responded, "Also a unanimous decision made by all the most powerful elders from the council of elders in Yu Dynasty. We..."

As Fan Hai was talking, a short blood-red dagger silently appeared behind Ji Hao, cutting towards his neck.

Facing Ji Hao, Fan Hai and all Nether Moon warriors behind him saw the dagger. Fan Hai's expression didn't change, while his warriors smiled in surprise.

Clang! A blood-red longsword quietly pierced out from Ji Hao's shadow, pointing against the dagger. Blood-red shadows suddenly swished out of the dagger like hundreds of sharp daggers, lunging towards every vital body part of his. The blood-red sword shone with a bright light and accurately blocked every strike launched with the dagger.

Metal clangs could be heard without an end. Every time the dagger and the sword clanged against each other, the space would be twisted into a water-tank-sized space swirl around Ji Hao. Within a moment, hundreds of attacks are launched and blocked. A twisted figure dashed out of the air, gripped the dagger, then bent over and pounced on Ji Hao.

From Ji Hao's shadow, another twisted figure flew out. In the meanwhile, the blood-red longsword released a light screen and shielded Ji Hao's back.

Within the following moment, thousands of metal clangs were heard. Suddenly, the figure with the dagger gave a muffled moan

and quivered as blood sprayed out of his body. Staggering back for a few steps, he raised his head and growled, "Yemo Shayi, how is it like being a dog of a human being?"

This was a tall and slim, beardless Yu Clan old man, with his erect eye opened widely. A dark sphere of light had been spinning quickly in his erect eye, releasing a strong power that seemed to devour the world.

Carrying the sword, Yemo Shayi stood behind Ji Hao and looked at the old man with a dark face. "Yemo Xiu, do you want to die? You're a member of the highest council of elder, but..."

With his expression changing slightly, Yemo Xiu straightened his body, covered the wound on his chest with his palm, and shouted angrily, "Yemo Shayi, you're only a slave of our Yemo Family. How dare you talk to me like that?"

Yemo Shayi gave a faint smile, then bowed slightly to Yemo Xiu and responded, "I am no longer a slave of your Yemo Family, so... In fact, I have always been curious about how killing a highest elder feels. That sense of achievement must be fantastic."

A dim dark light flew out of another city of great calamity and approached instantly.

Sitting on a black throne, Yemo Luoye stared at Ji Hao darkly and said viciously, "Elder, kill this traitor for me, and this bloody human being! Damn you, how dare you show up in front of me again?"

Looking at her, Ji Hao sneered and asked, "What? You lost to me. Ashamed now?"

Standing aside, Fan Hai said pretendingly, "Yemo Luoye, I've just told them about my decision. So..."

"Enough!" Yemo Luoye screamed, "Fan Hai, we will talk to human leaders, and this kid has nothing to do with it! Kill him for me, then I will give you a chance to have dinner with me!"

Fan Hai's eyes grew wide. Slowly raising his scepter, he helplessly sighed to Ji Hao and said, "She's a woman...Marquis Yao Ji Hao, today, I can't let you go."

A figure slowly walked out from the gray mist coiling around Fan Hai. A suffocating death power transformed into dense grey clouds, spreading out speedily.

Chapter 1405: Fan Gu

Dense grey clouds covered the sky and the earth. It was moist and cold, like countless sticky tentacles drilling into one's body through the skin. A strong power of death mixed in the clouds, corroding everything, turning the vitality into a lifeless power of death.

It was not like Netherworld Hierarch's Netherworld power. The Netherworld power was complicated and changeable, including the power of strict natural penalties, the quietness of death, and the variability of the great Dao of reincarnation. Therefore, despite the fact that the Netherworld Power superficially represented death, it was more like a seed buried in bone ashes that had a hope of life.

The grey clouds released by the figure walked out from behind Fan Hai were about pure death. Lifeless, hopeless... Once the death happened, the silence would be eternal. It was true death, that could make one despair from deep down one's heart.

When the grey cloud wrapped his body, Ji Hao felt a piercing pain from his skin, as if he were cut by shape knives. His body became heavy, and he even had difficulty in moving.

The power of death had been crazily eroding Ji Hao's body. Around him, space, time, and all tangible and intangible natural forces had all been corroding. Everything was collapsing, everything was dying. Even the concept of 'death' itself had been fading and disintegrating rapidly, becoming something even worse.

Ji Hao's embryo of Dao moved. In the grey clouds, countless voices seemed to shriek. They were silent, but one could hear them clearly. They were roaring in fury, 'Die, die, die! Don't fight, don't resist! It's hopeless, always hopeless!'

A tremor went through Ji Hao's body, bringing out a mouthful of

blood.

His blood glistened like gemstones. Once the blood left his body, it was turned dark grey, turning into a strand of ash that drifted down to the ground. Ji Hao lowered his head and looked at the strand of ash. It fell on a mountain and generated a muffled boom. Following the boom, the hundred-meters-wide mountain was gone. It collapsed into ashes instantly, as if it had been through tens of thousands of centuries.

"Fan Gu!" Yemo Shayi gave a resonant growl, transforming into a blood-red beam of light as he attempted to rush towards the man who walked out from behind Fan Hai.

"Yemo Shayi, where do you think you're going?" Yemo Xiu shouted out as well. He leaped to the sky and transformed into a dense cloud of dark mist. Within a blink of an eye, he turned himself into a giant black swirl and released a tremendous devouring power to stop Yemo Shayi. Once the fight was started, Yemo Xiu directly activated his greatest power gifted from the Dark Moon and launched his strongest attack.

Yemo Shayi gave a muffled moan. Flashing across the sky, he also transformed into a cloud of dark mist and condensed into a dark swirl, floating in the air. Two hundred-miles-wide black swirls clashed against each other and devoured each other. Occasionally, lightning bolts burst where the two dark swirls made contact, disappearing immediately after intensively vibrating the surrounding space and creating countless space cracks.

The twisting devouring power reached out in all directions. Under its effect, rocks floated up from the ground and swiftly flew towards the two dark swirls, being shredded once they touched the two swirls.

Ji Hao looked at the man called Fan Gu seriously.

Surrounded by grey clouds, Fan Gu was wearing a grey cloak, holding a scythe with both hands. His skin wrapped his bones

tightly, which made him look like a moving skeleton. His appearance reminded Ji Hao of 'Death' that he read about from western mythologies back in his previous life.

Fan Gu was much taller than Fan Hai. His grey skin was thickly covered in dark spell symbols, each of which looked like a twisted, desperately screaming soul. One would be utterly discomforted by simply looking at those spell symbols.

"Fan Gu?" Ji Hao quickly recalled the records about powerful non-humankind beings kept in the Magi Palace in secret history books.

Before, Ji Hao's position wasn't high enough, and he didn't have a rich experience. So, some core secret records kept in the Magi Palace weren't open to him. During the flood, Ji Hao had made incalculable contributions, and added his special right of being in charge given by Emperor Shun, he took a batch of secret records from the Magi Palace. When he had the time, he would read some.

Fan Gu was a powerful elder from the Nether Moon, a member of the highest council of elders in Yu Dynasty, and a sworn enemy of Emperor Shennong!

Emperor Shennong tried all kinds of herbs on himself and developed the herbal medicine system. Emperor Shennong's power was full of vigor, and could even bring the dead back to life. Naturally, Shennong's power made him the strongest enemy of the Nether Moon. Fan Gu tried to assassinate Emperor Shennong seven times, yet he was injured by the latter severely four times, and the other three times, Emperor Shennong almost killed him.

Back then, Fan Gu was already a Sun and Moon stage powerful being, while Shennong was merely a half-step Supreme Magus. Fan Gu was at the higher level of power, but he suffered numerous crushing defeats from Emperor Shennong, making him extremely enraged. After Emperor Shennong successfully merged with his spirit star and became a Supreme Magus, Fan Gu never showed up

again.

"Little human kid, I haven't fought anyone myself in years." Fan Gu snickered and abruptly dropped his scythe. He took out a crystal goblet, poured himself a glass of wine, then flicked his fingers. A pink rose appeared between his fingers.

Gently sniffing the rose and taking a sip of the wine, Fan Gu sighed, "I am tired of fighting and killing. Only the best wine, fresh flowers, and beautiful young girls are the nature of life!"

Hearing him, Fan Hai's face twisted slightly. Remaining silent, he lowered his head.

The power of the Nether Moon was a pure power of death. Nether Moon people were also good zombie makers. Fan Gu, this old being, had 'death' filled in almost every pore of his, but why was he talking about 'nature of life'?

Fan Hai felt that his face was burning slightly. Fan Gu, this old being, truly made him quite embarrassed.

"Isn't challenging Shennong and being beaten by him like a dead dog your nature of life?" Ji Hao pulled out Pan Gu Dragon Mark and said evilly, "I heard that you had nothing but half a skull remained once, when you luckily escaped from Shennong. Growing such a large body back wasn't easy, was it? Or, have you taken someone else's body?"

The rose held in Fan Gu's hands exploded suddenly, while the goblet turned into ashes.

Fan Gu's hideous, skeleton-like face twisted suddenly as he gripped the scythe. His palms rubbed against the hilt of the scythe, even causing a squeaking noise. He stared at Ji Hao in rage, with grey mist puffing out of his nostrils.

"Shennong!" Gray long hair stood straight up from Fan Gu's head. "Shennong!" He shrieked madly, "Don't mention this name in front of me! Ah! Shennong! Get the hell out! Come on! Fight! Let me

chop you into pieces! Shennong! Emperor Shennong! Get the hell out! Your herbs can bring the dead back to life! Come on! I'll chop this kid, then you can bring him back to life!"

Roaring like a beast, Fan Gu's scythe suddenly reached towards Ji Hao's head and hacked down swiftly.

Chapter 1406: The Shame of A Sword Strike

Fan Gu was infuriated.

Back in Liang Zhu City, no one dared to mention Shennong in front of him. His families dared not to even say the word 'Shen' and the word 'Nong'. But today, in front of everyone on the scene, Ji Hao reopened his deepest scar and made him stamp with fury.

Following a shrill swishing noise, the scythe was swung towards Ji Hao's head.

Sitting aside, Yemo Luoye laughed loud aloud, even bending her body with intense laughter. Dark mist rose around her, with fist-sized black roses hovering in it. Coiled by the dark mist, she looked like the goddess of night, breathtakingly beautiful.

Ji Hao laughed loudly as well. Letting out a faintly audible dragon roar, Pan Gu Dragon Mark swished towards the scythe.

An echoing clang was generated. Ji Hao slightly quivered while an extremely cold power drilled into his body through Pan Gu Dragon Mark. Wherever the cold power flowed across, his blood was frozen, and the life-force in his arm was gone. He hurriedly sent his spirit blood flushing to his arm and finally stopped that cold power in his palm area.

Fan Gu trembled slightly while staggering back for tens of steps. His hands were shaking intensely. He was nearly thrown to the ground by Ji Hao's great strength. Yemo Luoye stopped laughing abruptly. Looking at Ji Hao, she couldn't believe her eyes. With a single sword move, he forced Fan Gu back!

Crack! Tiny pieces fell off from the sharp edge of Fan Gu's scythe. Following a long and quick series of cracking noise, thin cracks spread on the scythe. Soon, it was thickly covered in hair-thin cracks, with a few palm-sized pieces falling off.

Fan Gu's widely opened his eyes and looked at his treasured

scythe. This scythe fought with him for countless years. Even back then when he fought against Shennong, the scythe was never damaged. Once, Shennong hammered Fan Gu's scythe with his spirit treasure, the Shennong caldron, but failed to leave even a mark on it!

Pan Gu Dragon Mark, the sword held in Ji Hao's hands, was it even stronger than the Shennong caldron?

What was even worse was that Ji Hao's physical strength was completely beyond Fan Gu's imagination. Suffering a severe heartache, Fan Gu let out a mouthful of blood. Looking at Ji Hao in shock, he howled out, "You, are you a...Supreme Magus? No, the power I sensed from you is not right. If you had merged with a natural star, I would have sensed an ancient, wild power from you. But you didn't have it!"

Ji Hao remained silent and took a step forward, reaching straight to Fan Gu. Pan Gu Dragon Mark released four dazzling beams of sword light that hacked down at Fan Gu from four different directions.

Ji Hao made a simple move. He raised the sword and swung it down. However, the four beams of sword light weirdly dazzled towards Fan Gu from before his face, the back, and both sides of his body. Fan Gu's vision was blurred. He suddenly realized that he could not see Ji Hao's moves clearly. It was such a simple sword move, but somehow, it seemed to follow some highest natural law. It was like once the move was made, the target would be hit for sure.

Fan Gu made a resonant shout and released dense gray mist from his body. Tens of skinny and nimble figures dashed out of the mist towards Ji Hao, along with shrill swishing noises. Looking closer, one would find that these skinny figures were actually a group of skeletons. They moved as fast as the wind, and their deeply hollowed eyes flickered with a gray fire; their every bone was transparent and crystalline.

The swift moves of these skeletons broke the space while causing popping noises. They encircled Ji Hao instantly and launched countless punches at him.

Ji Hao gave a muffled snort. He didn't fight back, but let these skeleton' heavy punches land on his body. The Taiji cloak glowed with a clear light. Ninety-nine percent of the force delivered by their punches was neutralized by the Taiji cloak. Ji Hao felt nothing more than a slight vibration from the inside of his body.

As a sword light flashed through the air, the gray cloak worn by Fan Gu sparkled with a gray, misty light. Along with a loud tearing noise, his cloak was cut into four pieces. The moment the cloak was cut, Fan Gu disappeared, and in the next moment, he reappeared in the sky, hundreds of miles high.

The torn cloak drifted down from the air. In the sky, Fan Gu was wearing a tight leather armor, baring his teeth as he glared at Ji Hao. By sacrificing a defensive treasure, he managed to escape from Ji Hao's lethal sword light. But facing the Yu Yu sword spell cast by Ji Hao, how could he escape so easily without getting hurt?

He suffered a sword hack in his left rib area. A half-foot-long tear was left on the tight leather armor, and a three-inch-long slash was left on his body. Fan Gu silently cast a spell and sealed the wounds, not shedding a single drop of blood. But he clearly knew that a destructive power had been running rampant inside him, crazily hurting his body.

Yemo Luoye opened her small mouth and looked at Fan Gu in shock. Ji Hao hurt Fan Gu with one single move.

Fan Gu was an experienced Sun and Moon stage powerful being in Yu Dynasty. Despite the fact that he was best at making all kinds of evil souls, puppets, and creating death curses, and his fighting capacity could only be considered inferior in comparison with the others from the highest council of elder, he was a Sun and Moon stage powerful being after all!

"Being hurt by a human being who is not even a Supreme Magus...This is way too humiliating!" On purpose or not, Yemo Luoye murmured, "But, since this kind of thing also happened before, it seems to be acceptable."

Fan Hai's face turned blue as he stared at Fan Gu angrily. This elder from his family was so disappointing. Fan Hai felt that Fan Gu had just thrown away his reputation!

Fan Gu widely popped out his eyes. He was driven mad. He threw a threatening glance at Yemo Luoye hysterically, then turned around and glowered at Ji Hao, his teeth bared.

Yes, such things also happened before! Back then, he was already a Sun and Moon stage being, but Shennong, a Divine Magus, injured him badly seven times in a row! Whole seven times! That was an unbearably great shame. However, Fan Gu never thought that he would again be injured by a human being today, a kid!

Back then, anyhow, Shennong was the human emperor. He was protected by the great natural reward power, and every move made by him was supported by the great Dao of Pan Gu world. Fought against Shennong, Fan Gu's power was actually surpassed by the great Dao of Pan Gu world to an extreme point. Under the circumstances, being injured by Shennong was actually acceptable, no matter how reluctant Fan Gu was.

Nevertheless, Ji Hao was an ordinary human marquis, and much, much younger than Shennong!

Being injured by Ji Hao? Fan Gu's face blushed. He could not imagine how long would the other members of the highest council of elders laugh at him for this. A thousand years? Ten-thousand years? Forever?

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you are worthy of my seriousness." Licking his lips, Fan Gu said seriously.

Ji Hao floated in midair and remained completely motionless,

letting the tens of skeletons attack him. As his Taiji cloak glowed brightly, not even one skeleton managed to hurt even a hair of him.

Chapter 1407: The Non-humankind's Sincerity

Tens of skeletons surrounded Ji Hao and attacked him fiercely, who let them be with a faint smile on his face.

Fan Gu must have made these skeletons with an advanced magic. These skeletons had no muscles at all, but their punches were as heavy as a strike from a high-level Divine Magus. Their bones were especially strong, and every strike punch by them was as powerful as a hammer strike.

The Taiji cloak glowed brightly, as bony fists landed on Ji Hao's body over and over again. The cloak took over ninety percent of the attack. The remaining force was still strong, but it only managed to slightly quake Ji Hao's internal organs; it was nothing to Ji Hao. After all, he had a tough body now.

Fan Gu yelled that he would punish Ji Hao with all of his power. Yemo Luoye's eyes sparkled as she prepared to watch a great show. From the other cities of great calamity, streams of light flashed over. Soon, all twelve non-humankind emperors showed up.

"Enough! Yemo Luoye, even as a woman, you can't do whatever you like to affect the shared decision we made together." Yanmo Sha, the Dark Sun Emperor, said as waves of space ripples had been spreading from his body, looking like a thin shred of shadow.

"Elder Fan Gu, calm down! Many of us want Marquis Yao Ji Hao dead, but now is not the time to kill him." Surrounded by rolling dense blood-red mist and an endless intent of killing, Piji Nu, the Red Sun Emperor, who was a tall and sturdy as a Jia Clan warrior, continued loudly.

"Calm down? What about my dignity?" Fan Gu roared in rage.

Two figures flashed out from behind Piji Nu. Two heavily armored, especially strong Yu Clan old men carried heavy chains

and blocked Fan Gu's way. One of them smirked and said, "Enough Fan Gu! Are you really putting up a desperate fight against this kid? This kid is still useful!"

Judging by the energy waves released from the two Yu Clan old men, they were far stronger than Fan Gu. Apparently, they were both Sun and Moon stage beings, and were at a more advanced stage than him. The power gifted from the Red Sun was about 'killing and violence'. Every single Red Sun being was a crazy warrior. In terms of nature of powers, these two Red Sun Yu Clan old men were born stronger than Fan Gu, who was from Nether Moon, not to mention the fact that they had better cultivations than him as well.

Fan Gu's arrogance and aggressiveness faded immediately. Snorting coldly, he took out another gray cloak and wrapped himself up, then flicked his finger. A pink rose appeared between his fingertips. Holding the rose with his left hand and a crystal goblet with his right hand, he took a slight sip of wine.

"Alright! Piji Tian and Piji Di, for your sake, for the overall situation, I can tolerate a slight harm to my dignity." Raising his head and looking at the sky, Fan Gu gave a sentimental sigh and continued, "I will let this kid live, for now. One day, he will understand how terrifying the power of the great, supreme Nether Moon is!"

Ji Hao smiled. Fan Gu seemed to give up on killing Ji Hao, but his tens of skeletons never ceased to attack. Shaking his head, Ji Hao cast a spell. On his right hand, countless lightning bolts sparkled, dispelling that extremely cold power sent into his palm by Fan Gu earlier.

Gray strands of smoke rose from his palm. Followed by a deafening series of thunder, tens of Yu Yu divine thunderbolts erupted from Ji Hao's palm like sharp swords and struck on the tens of skeletons.

Fan Gu made a muffled snort. His eyes burned with a green fire as he stared at Ji Hao in fury. However, he remained silent.

The tens of skeletons were shattered by Ji Hao's thunderbolts. Bone pieces and ashes drifted down from the sky. Some bone pieces were still coiled in lightning bolts, and had been ground into ashes, turning into wisps of smoke,

"Alright, alright!" Fan Gu pointed at the two Yu Clan old men in front of him, trembled slightly, and said through gritted teeth, "Piji Tian, Piji Di, today, for your sake, I will let this kid live! You, you owe me one!"

Piji Nu, Yanmo Sha, and the other emperors had their eye corners twitching simultaneously. Fan Gu's shamelessness made them quite speechless. Yanmo Sha raised his head and said with a deep voice, "Elder Yemo Xiu, please stop. Under the current situation, we need to save strength!"

A raging growl came from the sky, following which, the two entangled dark swirls suddenly split up. A beam of dagger light and a beam of sword light interwove in the sky and clanged against each other for tens of thousands of times within a single second. Followed by a muffled snort, Yemo Xian fell from the sky with a badly darkened face. He had a deep slash on his face. The edge of the wound was as smooth as a mirror surface, and all the blood around the wound was drained.

Yemo Shayi fell from the sky as well, with a similar wound on the back of his left hand.

Yemo Luoye was sulky as she fixed her eyes on him. A crazy, dark fire was burning in those eyes. Yemo Shayi bowed slightly to her, seeming to be quite calm.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao? You plundered the Moho staff, which belonged to my family...Let's forget about that. Let that represent the sincerity of our Full Moon. We want to talk with the humankind." Moho Huan, the Full Moon Emperor, sighed slightly

and nodded to Ji Hao, then started talking with a bland tone. A strong spirit power vibration could be sensed from him. All natural powers condensed into vividly colorful images, flashing around him.

Moho Huan slowly glanced at Ji Hao and continued, "Please, go back to Pu Ban City and tell the ones who can make important decisions that we will be expecting them in this place. If they come, things will be negotiable. But, if they don't, we won't wait forever. We will flatten Chi Ban Mountain range, break into Pu Ban City, and destroy the humankind at all costs.

Surrounding Moho Huan were almost tangible streams of spirit power. From behind him, two Yu Clan old men walked out, wearing long robes and holding long staffs. The natural powers surging around their bodies seemed to even shred the sky.

Suffocatingly strong Yu Clan beings walked out from behind the twelve emperors, one after another. They silently stood in the midair and looked at Ji Hao, releasing their powers and exerting great pressures on Ji Hao.

Including Yemo Xiu, but not the twelve emperors, twenty-four Sun and Moon stage, powerful Yu Clan beings stood in front of Ji Hao in a straight line.

The twelve former human emperors were the only known supreme Magi among human beings. And, they weren't in this world themselves. The ones left in Pan Gu world were their clones, which only had about thirty percent of their powers. Except for the twelve human emperors, supreme-level, even more powerful beings existed among the other species which were close to the humankind, such as the dragon-kind, the phoenix-kind, and creatures worshipped by human clans, like Candle Jiuyin. However, Ji Hao still didn't know if the humankind could withstand the attacks launched by these twenty-four Sun and Moon stage powerful beings!

Piji Nu smilingly looked at Ji Hao. Pointing at the twenty-four powerful beings, he said blandly, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, go back and tell your leaders that we want to talk to them. Our twenty-four powerful elders here can represent our sincerity."

Chapter 1408: The Same Master Shifu

In the west of Liang Zhu City, a million miles away from the city was the Tusk Basin.

Countless dark-green colored towering mountains reached straight to the sky, looking like enormous tusks, surrounding a fertile plain. Huge mineral reserves of heavy metals and crystals were buried under this area. Therefore, the natural magnetic power in this area was amazingly strong. An underground magnetic storm would happen in this area almost every day. Each time that happened, one could see colorful light streams rising into the sky through the straight mountains, blasting in the clouds and forming dragon-like lightning bolts, dazzling all over the sky.

Occasionally, a few electric bolts would strike down and land on the mountains. The mountains would glow blindingly, while the area struck by lightning bolts would be burned glowing-red. After a long while, the burned areas would gradually cool down, and the color of the mountains would turn back normal.

A large number of crystal plates had been hovering between the tusk-like mountains like butterflies. Groups of dark-kind slave warriors with all kinds of crystal weapons, wearing nonconducting, soft leather armors as they carefully squatted on the crystal plates. They bent their bodies and carefully reached half of their heads out from the edge of the crystal plate, vigilantly looking around.

Tusk Basin was a very important mine in Liang Zhu City. Even after years of uncontrolled mining, this mine wasn't depleted. Instead, more and more precious mineral resources were discovered in this area. The deeper they went, the richer mineral resources were found, and the more amazing the reserve appeared to be.

At first, Tusk Basin belonged to a small Flow Moon family. But,

as the proven mineral reserves in this area grew larger and larger, this small family evaporated. By now, Tusk Basin was a common property, belonging to the highest council of elders, owned by the twelve families in power.

The mine under Tusk Basin was tremendous like an underground kingdom. Tens of billions of human slaves lived in there, working for the non-humankind and exploiting all resources they could touch.

Generation after generation, some of these human slaves had lived underground for thousands of years. They had forgotten about the glory of the humankind and the origin of human beings. Their brains were empty; they knew nothing but mining and giving birth to children.

But, some of them were sold to this mine not long ago. Many of these newly arrived human slaves were strong warriors from small to mid-scale clans. They were proud and disobedient. They were good workers indeed, but compared with the old slaves who had their brains washed, they caused many, many more troubles.

Because of them, a large-scaled non-humankind army was stationed in Tusk Basin area, preparing to crush a slave revolt at any time.

Each day, large troops of dark-kind slave warriors would patrol in the air with crystal plates designed especially for Tusk Basin, guarding the area vigilantly, in case any slave escaped from the mine.

"This bloody weather!" The leader of a troop of dark-kind warrior on patrol looked around at the five-colored light streams reaching from the mountains to the sky, cursing in a low voice. Their flying plates and weapons were all made from crystals, and would not conduct electricity like metals. But still, the consequences would be troubling if a lightning bolt struck on their heads.

Dark-kind warriors were cheap. Their leather armors were

designed to protect them from lightning bolts, but no one knew how much costs of these armors was deducted by their Yu Clan masters. Before, an armor like this could take tens of lightning bolts without breaking. But these years, one lightning bolt could turn a leather armor and its owner into a piece of hard coke.

"We can't live like this! Our life is not even as good as those slaves! These years, their life has been getting better and better!" The dark-kind troop leader murmured in jealousy.

Followed a sizzling noise, tens of water-tank-sized lightning bolts descended from the sky. About ten crystal plates immediately scattered. They fled fast, but a crystal plate carrying ten dark-kind warriors was still hit by the lightning bolt.

Along with a series of shrill howls, ten dark-kind warriors, who had their skins burnt and dense black smoke puffing up from their bodies, leaped up from the plate. They fell to the ground and desperately waved their arms.

"They're dead!" the leader said in despair.

Ten dark-kind warriors were injured so badly that they were almost killed by a violent lightning bolt from the sky. However, the crystal plate they trod on remained undamaged, floating in the sky. It seemed that in the eyes of their Yu Clan masters, these flying machines were much more valuable than dark-kind slave warriors, because the lightning-protection they gave to these flying machines was way better than what they provided to these lowly slave warriors.

Dazzling lightning bolt fell one after another. The crystal plate dodged swiftly to protect itself. By the time this wave of lightning bolt passed, the ten poor dark-kind slave warriors had already fallen on the ground from thousands of meters high and died. Sharp rocks tore their bodies apart.

With sadness, the troop leader drove his crystal plate down from the sky. Hopping off, he walked to his head warriors and cursed

with a low voice, "Dishi Jade Coin, that bloody miser, greedy b*stard. He let those human warriors eat meat, but downgraded our equipment to save money over and over again...Please lightning, strike him to death and get us a sane mine manager!"

Surrounded by a group of Jia Clan warriors, Dishi Jin held his head high and walked quickly in the broad mine, wearing a luxurious long robe.

He was the Dishi Jade Coin mentioned by that dark-kind troop leader. Jade Coin was his nickname because he was passionate about all kinds of wealth. He was appointed as the mine manager by the highest council of elders. After taking over this mine, his obsession with money aggravated to a crazy degree.

The living standard of the warriors who were responsible for guarding the mine plummeted straight down. Their welfares were almost taken away, and even their equipment had become low-grade, defective pieces. Dishi Jin tried whatever he could to squeeze the costs from these guards.

However, he was especially kind to human slaves working in the mine. Compared with former mine managers, Dishi Jin's attitude to these human warriors was almost 'as warm as parents'. The human slaves who had been licking his boots all the time, and the hard-working ones, would all be awarded by him. Booze, meat, and some benefits that slaves should never have, had all been given to these human slaves by him generously.

Walking past mine tunnels, countless human warriors bowed to him politely the moment they saw him. Dishi Jin smilingly nodded to these slaves, then nodded and said, "Don't bother, everyone, don't bother. We are following the guide of one Master Shifu. We are all brothers and sisters. Everyone, no need to be over-courteous!"

Dishi Jin giggled happily. Deep inside each of his three pupils, a lotus had been spinning slowly.

Chapter 1409: White Lotus Altar

Heading down through a broad, straight mine tunnel, through a few small-scale teleporting formations designed especially for mine tunnels, Dishi Jin walked into a large underground cavern. Caves were opened on the wall in straight lines. Living in each of these caves were hundreds of human slaves.

A few human warriors who were tall and strong walked over with large steps. The spirit blood power vibration released from their bodies was incredibly strong. Faintly visible, foot-thick layer of hot air had been vibrating around their bodies. Glancing at Dishi Jin, they reached out their arms and stopped the Jia Clan warriors being him.

The group of Jia Clan warriors widely opened their eyes, and the few bad-tempered ones directly pushed these human warriors' chests.

Human warriors showed no sign of weakness. They straightened their palms and hacked on the Jia Clan warriors' arms. Meanwhile, they bumped their shoulders against the Jia Clan warriors' chests. Muffled thuds resounded like giant bears bumping against each other. The human warriors remained motionless, while the few Jia Clan warriors stepped back quickly, their faces paled. Sitting on the ground, they couldn't move for a short while.

"Weak!" A human warrior scornfully curved down his lip corners, shaking his head.

"Alright, young brothers! They are my family guards, all loyal to me. They are also disciples of our sects now. We are families, so no need to act in such an unfriendly manner." Dishi Jin shook his head at the leader of these human warriors and said in a deep voice, "This may be a chance of a lifetime. It's our opportunity to do something great. We have to stand together as one."

The few Jia Clan warriors gasped deeply and gradually cooled

their boiling spirit blood down. The human warrior leader nodded, then bowed to Dishi Jin and said, "You're right, brother. It's our mind shaking...This place is... so depressing."

Dishi Jin looked around. This underground cavern was tens of miles in radius, brightly illuminated by the snow-white light emitted from crystal lights. Reflecting the snow-white light, the stone wall glowed dimly. The entire cavern was indeed liable to bring a feeling of oppression, quite similar to a prison.

In fact, this place was cruller than a prison. Dishi Jin nodded seriously, then pressed his hand heavily on the human warrior leaders shoulder and said, "The life like this will end soon. Master Shifu's elysian world will eventually descend." The few human warriors nodded heavily without saying other words, and guided Dishi Jin to the end of the cavern. A few mine tunnels branched in this area.

Dishi Jin walked into a tunnel on the right side. Not far from the entrance, a splendidly glowing small teleporting formation floated at the end of the tunnel. About a hundred heavily armored human warriors with all kinds of weapon stood around the formation. Seeing Dishi Jin, they nodded at him. The power vibration released from these human warriors was way stronger than that of the few human warriors outside.

Dishi Jin stood on the teleporting formation. A stream of light flashed across, condensing into a giant, hazy white lotus. The petals folded and sent Dishi Jin deeper underground.

This was a hundreds of miles wide underground cavern, with the entrances of countless mine tunnels on the walls in all directions. No one knew where these tunnels led to. The ground was drilled through by someone with a strong magic, and the earth-core fire was brought up from underground, through the tens of thousands of holes on the ground. With the extremely high temperature of the earth-core fire, tens of thousands of large-scale melting stoves were built in this area.

Mountain-huge piles of metallic ores were sent into the melting molds to form pure metal blocks, then carried to the forging tables in the distance. Within the raging earth-core fire, countless tall and muscular human warriors had been wielding large hammers, roaring while forging these soft metal blocks into all kinds of weapons.

Blades, spears, swords, arrows, bows... Tusk Basin had a wide variety of precious metal mineral resources, all with excellent quality. The weapons produced in this area were all brightly shining, top-grade pieces.

A large number of Xiu Clan masters had been walking around between forging tables, shouting and yelling while engraving newly forged weapons and armors with all kinds of spell symbols and formations. Only with their works could these armors and weapons take Magus-king-level and even Divine-Magus-level strikes, and deliver excellent effects on battlefields.

Tens of thousands of broad caves existed on the walls of this underground cavern. Inside each wall were thousands of strong human beings, quietly sitting on the ground with their legs crossed. They remained motionless, with their fingers locked together and constantly changing motions. Natural powers had been merging into their bodies in dense streams.

These human beings made no movements, but their muscles had been rising and falling like water, while their blood flushed through their muscles, slowly or rapidly. Meanwhile, deep, rumbling thunder-like noises could be heard from their internal organs. Sweat was streaming down their backs while they were growing stronger and stronger.

This was a special body strengthening cultivation method. It required no extra work other than sitting quietly on the ground and controlling one's spirit blood. Performing this cultivation method, one could continuously improve his or her body condition.

The space of this underground cavern was limited. If one allowed so many strong human beings to strengthen themselves by fighting each other, this cavern would be torn down in days. This motionless cultivation method was their best choice.

An altar stood tall in the middle of the cavern, surrounded by a pool of crystal clear water, covered in vividly green lotus leaves and white lotuses. The dragon man, the one Ji Hao met in the Kui Gate, sat straight on the altar. A few white lotuses surrounded him, releasing wisps of mist from the seedpods, coiling around him and merging into a small cloud above his head.

Dishi Jin walked to the altar in quick steps, then reverently bowed to the dragon man and greeted, "Shifu!"

The dragon man slightly opened his eyes and covered Dishi Jin with a white light emitted from his eyes, responding with a harsh tone, "What happened outside?"

Dishi Jin gave a vicious grin and said, "The military forces in Liang Zhu City have swarmed out. All large families have sent out their family armies, while the twelve cities of calamity all approach the Chi Ban Mountain line of defense of the humankind. Once our White Lotus Altar makes the move and armor all human beings, we can immediately break into Liang Zhu City."

The dragon man nodded in satisfaction and said, "We, White Lotus Altar, have our mission to break into Liang Zhu City, holding all Yu Clan people in the city hostage. Our brothers and sisters from the Red Lotus Altar, Cyan Lotus Altar, and Gold Lotus Altar will sweep across all mines and mansions of Yu Dynasty, releasing all human slaves and turning them into our Master Shifu's disciples, his believers."

While smiling, he looked at Dishi Jin and continued, "As long as we have Liang Zhu City, no matter how strong the Yu Dynasty army is, they can do nothing to us. If we release all human slaves, you will earn a credit great enough for Master Shifu to teach you

the secret magic of immortality. You will live happily forever!"

Dishi Jin deferentially kneeled towards the dragon man and murmured piously, "Live long, live free, be indestructible, through eternity!"

Chapter 1410: A Messy Start

The twelve cities of calamity formed a circle in the sky. In the center of this circle, a crystal platform quietly floated in the air. A long table stood on the platform, surrounded by a series of wing chairs.

Sitting straight on one side of the table were the twelve Yu Clan emperors. Behind each emperor were two powerful elders from the highest council of elders. They were all wearing luxurious clothing, with their heads held high in pride. Their eyes dazzled, slightly narrowed, as they looked at the representatives of human beings sitting on the other side of the table.

Emperor Shun, Emperor Xuanyuan, Candle Jiuyin in his human shape, Si Wen Ming, and Ji Hao, the five of them were the representatives of all human beings.

In the south, large groups of winged dragon hovered above Chi Ban Mountain range. These enormous, winged dragons were descendants of ancient dragons. They panted quickly and loudly with irritation, fixing their large eyes on the twelve cities of calamity.

Behind these winged dragons, a colorful cloud floated in the sky. Countless phoenixes silently stood on the cloud in their human forms. Wearing soft, colorful long robes, they all looked stunningly beautiful, similar to gods, regardless of their gender. They were even prouder than the twelve Yu Clan emperors and the twenty-four Yu Clan elders. They raised their chins as they faced the non-humankind army with their nostrils.

On the ground, large groups of dragons stood on rocks on mountaintops, lifting up their horns. With dragon heads and human bodies, they were armored to the teeth, over nine-meters in height each. None of them just stood quietly. Instead, they had been trying to provoke the non-humankind beings with lots of

body movements and even some insulting sign languages. Furthermore, some dragons even brought their Yu Clan slaves. They tied chains around the necks of their Yu Clan slaves and forced them to crawl on the ground. They wielded their whips and lashed these crawling Yu Clan slaves, making them scream in pain. Hearing the screams, these dragons laughed especially loudly on purpose.

Standing high in the sky, the phoenixes scornfully snorted towards the dragons.

Dragons had always been like this. The dragon kind inherited Pan Gu's strength, but only that. Since the era of the Dragon Ancestor, all members of the dragon-kind were rash and reckless, even brainless. They had always been busy in challenging the others like rutting bulls, fighting and showing off their strengths.

When the non-humankind firstly invaded the humankind, all species in Pan Gu world formed an alliance against the invasion. Dragons were strong, but they fell into the enemy's traps many times. Consequently, not only were large numbers of their elites wiped out by the enemy, severe damage was even caused to the other species from Pan Gu world. To a certain degree, dragons were bad teammates. But of course, they would never admit that. All dragon warriors firmly believed that they were the perfect warriors in Pan Gu world. They thought that they were strong and 'wise', and even phoenixes, who shared the origin with them, only deserved to lick their boots.

Therefore, facing this unparalleled great non-humankind army, elite dragon warriors led by tens of dragon kings had been trying their best to show off their muscles and provoke the enemies by all means. They wanted to infuriate the enemies, and let the twelve Yu Clan emperors kill Emperor Shun and the other human representatives, so that they could rush up and start a great serious war against the enemies!

Dragons were born as troublemakers. Therefore, because of the

deals between the dragon-kind and the humankind, and the pressure from the phoenix-kind, these young dragons hadn't ganged up and caused a real trouble in Midland for many years. This time, they finally got a chance to come out of their nests in groups. They would be failing their boiling blood if they didn't turn the entire Midland upside down!

Abruptly, an almost crazy dark scaled dragon rushed up to the platform floating in the middle of the circle of cities of great calamity and yelled out loud, "Oi, that chick in a dark dress, come into my arms! I will let you know that only dragons are real men! My gun can penetrate even steel boards! Don't you wanna know the taste of a real man?"

While yelling, this dark scaled dragon had been ruddily twitching his body.

Emperor Shun's face was ink-dark.

Emperor Xuanyuan's hair stood straight up from his head. His hands trembled, as he was a breath away from hacking this lascivious dragon to death.

Candle Jiuyin chuckled. He was very glad to see a dragon make such a fool of himself. He even wanted to applaud and encourage the dark-scaled dragon.

As for the so-called chick in a dark dress, Yemo Luoye's face was dark as well. Gritting her shiny white teeth, she glared at that evil dragon, who had been twitching and drooling towards her.

What did this ruttish dragon say? How dare he shamelessly say something like that in front of so many people, so many noble Yu Clan people and warriors, to her, the Dark Sun Empress, the highest power-holder of the Yemo Family?

Yemo Luoye was infuriated. Out of anger, she even felt dizzy, and couldn't even talk. If she were an ordinary lady from a noble Yu Clan family, she reasonably should have screamed and fainted.

However, she was the Dark Sun Empress. The power of the Dark Sun rolled around her body. From her head, a dark sun rose, releasing a destructive power in all directions.

Fan Hai, Dishi Yanluo, Piji Nu and the other few Yu Clan emperors, who had been holding quite some thoughts towards Yemo Luoye, leaped up simultaneously. Without glancing at that dragon, they pointed at Emperor Shun's nose and shouted out.

"Emperor Shun, if this a challenge from your humankind? Have you given up on the hope of peace? Do you want a war?"

"If you want war, we can give you war!"

"If you want death, we can give you death!"

"Ah, how dare you insult our noble Miss. Yemo Luoye? Are your human warriors all so shameless and nasty?"

"Don't stop me. I will fight this dirty worm. For Miss. Yemo Luoye's dignity, I will fight it!"

Piji Nu was the Red Sun Emperor, the most violent and impulsive one among all twelve non-humankind emperors. He roared out loud, pulled out his sword, and hopped onto the table, pointing at the dark-scaled dragon as he growled, "Lowly worm, you dared to insult Miss. Yemo Luoye, but do you dare to fight me to the death?"

With red eyes, the dark-scaled dragon roared resonantly. As he prepared to pounce on Piji Nu, an enormous fist sent him flying away. A muscular dragon king, with a dragon head and a human body covered in black scales, carried a giant axe and rushed towards Piji Nu with large steps.

"Pretty boy, let your Master Ao teach you how to be a decent man!"

Chapter 1411: Feel Each Other Out

"Shall we stop them?" Ji Hao lowered his head and murmured.

"Let's watch." Emperor Shun remained silent while Emperor Xuanyuan said with a deep voice, with a trace of excitement. A dense yellow mist coiled around him. Ji Hao sensed a strong will of fighting from Emperor Xuanyuan's voice, as he sounded full of expectation towards the battle between Piji Nu and the dark-scaled dragon king.

No one on the side of human beings stopped the dragon king.

On the side of non-humankind, all non-humankind beings curved their mouth corners upwards, giving a faint smile full of expectation. These Yu Clan nobles who luxuriated in the culture of elites all year long, curved their lips in the exact same way. At first sight, they seemed to be wearing the same masks. Looking at them, one might feel unconformable from deep down one's heart.

Piji Nu laughed out wildly. Flying towards the dragon king, his feet trod heavily on the air. With every step he took, he left a dark-red footprint in the air. The Red Sun Power rolled out from his body. The violent power quaked the air, vibrating the dark-red footprints and causing dark-red space cracks to spread.

"Worm, fight me, like a real warrior! I an a pious slave of the supreme, great Red Sun. I am Piji Nu, the Emperor in power of the Red Sun! I swear with the glory of my family and mine that I will tear your head off!"

Piji Nu growled thunderously. He took off his luxurious long robe and exposed his exquisitely crafted hauberk. The tight hauberk was made of tens of thousands of ingeniously designed, scale-like metal pieces. On each metal piece, a vividly red eye had been glowing brightly, releasing a strong, violent sense of power and emitting a thick scent of blood.

"Hah!" Piji Nu growled and flicked his wrist, sending out a red beam of light.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye and glanced at the red light beam. That was a fist-sized, arena-shaped piece. The roars of countless warriors could be heard from it. An intent of fighting condensed into a blood-red flag, rising to the sky and making it quake intensely.

The fist-sized piece dazzled with a blinding light and started to expand along with thunderous roars. Within a couple of breaths, a miles square, blood-red arena appeared between the dragon kind and Piji Nu.

Piji Nu hopped onto the arena, slightly lowered his body, and fixed his three eyes on the dark-scaled dragon king like a fierce beast preparing to pounce on his prey. The dragon king rushed madly to Piji Nu. Piji Nu shouted with a bright voice, "Tell me your name! Come onto my arena, and let's fight to the death!"

"I am Cloud Dream Lake Dragon King. I'm from the dragon-kind, and my name is Ao Ri Tian[1]!" The dark scaled dragon king roared. Carrying a giant axe, he leaped into the blood-red arena.

Ji Hao's face twitched. Sitting beside him, Si Wen Ming explained to him with a trembling voice, "Ao Hao, the dragon king from the Cloud Dream Lake! He, he, he has always been rude. When he started his adult life...Despite his father's objection, he changed his name into this. For this very reason, his father, the current Dragon Emperor, beat him cruelly and then sent him to the Cloud Dream Lake!"

Ji Hao made a long gasp. Ao Ri Tian, this dragon king had such a strong personality!

"Pretty boy, how should we do this?" Standing on the blood-red arena, Ao Hao yelled at Piji Nu, "Tell me now, how should we do this? I'm gonna ruin your pretty face! I just feel so uncomfortable seeing your pretty faces!"

Roaring towards the sky, Ao Hao released dark flames from his mouth and nose. With a strong corrosive power, the dark flame rose into the sky, seeming to even burn a hole into the sky.

"Fight till death!" A red sun emerged above Piji Nu's head. He had fallen into a crazy desire to fight as well. From under his skin, countless complicated red spells symbols emerged. An agitated, violent power condensed into an enormous bird with nine heads and eighteen wings behind his body. The birds' head looked similar to a dragon head and body like an eagle, while its long tails seemed like poisonous snakes. This was such a ferocious creature.

Surrounding the blood-red arena, countless blood-red thunderbolts suddenly erupted into thousands of sharp weapons under the effect of a strange restraining power, floating around the arena and sealing it up.

Letting out a dense red smoke from his mouth, Piji Nu growled at Ao Hao, "No one can leave this arena. Anyone who tries to leave before the winner is determined will be chopped into pieces! Only one, only one of us can get out alive! Damnable worm, taste the strongest power of the Piji Family!"

The expressions of Emperor Shun, Candle Jiuyin, and Si Wen Ming all turned especially serious.

"In the Magi Palace, you should have read some of the records about the Ancient Great War...Some extraordinarily talented non-humankind beings can merge their bodies with the souls of strong creatures, turning the beast souls into their spirit beasts. In this way, a non-humankind being can share a life with the beast, and have an immeasurably strong power." Si Wen Ming hurriedly explained to Ji Hao.

Breathing deeply, he continued, "The beasts qualified to become spirit beasts can naturally reach the level of Supreme Magus on maturity. I've never heard about this nine-headed, eighteen-winged bird before. It should be from their world."

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows as he glanced at Piji Nu.

A similar cultivation system existed in human clans in Southern Wasteland, with human beings merging with beast souls. However, the beasts chosen by Southern Wasteland people were mostly lions, tigers, leopards, elephants, and other regular strong creatures living in the jungle. In Southern Wasteland, this cultivation system was useful to Senior Magi, but barely effective for Magus Kings and Divine Magi.

But according to Si Wen Ming, the non-humankind beings had spirit creatures that could naturally reach to the level of Supreme Magi when they matured? Didn't this mean that no matter how weak Piji Nu was, in the future, he could always become a Supreme-level powerful being? Or even now, he was already such a powerful being?

Hopefully, Ao Hao could be lucky, and this spirit beast with nine heads and eighteen wings of Piji Nu wouldn't have matured yet. Otherwise, Ao Hao would get himself killed.

The blood-red arena suddenly released raging fires. Water-tank sized fire streams rose from all over the arena along with a rumbling noise. Almost simultaneously, Ao Hao and Piji Nu were both struck by a flake of fire erupting by their feet. Piji Nu nimbly moved away and dodged at lightning speed. The fire only burned a small area of his armor black.

But, Ao Hao wasn't familiar with the arena. Therefore, when the fire rose, he reacted relatively slowly. The scale on his left arm was burned glowing red, which made him howl in pain. Wielding his giant axe, he marched towards Piji Nu.

Watching the fight, all non-humankind beings and human warriors held their breaths.

This suddenly occurring battle seemed to be an accidental event, but in fact, it was meant to happen. After all, the non-humankind intended to keep showing their strengths to so many human

beings, dragons, and phoenixes, while the humankind was holding an intention to feel out the actual abilities of the non-humankind leaders. Even if the dirty talking black dragon didn't start this, some other people would stand out and start a battle directly between the leaders of both sides.

Laughing out loud, Ao Hao swung his axe down at Piji Nu, which dazzled with a frigid light.

———————

[1]Ao Ri Tian's real name is 敖(Ao)昊(Hao). This character '昊' includes two parts. The upper part '日' literally means 'sun', but in dirty talks, this word can also mean 'have sex with...', or simply, the 'F' word. As the lower part of '昊', the character '天' simply means 'sky'. So, now we can understand that Ao Hao changed his name into Ao Ri Tian because he believed that he could 'f*ck the sky'. In case you may want to know, yes, Ji Hao has the same name.

Chapter 1412: Ao Hao Fails

Maybe because the dragon-kind merely inherited Saint Pan Gu's toughness, their warriors were never smart enough. Therefore, many strange beings emerged among the dragoons. Ao Hao, for example, he once chopped down all plants on a towering mountain within a day for strengthening his axe. On another occasion, he carved eight-hundred mountains into statues, and at one time, he shaved all wild animals living in a mountain area.

Ao Hao was a high-level axe artist. The frigid light brought up by his axe sealed the space around Piji Nu, and every inch of the space was now filled with a strong aura of killing. Layer by layer, the frigid light pressed down like an iceberg, ready to mince Piji Nu.

Behind Piji Nu, the bird with the nine heads and eighteen wings screamed shrilly as Piji Nu moved suddenly. All people on the scene could clearly see every move of his. Every single movement he made was like a statue left in the air, absolutely clear in everyone's vision. 'Slowly', he moved step by step, his motions looking 'simple' as a step forward, a step backward, a step towards the left, and a step towards the right. Within a small area, he dodged in four directions extremely simply. Ao Hao swung his axe down over and over again, but despite the simpleness of Piji Nu's evasive action, he failed to touch even a hair of his.

Thousands of shreds of afterimages left by Piji Nu layered up in this small space. Within this region, the space seemed to expand by tens of thousands of times, such that every single shred of afterimage was clearly visible. The space around Piji Nu's body was changed, so Ao Hao's giant axe seemed to land on a shadow each time instead of touching Piji Nu's body.

"Brute force, pure brute force... Ignorant and stupid local worm, what do you have except brute force?" Piji Nu taunted. Abruptly, he reached to Ao Hao with one step and threw a heavy slap on his face.

It was loud. The fine scales on Ao Hao's face were shattered, while a clear handprint was left on it. Dragons were mostly bad-tempered, like Ao Hao, who roared towards the sky in fury. From under each scale of his, scorching hot air screams puffed out, straightening them up like countless blades standing on his body.

Ao Hao grew three meters taller. Tailed by meters long, sharp light beams, his axe swept through the air over and over again. Every strike he launched left a dark trail in the air. Ao Li boosted up his strength to an extreme degree, until blood seeped out of his mouth corners. At the moment, he had been burning his spirit blood while launching every attack. And every full strike he launched was one hundred percent stronger than usual.

"Useless! Brute force is brute force, the weakest power in the world. Silly worm, you know nothing about natural laws. Brute force is useless against natural laws!" Piji Nu smiled as he moved easily and relaxedly. He even had the time to squeeze his gaze towards Yemo Luoye.

"Dear Yemo Luoye, how is my spirit beast? A highly precious 'sky dominator' from Pan Yu world... I spent every penny I had and a big fund given by my family and finally bought a sky dominator egg from an auction. You are a knowledgeable being, so you must know that a perfectly matured sky dominator will have an immortal-stage power!"

Piji Nu told the story of his spirit beast proudly.

Emperor Shun, Emperor Xuanyuan, and Candle Jiuyin dropped their faces. Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming had both learned about the grading of the non-humankind power system from secret records in the Magi Palace. Their hearts missed a beat, as Ji Hao felt a coldness from every pore of his.

The stage of Sun and Moon equaled to the level of Supreme Magus. Due to the differences of power natures and talents, some Sun and Moon stage beings were stronger than average Supreme

Magi, while some were weaker. Even based on a higher power level, a Sun and Moon stage non-humankind being could be beaten by a lower level human Magus in an overpowering way. For example, Fan Gu, as a Sun and Moon stage being, was defeated by Shennong, as a Divine Magus, seven times!

Above the stage of Sun and Moon was the stage of Beyond-redemption. It was a much higher stage, that Ji Hao could not yet understand.

The stage of Immortality was even beyond the stage of Beyond-redemption. According to non-humankind beings, Immortality stage powerful beings lived immortal lives. They were indescribably strong, and not even the destruction of a great world could harm them.

The sky dominator was so gifted that a 'perfectly matured' one could have an Immortality-stage power! Undoubtedly, it would be extra difficult for it to mature perfectly. Perhaps, Piji Nu wouldn't be able to promote his spirit beast to that level. However, even if Piji Nu couldn't reach to the stage of Immortality, as a Beyond-redemption stage being, he would still be a major threat to the humankind.

Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao glanced at each other, both their eyes sparkling with a determined frosty light — Piji Nu had to die. At all costs, they had to kill Piji Nu before he grew strong, destroying him and his spirit beast. Otherwise, the humankind would be facing a large trouble in the future.

Yemo Luoye clapped her hands as she giggled. She blinked her eyes, looked at Piji Nu in a flirty way, and said, "A sky dominator? A potential one for the stage of Immortality? Which means this is a pure-blooded sky dominator, isn't it? I thought it's a mix-blood!"

Piji Nu proudly and easily dodged the interweaving cold light beams. He even turned around, facing Ao Hao with his back as he looked straight at Yemo Luoye and responded, "Of course, it has to

be a pure-blooded sky dominator. Otherwise, why would I spend so much money for it? You have to know that for this baby, I even pledged all my family dividends for the next one hundred thousand years to my family."

Yemo Luoye narrowed her eyes and grinned, as if absorbed in her thoughts.

Sitting aside, the facial expressions of Polo Jia, Yanmo Sha, Dishi Yanluo, and the others had been changing constantly. Piji Nu suddenly showed his strongest weapon, which not only shocked Ji Hao and the other human representatives, but also made the other non-humankind emperors feel uneasy.

Damn this Piji Nu! It was actually a pure-blooded sky dominator? Same as Yemo Luoye, the other non-humankind emperors had all believed that it was a mix-blood. It had to be a mix-blood! A mix-blood sky dominator could reach the stage of Sun and Moon at most. But a pure-blooded one...Damn this Piji Nu! Why on earth did he sneakily buy a pure-blooded sky dominator? What was he planning?

"I've had enough fun, so... die!" Piji Nu burst with a bright laughter while dashing back to Ao Hao. Weirdly, his right arm swelled as he pressed his palm on Ao Hao's chest.

A thunderous boom occurred, following which, the half-inch thick scales on Ao Hao's chest were shattered, and a strong force struck into his body. Blood surged out of his mouth, ears, eyes, nose in giant streams. Even his eyeballs were crushed by this unspeakably strong force.

Ao Hao's chest was punctured as Piji Nu's hand came out of his body from his back. A brightly red mist coiled on that palm.

"Die!" Shouted Piji Nu.

Ji Hao breathed deeply, then leaped into the sky. Rushing onto the arena instantly, he raised his right foot and kicked fiercely at

Piji Nu's head, bringing up a strong gust of wind.

Chapter 1413: Suppress the Spirit Beast with the Cauldron

"Wanna save him? Impossible!"

Piji Nu laughed wildly. He defended himself against Ji Hao's foot that was swishing at him. Meanwhile, the bright red mist coiled on his other hand grew thicker and thicker. Apparently, he was preparing for a stronger attack. He wanted to kill Ao Hao with another attack.

The blood-red arena was a special tool for dueling created by the Red Sun. It would disable the ones inside the arena from coming out, but would never stop the ones on the outside from coming in. Ji Hao's foot left a straight dark trail in the sky and then landed heavily on Piji Nu's palm.

Behind Piji Nu, the sky dominator widely opened its twenty-seven eyes. Piji Nu screamed in pain as Ji Hao's foot violently struck on his palm. Along with a loud bone cracking noise, everyone on the scene saw his palm get twisted. Tens of broken bones came out of his hand through his muscles.

Without having the time to launch a lethal attack on Ji Hao, Piji Nu immediately stepped backward. Faintly visible space waves were stirred up around the sky dominator. Leaving clear afterimages, Piji Nu attempted to escape from Ji Hao's attack range. But, once he took the first step, Ji Hao also left a clear shred of afterimage in the air, then weirdly appeared right behind him.

Without using any weapon, Ji Hao broke the space with his elbow. Then following a thunderous bang, he dealt an elbow-blow to Piji Nu's back, aimed at his heart.

Behind Piji Nu, the sky dominator stared at Ji Hao furiously. As the sky dominator moved, Piji Nu's body suddenly flashed across the sky. Before Ji Hao's elbow landed on his back, he moved to a

corner of the arena.

This was the power of a spirit beast. The sky dominator shared a mind with Piji Nu. Therefore, the details that Piji Nu could not notice during a battle could be grasped by his spirit beast. Furthermore, it could make the most appropriate reaction for Piji Nu.

Ji Hao's embryo of Dao locked its fingers together, as waves of space vibration spread out from Ji Hao's body. He too moved through the space. Almost at the same time as Piji Nu appeared in the corner of the arena, Ji Hao showed up right beside him, raised his fists, and punched at him. Those fists were as heavy and strong as shooting stars.

Piji Nu screamed as his body flashed in the air. At the moment, one could see the afterimages left by him all over the arena. Ji Hao activated the golden bridge, and he himself had some understanding about the great Dao of space as well. Through the space, he followed closely after Piji Nu.

Like a pair of butterflies, they chased each other in the arena. From time to time, the sky dominator roared in both shock and anger. Apparently, this Pan Yu world beast never thought that it would encounter a living being who know about the great Dao of space as much as it did.

This sky dominator had hatched merely years ago. However, it was a 'space creature'. Moving through space was an instinct to it, similar to a fish swimming in water. Sky dominators had a much better control of space than any other species.

Chased by Ji Hao, this baby sky dominator shrieked madly. All of a sudden, the space around Piji Nu collapsed. Countless sharp space pieces condensed into dark blades and lunged towards Ji Hao along with a shrill swishing noise.

"Pause!" Ji Hao gave a resonant shout. The Pan Gu bell rose from his head and swept across the surrounding space with an especially

heavy, unstoppable power. The collapsed space was fixed immediately, and the dark blades were dispelled.

Buzz! The space in the arena was forcibly strengthened by the Pan Gu bell, turning strangely strong, more than a hundred times stronger than usual. Piji Nu, who was moving swiftly and nimbly like a butterfly, suddenly paused. With a muffled snort, a blood mist started spraying from his mouth.

The space was strengthened by the Pan Gu bell. Piji Nu and the sky dominator were like a pair of fishes swishing in the water, which had been freely moving in the water. But all of a sudden, the flowing water they were familiar with became a hard and heavy steel block. A tremendous counterforce instantly injured their bodies, and even their souls had suffered severe injuries.

Piji Nu vomited blood, while the sky dominator turned dim and blur, almost disappearing.

Piji Nu stared at Ji Hao with hatred. He wasn't a Sun and Moon stage powerful being after all, and this young, pure-blooded sky dominator was not yet mature. It was still too weak.

Ji Hao's powers, abilities, and quite a few treasures had made him an invincible opponent of Piji Nu. Once the Pan Gu bell was activated, both Piji Nu and the sky dominator were wounded.

"Damn you, Marquis Yao Ji Hao! You ruined the most sacred duel! You have to pay for this!" Piji Nu ragingly glanced back at Ao Hao, who had already stepped back, taking a few bottles of life-saving pills. The hole in his chest was healing speedily. Pointing at Ji Hao, Piji Nu screamed.

The arena was shaking intensely. Thunderbolts condensed into all kinds of weapons, falling on Ji Hao while more thunderbolts emerged, condensing into new weapons. Fire streams puffed up from the ground and rolled towards Ji Hao.

"Is this your Red Sun's tool for fair duels? Hah, but you're

controlling everything in this arena, aren't you?" As Ji Hao sneered tauntingly, the Pan Gu bell released streams of Chaos power that wrapped him up. Struck by the thunderbolts and burned by the fire, Ji Hao remained perfectly unharmed. He felt nothing but a slight shaking because of the strong impact forces coming from all directions.

"This..." Piji Nu and the two Red Sun elders all paused in shock, not knowing what to do.

The arena was a special sacred tool that belonged to the Red Sun. In the past countless centuries, countless warriors fought duels with each other. The souls of all warriors who died in the arena were absorbed by it. As a result, it grew stronger and stronger. Currently, the arena could even effectively threat Supreme-level powerful beings. Yet, Ji Hao remained completely uninjured in the arena under a storm of attacks, and he didn't even seem to be making too many efforts for it. This didn't make sense, did it?

"Not possible!" Piji Nu shouted out loud.

"Nothing is impossible!" So did Ji Hao. He locked his fingers together and let the nine dragons chariot fly out of his head, emitting a blinding light which forced everyone on the scene close their eyes instinctively.

Even Piji Nu closed his eyes at this moment. The Chariot's light was way too dazzling.

At this very moment, Ji Hao sent out a five-colored beam of light from his palm. Hidden in his lower belly, the cauldron buzzed intensely and released a dreadful suction force, tightly wrapping up the sky dominator behind Piji Nu.

The sky dominator screamed in fear. The five-colored light suddenly shone brighter, while the sky dominator was dragged into the five-colored cauldron. This five-colored cauldron could even suppress high-level sky devils, not to mention this immature spirit beast.

Piji Nu suddenly lost his spirit beast. He growled in panic, while his blood gushed out of his ears, eyes, nose, and mouth.

Chapter 1414: Yu Clan's Aphorism

"No, give it back to me!" Piji Nu shouted, shaking his head as his blood sprayed a long distance away.

"I took it, I occupied it, I shall have it forever!" Looking at Piji Nu, Ji Hao said while pulling out Pan Gu Dragon Mark. Pointing the sword tip at Piji Nu's heart, he sneered, "You carved this on the gate of your Liang Zhu City! I like it!"

Piji Nu gasped quickly, staring at Ji Hao with his three eyes that were filled with blood streaks. He couldn't say a word.

'I took it down, I occupied it, I shall have it forever', this was not just carved on the gate of Liang Zhu City. Wherever Yu Clan people reached, and in all places they occupied, this slogan was carved on all gates of their cities. This slogan had become a faith of Yu Clan people ever since their ancestors conquered the first world.

The strong ones, the ones with sharp weapons, could have everything. It was a pure robbers' logic, but it was accepted by countless Yu Clan people.

The two powerful elders who followed Piji Nu here stood up simultaneously and moved slightly, instantly entering the arena. With a dark face, Piji Nu looked at Ji Hao as he said coldly, "This aphorism is the highest truth, the origin of our belief. But, only the truly powerful ones are qualified to use it. You, apparently, you're not one of them!"

Gritting his teeth, Piji Di looked at Ji Hao as he wielded a heavy flail. The flail had three chains, each tied on a meteor hammer that was as large as a wine jar. It was thickly covered with sharp thorns, spinning swiftly and causing shrill whooshing noises.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, give back my spirit beast. If you do what I say, we can forgive you. But if you don't, you will die!"

Including Yemo Luoye, the other eleven non-humankind

emperors and their elders remained completely motionless. They looked at Piji Nu, Piji Tian, Piji Di, and Ji Hao, who was surrounded by the three of them, with immense interest.

Ji Hao smiled, but didn't say a word. Pan Gu Dragon Mark slightly quaked, letting out dragon roars which got louder and louder, brighter and brighter, more and more deafening, more and more agitated. By the end, it even sounded like tens of thousands of enormous dragons roaring by one's ears, terrifying and shaking one's entire body, make one feel like being struck by countless bolts of lightning.

Yemo Shayi sneered and transformed into a dark shadow, dissipating in the air. Hearing the sky-shaking dragon roars, Yemo Shayi's cold, dagger-sharp laughter echoed, "Piji Tian, Piji Di, be careful...Don't let me seize any chance, because I can kill both of you with one sword move."

Piji Tian and Piji Di's facial expressions changed instantly. They were both Sun and Moon stage beings too, same as Yemo Shayi. However, they were pure fighters. Face to face, they wouldn't be afraid of any enemy. But, as a Sun and Moon stage powerful being, Yemo Shayi was an experienced assassin who liked nothing more than stabbing one's back. In the eyes of Piji Tian and Piji Di, Yemo Shayi was the most troublesome opponent.

Which warrior would want an assassin hanging around behind him while he was focused on an intense battle?

Piji Tian yelled angrily, "Yemo Shayi, fight me like a real warrior!"

Hearing Piji Tian, Yemo Shayi sneered scornfully. Back in the Yemo Family, he was a slave. He never stood in a high position. Therefore, he didn't have the fake sense of honor which belonged especially to noble beings. All his life, he fought as an assassin who stabbed from the back. Fighting a powerful Red Sun warrior face to face? He would never do it, unless his brain was damaged.

While Yemo Shayi was sneering, Piji Di rushed towards Ji Hao with giant steps. His heavy flail brought up a fierce gust of wind and smashed towards Ji Hao. On the three-meters-long hilt of the flail, countless spell symbols sparkled, while the three giant meteor hammers swished ear-piercingly across the air. Spinning rapidly, red thunderbolts erupted from the three meteor hammers simultaneously.

Ji Hao took a deep breath and triggered the cultivation method with nine turns to an extreme degree. Once again, his skin turned weirdly colorless and crystalline. While holding Pan Gu dragon mark with his right hand and remaining unmoved, Ji Hao clenched his five left fingers and raised his hand to catch the flail which came straight down at his head.

Si Wen Ming and Emperor Shun stood up together and stared at Ji Hao, stunned. Was he actually attempting to take the weapon from a Sun and Moon stage powerful being with a bare hand? Red Sun warriors were not like weak warlocks from Full Moon. They were extremely strong. As same as High Moon warriors, they were best at close combats and pure physical fights!

Following a bang, Ji Hao gripped one meteor hammer with his fingers. Sizzling thunderbolts struck on his palm and raised wisps of smoke. His skin split up slightly, but that was all.

Hearing the sizzling noise, as Ji Hao put forth his strength, his fingers slowly sank into the meteor hammer like five drillers, creating five holes on it. On the hammer, countless spell symbols fell apart. Watching this, Piji Di roared in shock — Ji Hao's body was actually stronger than his meteor hammers!

Simultaneously, the eleven non-humankind emperors and twenty-two powerful elders stood up, all dumbfounded.

The three-ended flail held in Piji Di's hand was his spirit weapon. He almost spent a lifetime to cultivate it. After every few centuries, he would consume a great amount of precious materials to

strengthen and improve it. Ji Hao's body was a fleshy body after all. How could it be even stronger than the flail?

Piji Di's eyes grew wider as he stared at Ji Hao and growled with a dry voice, "What kind of a monster are you?"

Ji Hao gripped the meteor hammer with his left hand while his right hand lunged Pan Gu Dragon Mark towards Piji Di's lower abdomen, shining with a cold light.

Piji Di gave a roar and attempted to take back his weapon, but Ji Hao's tightly clenched five fingers remained unmoved. Piji Di tried his best, but failed to pull his weapon back. As he hesitated for a short moment, Pan Gu Dragon Mark easily penetrated his lower abdomen and came out from his back.

Blood splashed everywhere, as Piji Di howled in pain and retreated. He dropped his weapon and covered his wound with both hands while cursing.

Piji Tian hurriedly rushed to Piji Di, carefully shielded his brother, and said, "Alright, alright, Marquis Yao Ji Hao, I admit that you're qualified to use our aphorism, that you are a truly powerful being! Alright? Piji Nu's spirit beast, we need it back at all costs. Name your price!"

Without a doubt, Ji Hao's performance proved that he did have a Supreme-level power. He didn't use any other power but his physical strength, which had definitely reached the level of a Supreme Magus. The less effort he put into it, the more astonishing this got.

Without other choices, Piji Tian admitted that Ji Hao was qualified to use that aphorism, and the spirit beast was already owned by him. By now, there was no other way but letting Ji Hao extort them, and getting that spirit beast back by paying a high price.

"Well, this can be negotiated, can be negotiated... Hehe, no rush,

there's no rush!" Ji Hao gave a harmless grin, then slowly returned to the table and sat back down.

Chapter 1415: Fight Together

Persuaded by the eleven non-humankind emperors, Piji Nu sat back into his seat. He was utterly discomfited. Gritting his teeth, he stared at Ji Hao with a bone-deep hatred. He even seemed to squeeze his three eyeballs out of his eye sockets and smash them on Ji Hao's face.

Ji Hao still had his spirit beast. Piji Nu hated Ji Hao so much, but he dared not to start more conflicts. Instead, he remained sitting and silent.

"Good! Talk, let's talk." Polo Jia, the Flow Moon Emperor, glanced at Piji Nu's awfully darkened face and slowly nodded.

Among the twelve branches of the non-humankind, Flow Moon people were knowledge keepers, the guardians of the Yu Clan civilization. Therefore, Flow Moon people weren't good at fighting, but their wisdom was far beyond people from the other branches. Polo Jia was such a man. Among all twelve emperors from the Yu Dynasty, he was the weakest one physically. However, he was also the calmest and wisest one. For face-to-face negotiation like this, he would always do the talking on behalf of all.

Emperor Shun put his hands on the table and frowned slightly, sweeping across the twelve non-humankind emperors with his eyes. Then, he seriously nodded and said, "So, let's talk. I assume that we human beings now are qualified to run a fair negotiation face to face with you, right?"

Polo Jia threw a complicated glance at Ji Hao, but remained silent.

None of the twelve non-humankind emperors seemed to be delighted. Behind them, the twenty-four powerful elders, especially Piji Tian and Piji Di, looked extremely sulky.

How old was Ji Hao? A hundred years old? No, he was definitely

younger than that! Judging by the power they sensed from him, he was not yet even fifty! He was so young, but he could rival Piji Di. He was actually strong enough to break Piji Di's weapon with his fingers.

Earlier, Ji Hao penetrated Piji Di's lower belly with his sword fiercely and swiftly. All powerful non-humankind elders who watched that felt a sharp coldness from their own lower abdomens, as if Ji Hao's sword had pierced into their bellies too.

They could tell for sure that Piji Di had underestimated his enemy. He hadn't been seeing Ji Hao as an equal-level enemy. He was careless, so he suffered a sword strike. The problem was that even if Piji Di underestimated Ji Hao, the latter was certainly as strong as him — He was equally powerful as a Sun and Moon stage being!

A Sun and Moon stage powerful being under fifty years old!

The twelve non-humankind emperors and the twenty-four elders had now been silently cursing Ji Hao's ancestors in their heads. If Ji Hao represented the potential of the new generations of human beings, the humankind was surely qualified to fun a fair negotiation with the non-humankind.

They thought about those young Yu Clan people. At Ji Hao's age, they were busy at leading a befuddled life, drinking, dating, and fighting each other in Liang Zhu City because of jealousy. Among Yu Clan people at Ji Hao's age, even Divine-Magus-level beings were rare, not to mention the stage of Sun and Moon.

"Of course, we admit that you have the potential." Polo Jia said calmly, "An astonishing, daunting potential. Marquis Yao Ji Hao, how many times have we heard this title and name these years? We truly didn't think that he is already so strong."

Quickly knocking the table with his fingers, Polo Jia continued with a cold voice, "You are so strong, so full of potential, so you deserve to know what I am going to tell you. Unfortunately, you

are facing a destructive disaster right now!"

Emperor Shun's frowned. Glaring at Polo Jia, he said, "We are facing a destructive disaster right now? Polo Jia, are you saying that your twelve cities of great calamity will destroy our humankind?"

Earlier, Ao Hao was injured badly by Piji Nu. But by now, the hole in his chest was healed already. Even after all that, he shamelessly asked for a seat beside Emperor Xuanyuan, sitting straight down. Hearing Emperor Shun, Ao Hao laughed out loud, "Destroy the humankind? These pretty boys and pretty old men? Haha, Emperor Shun, kid, don't be afraid. Our dragon boys and I will assist in fighting! With us, your humankind will never be destroyed!"

Emperor Shun dropped his face, while Emperor Xuanyuan's finger twitched intensely. Apparently, he could put his sword into Ao Hao's throat at any time.

Piji Nu leaped up, stared at Ao Hao, and growled, "Worm, you think you're strong? If Ji Hao didn't interrupt the battle, you would have died already!"

Ao Hao showed no sign of weakness. He leaped up as well, pointed at Piji Nu's nose, and yelled, "Three-eyed monster, if you didn't have that ugly bird behind you, can you possibly defeat your Master Ao? Haha, come on, come on! Let's fight the second round! I will make you happy!"

Clang! Piji Nu pulled out his sword and Ao Hao raised his giant axe. Both of them roared aloud.

Piji Tian stood up and slapped on Piji Nu's shoulder, pressing him back into his seat.

Emperor Xuanyuan stood up and gave Ao Hao a heavy slap. Ao Hao's head was slapped swinging sideways. After that, he lowered his head and dared not to say another word. Quietly sitting back

down, he began complaining mumblingly in a muffled voice.

"Polo Jia, tell us, what destructive disaster are we facing?" Looking at Polo Jia seriously, Emperor Shun asked, "If you want to stary another great war, we will give you that!"

Polo Jia breathed deeply, then took out a crystal ball and placed it on the table.

A dim light sparkled in the crystal ball. Twelve portal-base teleporting formations, which had been ceaselessly releasing intense space vibrations, emerged in the crystal ball. Pointing at the crystal ball, Polo Jia told Emperor Shun about the guess of the twelve families in power.

"Dishi Cha?" Emperor Shun said in shock, "Isn't he one of you?"

Dishi Yanluo's twisted face twitched as he said through gritted teeth, "A traitor! He betrayed the family! He sold the secrets of our family to some other people! That scum! I was wondering why he would have the coordinates of twelve new worlds! Damn it, he fooled us. We wanted the resources from the twelve new worlds, but we never thought that...Dishi Cha had such a scheme!"

Emperor Shun remained silent, and so did Emperor Xuanyuan. Candle Jiuyin, Si Wen Ming, and Ji Hao were all lost in their thoughts.

A top-grade powerful being from Pan Yu world, who was seen as a formidable enemy by the twelve families in power in Yu Dynasty? Gong Gong raised the flood for no other purpose but to guide that powerful being's army to Pan Gu world?

It was too much information to be absorbed in such a short span of time.

A long while later, Ji Hao started talking, "Which means, for your own benefits, you twelve families allied and kept Pan Gu world secret from...the true powerful nobles in your hometown?"

The twelve emperors didn't respond, just staring at Ji Hao in the

eyes.

Ji Hao nodded, totally understanding the situation. "So, now you want us to fight those people, who are coming without an invitation, together with you?"

Polo Jia narrowed his eyes and said, "We hope that you can deploy all your forces and...follow our orders!"

"Impossible!" Emperor Xuanyuan and Emperor Shun were both infuriated. They stood up and growled resonantly.

Alo To, the High Moon Emperor, immediately leaped up from his seat and yelled, "If you refuse to follow our order, we will beat you until you obey!"

Chapter 1416: The Glorious Domination

Liang Zhu City...

Wearing a mask that covered half of his face, Yemo Tian walked in a street that he was familiar with.

Maybe because all main military forces had swarmed out with the twelve emperors, guards in Liang Zhu City became lazy. They were supposed to be on patrol along all streets and alleys. But now, they left their mounts aside and stood by the street in small groups, talking about the rosy time they spent last night.

Occasionally, very occasionally, a couple of slightly more responsible guards would glance at Yemo Tian, but it was nothing more than a few glances. Yemo Tian's clothes were made from expensive fabric that only top-grade nobles could afford. The twelve brightly shining spell symbols rings on his fingers could even blind a healthy living being, and even his mast had been releasing strong energy waves.

Yemo Tian looked like another young Yu Clan noble who was probably going to some inappropriate place, and had his face covered to cover his tracks. The guards laughed and lowered their voices, guessing Yemo Tian's identity, and which lady he was going to date secretly. They excitedly made a bet. They betted that in one or two months, the gossips regarding the sudden pregnancy of an unmarried lady would be heard again from Liang Zhu City.

Yemo Tian's ear was shaking slightly as he heard every word those guards said.

He snorted scornfully. In his eyes, those guards were nothing but a bunch of vulgar, useless people. He was Yemo Tian, a possessor of the noblest bloodline from Pan Gu world. In the future, he would become the owner of Pan Gu world and all the surrounding worlds. He didn't have the time to return to Liang Zhu City every day, so how could he come back especially for that kind of a thing?

Noble ladies in Liang Zhu City...

"To be honest, I do miss them. But, when I become the owner of this world, I will have abundant time to spend with them. Right now, there is no rush, really no rush!" Yemo Tian smilingly walked into an alley, calmly passing through a group of muscular Jia Clan men who sat by the alley, doing nothing. Proceeding ahead, he finally walked to a dark bronze door at the end of the alley.

Taking off his mask, Yemo Tian threw a kick onto the door.

Complicated patterns glowed on the door. Within the glow, a fist-sized eye emerged in the middle of the door. From the eye, a dim beam of light shone on Yemo Tian's body, scanning across his body from head to toe multiple times. A while later, the door quietly slid open.

Behind the door was a narrow passage. Over ten Jia Clan men guarded by the wall. They bared their upper bodies, and were as strong as bears. Because of these Jia Clan guards, the space left in the passage for people to pass through was even tinier.

The passage was tens of meters long. Through it, Yemo Tian walked into a broad hall that was hundreds of meters in square. Long and thick wooden tables were placed orderly in the hall. A group of tall and sturdy Jia Clan warriors sat around the tables, laughing, chatting, and drinking. On the table were roasted whole tigers, lions, bulls, and other dishes to go with the booze.

"Whoo-hah!" Seeing Yemo Tian walk in, over a hundred Jia Clan warriors in the hall, whose faces were blushed because of the alcohol, raised their water-tank-sized liquor cups together and acclaimed him.

The strong sound waves quacked the roof, even making dust fall from the ceiling. Yemo Tian smilingly waved his hand to these Jia Clan warriors, then walked to a corner along the wall. An exquisitely designed door quietly opened. Through a spiral staircase, Yemo Tian walked down quickly.

After walking down for three-hundred meters, a scrawny man wearing a dark cloak, coiled in thin black mist, silently opened a door for him. Walking through the door, Yemo Tian came to another broad hall, which was also hundreds of meters in square.

Four large square tables were placed in the hall. These pure metal tables were especially heavy, embossed with beautiful patterns and inlaid with tens of thousands of glistening gemstones. They were blindingly reflecting the glow of the thousands of pearls floating in the air.

Tens of Xiu Clan people stood by the four tables, holding perfectly polished magnifying glasses and carefully observing some brightly shining crystals, gemstones, jade, and pearls in their hands.

Treasures piled on the four tables like small hills. These Xiu Clan people had been picking things from these piles and professionally verifying their values, then handing them to the non-humankind slaves behind them. The non-humankind slaves classified these treasures according to the value and carefully put them into pure gold boxes.

Five Yu Clan young men in luxurious clothes had been lazily sitting in a corner of the hall. That was a special wine testing zone, designed especially for them. Holding exquisite glasses, they lazily leaned against soft benches and took sips of the wine from time to time.

Yemo Tian walked to the five young men in large steps while clapping his hands loudly, and yelled, "Aha! You five bloody parasites! I am busying at intriguing against everyone else out there, while you hiding in here and enjoying your lives. Life is never fair, is it?"

The five young men immediately stood up and smilingly bowed to Yemo Tian. To Yemo Tian, they were extremely polite and respectful.

"Boss, you're back! We've been making some solid profits these years. Three days earlier, we made a great deal. A Blood Moon man from a branch of the Di Family wanted to inherit his uncle's family business, and we helped him give his uncle a sudden death. What we earned from this deal is worth more than three billion jade coins!" Straightening his body, a young man impatiently showed off their achievements to Yemo Tian.

"So nasty!" Yemo Tian frowned and said, "So nasty! Murdering his own uncle for the family business? And he asked us to do that for him? We are Glorious Domination! This is a humiliation to us! Charge him ten more billion jade coins. Otherwise, we will turn him in!"

"You are so wise, boss!" The five Yu Clan young man laughed together evilly.

Yemo Tian sat down on a bench, while the five young men told him about all the great achievements they had made in these years.

Based on the legal system of Yu Dynasty, what they had done were mostly illegal and immoral. From their conversations, one could easily learn that their so-called Glorious Domination was led by Yemo Tian and these five young men. The members of this organization included many young people from the twelve families in power. They had been acting quite evilly in collusion with each other, and were under the protection of their elderships. This organization was a tumor of Yu Dynasty.

Ji Hao had been to a prison run by the non-humankind called Black Shark Castle. The prison was an important financial resource of this organization, where many tragedies happened under their direction.

"Alright, wealth is nothing!" Yemo Tian gave the final conclusion, "What I need is not wealth. I need strength! I need this wealth to become my strength!"

"All this money, where did you spend it these years?"

Chapter 1417: The City of Domination

A well-made triangular flying battleship was above the clouds, spreading its lateens like the wings of a bird. Countless spell symbols sparkled on the lateen, creating strong airstreams that pushed the ship forward swiftly.

The six leaders of the Glorious Domination sat on the deck while holding their glasses and delightfully talking about the scandals from Liang Zhu City all these years.

The flood brought the humankind huge casualties, but to the non-humankind, it brought nothing but an extremely boring life. The flood surged all over the world. Well-protected by divine towers, these Yu Clan nobles had nowhere to go. Therefore, they tried their best to find thrill-seeking things to do, just inside Liang Zhu City. All strange kinds of things happened constantly during the flood. Yu Clan people's tumultuous private life was worsened to an extreme point during that period of time. Exposed or not, over a thousand young unmarried girls from noble families became pregnant.

Most of the leading roles of these scandals were old friends of Yemo Tian and the other five Yu Clan young men. Secret duels and acts of revenge were caused by these 'romantic affairs'. Consequently, many cruel and nasty things happened in the dark.

Yemo Tian wasn't around, hence, the other five leaders of Glorious Domination made the call and used the hidden conflicts between large families to earn a giant sum of money. In addition to that, they seized the opportunity and wiped out tens of Yu Clan families, which were not weak at all, and brought the successors of over a hundred above-average families under their control. All in all, because of the flood raised by Gong Gong, both the financial and political power of Yemo Tian and his people had swollen rapidly.

At a fairly high speed, the flying battleship flew three-hundred-thousand miles northeast and arrived in a dark mountain area. Faintly visible golden, silver, and red stripes interwove on the dark mountains. At first sight, people with geographical knowledge would know that this mountain area must have a tremendous mineral reserve.

This place was called the Dark Mountain Mine, one of the few most important mines that belonged to the non-humankind. Same as Tusk Basin, this was also a main producing area for mineral resources. A great number of human slaves worked in this mine, and a strong non-humankind army was guarding this area.

The flying battleship flew into the mine area and stopped above the vent of a towering volcano.

A round metal platform silently rose from the volcano vent, having a diameter of ninety meters, and stopped near the deck of the flying battleship. Yemo Tian and the others stepped onto the platform. Coiled with dim lightning bolts, the platform dropped back into the volcano vent while releasing a strong forcefield that split the lava as it sank in deeply.

About a thousand meters deep inside the volcano vent was a large tunnel built by the non-humankind. Proceeding along the tunnel, the metal platform went further down. Hundreds of miles underground, the platform reached the end of the tunnel. Through a thick defensive screen, Yemo Tian and his people arrived in a fairly broad space. It was a hundreds of miles squared area, yet it would give one a pent-up feeling, as if it were 'stuffed'. Three cities of great calamity, each over a hundred miles squared and yet not 'bloomed', floated in this underground space.

Countless human slaves, non-humankind slaves, and Xiu Clan craftsmen had been busying around the three cities of great calamity. Lightning bolts dazzled everywhere, while the light streams emitted from spell symbols were flowing into every corner. Energy fields repelled each other, causing buzzing noises.

Numerous overpasses were built in this space. Countless heavily armored Jia Clan warriors guarded on the overpasses, fiercely looking down at those slaves and craftsmen. Holding all kinds of powerful long-range weapons, they shouted at the slaves and craftsmen from time to time. Groups of dark-kind slave warriors were holding long whips, coiled in dazzling lightning bolts while dashing around. Seeing any slave who was suspiciously indolent in duty, they would immediately swing their whips and give a heavy lash, making those slaves scream in pain and fall on the ground, twitching intensively.

A good-looking, tall and slim Yu Clan man walked quickly to Yemo Tian and his people, along with about ten followers. Around a hundred meters away from Yemo Tian, this Yu Clan man had already bowed deeply.

"Dear leader, seeing you is my, Piji Wuyue's, greatest honor!" The Yu Clan man smilingly raised his head and said, "As you can see, the constructional work of our three cities of great calamity is about to be finished."

"Boss, it's been fifteen years. Finally, our cities of great calamity are going to finish." A Glorious Domination leader proudly pointed at the three enormous cities of great calamity and said, "It's never easy. How many efforts have we spent to mix all the components of these three big guys amidst giant quantities of other goods, and teleport them here from Pan Yu world?"

Yemo Tian curved his lip corners down and said blandly, "Eh? Not bad! Ten years ago, I would be thrilled to have these three large pieces. But now...It's still nice though. Three cities of great calamity will be enough for us to control the entire Liang Zhu City. Are these the special versions customized based on my requirements?"

A Glorious Domination leader hurriedly nodded and said, "Yes boss! According to you, the best way of defense is attacking. So, we've paid a huge price and asked those bloodsuckers in Pan Yu

world to customize our attacking modules. The offensive power of these three cities of great calamity is over three times higher than the ones owned by the twelve families in power! But of course, they will also consume a terrifyingly high amount of crystals."

"Crystals!" Yemo Tian chuckled. Proudly looking around, he said carelessly, "We can have plenty of those as long as we have enough slaves working for us. We can have as many as we want, so why would we be stingy? Crystals are not even worth mentioning.

Sighing with a 'halfway satisfaction', Yemo Tian continued, "So, our weapons, armors, warriors...Well, alright! Let's talk about these small things later. Now, brothers, I am introducing you the 'city of domination'!"

The space was abundant here. So, Yemo Tian rubbed an exquisitely made, thick bangle worn on his wrist, then wielded his arm. Golden streams of light flew out of the bangle, within which, a three-hundred-miles-wide golden sphere emerged gradually.

Brightly glowing entirely, the dark-golden shell of the sphere was translucent; it seemed to be made from gemstone.

Judging merely by the shell texture, this 'city of domination' was at a much higher grade than the three cities of great calamity. If one compared this 'city of domination' to a precious gemstone, the three cities of great calamity would be like three cheap stones.

"Dishi Cha brought this treasure from Pan Yu world, from my father!" Yemo Tian shouted with excitement, "This is my ship, a gift from my father! A city of domination! It can destroy the twelve cities of great calamity alone, all by itself! With it, we can be fearless!"

Piji Wuyue again bowed deeply to Yemo Tian. But, deep inside each pupil of his three eyes, a lotus was spinning slowly.

Chapter 1418: The Domination Legion

Deep alarms ran off in all mine tunnels in the Dark Mountain Mine while dazzling red light sparkled. Countless human slaves, who were mining with bent bodies, dropped their tools and looked where the alarms came from with complicated expressions.

Large groups of non-humankind slave driving large vehicles shuttled swiftly in each tunnel. Carried on the vehicles were well-made armors, sharp weapons, large quantities of bows and arrows, and even a great number of wands designed for human Maguspreists. The wands were mostly made from beast bones, releasing strong energy waves. Many of those wands could sense the scent of blood, and had been shaking agitatedly.

Among human slaves, the ones who learned to be Maguspriests, or the ones who used to be Maguspriests, had their clans destroyed by slave-hunting troops, ending up being enslaved by the non-humankind. They stepped out of the crowd and began casting spells. Some of them were coiled in dark fire, some generated bone-piercing cold wind, while some had weird noises coming from their bodies.

Those wands suddenly began vibrating and flying to these Maguspreists. Each wand chose a Maguspriest who had the same power nature as it.

The Maguspriests gripped the wand and sent their strong powers into them. The power surged out of their bodies like the flood, transforming into thunderbolts, poisonous gases, and frigid winds, which circled around them. Meanwhile, a great many helmets made from the bones of fierce wild beasts and enchanted with powerful magic, along with all kinds of magic talismans, flew to these Maguspriests as well. Soon, they were armed to the teeth.

Heavy armors were handed out. Slaves put on armors and boots, wore helmets, picked up long spears and swords, and held strong

bows. Before long, these bare-handed slaves with rugged clothes became fully armored elite warriors.

A large group of Xiu Clan pharmacists had been quickly moving across the crowds, handing doses of medicines to the obviously stronger ones among these slaves. These strong slaves took the medicine, and soon, it dispelled the magic seals cast inside their bodies by non-humankind beings to restrain their powers. Strong powers could immediately be sensed from these slaves. Instantly, one could hear spirit blood flushing in their bodies and sounding like great rivers.

Magus Kings, and even Divine Magi, raised their weapons and roared in delight.

The interweaving mine tunnels were even more complicated than a maze. From dark areas, powerful human beings who had been hiding in darkness for years, silently walked out. They were born in the mine tunnels. Their eldership never gave up on trying escape from this mine. Since they were young, they had been training in the cruelest way as warriors, and were provided with abundant food. Quite a number of them were strong.

Silently, these underground human beings, who were born in the mine and had lived in the mine all their lives, had just one and one only dream, that was escaping from this dark hell with their people. Silently, they gathered together, put on armors, picked up weapons, and quickly stood side by side with their clansmen.

"Master Shifu, please bless us. This time, we must leave this hell...This time, we will make those non-humankind monsters pay the blood debt!" said a white-haired old Maguspriest, whose body seemed to collapse at any moment. He gripped a wand tightly and released a strong pressure from his body, which could make people shiver in fear.

"Bless us, Master Shifu. Allow us to return to our ancestors' land, allow our souls to be worshipped by our people in the ancestral

temple. Even if we have to die, we will die in places where our ancestors lived." murmured another old Maguspriest, "My great-great-grandpa told me that we are noble You Xiong people, we are descendants of Emperor Xuanyuan...We... will eventually go back to that warm land."

"Master Shifu, bless us. Our ancestors came from Western Wasteland, the Taotie Clan. Generation after generation, we wanted to go back home. We might die, but before that, we want to see our homelands." said another Maguspriest, "Dear two Master Shifu, please bless us and fulfill our wishes. allow our children, and the children of our children, to live a free life in our hometown."

In every mine tunnel, people prayed to their 'Master Shifu', begging for their blessings. Among the crowds, some non-humankind slaves devoutly held the portraits of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. From time to time, human beings kneeled to these portraits. Faint, twisting light streams flew out from the heads of these extremely reverent human slaves, merged into a torrent of faith power, and disappeared to the sky.

In the mine, human slaves piously prayed and kowtowed in every corner. Standing in crowds of people, hundreds of priests wearing long robes, with long hair hanging loosely on their backs, had been shaking slightly. Because of the excitement, their faces were blushed.

The tremendous faith power was absorbed by Priest Mu and Priest Hua through the space. A slight little bit of the faith power flew back through an immeasurably long distance and merged into these priests' bodies. But, this slight amount of faith power had already brought them great benefits.

Suddenly, they realized that their primordial spirits had grown stronger, their hearts of Dao were much more settled, and their minds were clearer than before. The problems that puzzled them for long were immediately solved, and they gained a deeper

understanding of this mysterious nature so abruptly.

They trembled slightly, as pure power streams surged inside their bodies. One of them burst into bright laughter, "Master Shifu is blessing us!"

A golden airstream rose from this priest's head and became a, hundreds of meters wide golden cloud. A golden lotus bloomed upon the cloud and released strong energy waves, making the surrounding human slaves shake.

"Restrain it! Restrain it!" shouted an older priest hurriedly, "We can't show any abnormal power yet! Now, restrain it!"

Forcibly restraining the wild joy in their hearts, these priests took back their powers and tried their best to stop themselves from making a breakthrough. They too picked some armors for themselves from the vehicles and mingled in the crowds of slaves, rushing forward along the broad tunnels.

Under the city of domination, Yemo Tian and the other leaders of Glorious Domination calmly looked at the warriors swarming in from the entrances in all directions. Large groups of Jia Clan warriors, dark-kind warriors, and armored human warriors lined up orderly beside Yemo Tian and the others.

"Boss, these years, we've spent incalculable money here." A Yu Clan young man put his mouth near Yemo Tian's ear and murmured, "These slaves in the Dark Mountain Mine have been living a life even better than the citizens of Liang Zhu City. They have the booze, the meat, and the high-grade drugs to improve their strengths. We have truly invested in them."

"We promised them that as long as they follow our orders, they can all be free in the future!" said the Yu Clan young man, "Now, these people are all my loyal fighters!"

Yemo Tian looked around at the energetic human warriors satisfyingly, then wielded his arm and shouted, "Lowly barbarians,

I permit you to follow my glory...From this day on, you are my, great Yemo Tian's, private army."

"The name I gave you — The Domination Legion!"

Chapter 1419: No War in Liang Zhu City

It was a rainy day. On the broad plain area in the south of Liang Zhu City, the grasses had already reached the height of human waists. The boundless, shiny green grassland was decorated with different sized mushrooms and wildflowers, blooming thrivingly. Within the light of sight, differently colored flowers were everywhere. Marmots and other small creatures had been popping out from the grass. Habits took family as a unit and leaped out of their nests. These scrawny creatures crazily wolfed the grass to replenish the energy they had burned in the past few years.

In the meanwhile, skinny wolves wandered through the grass, as silent as ghosts. Occasionally, shrill screams could be heard as poor small creatures were caught by them. A faint blood scent spread in the air. Occasionally, the wolves would give echoing howls of satisfaction.

A group of metal plates had been slowly hovering in the air, about a hundred meters high from the ground. That was a troop of dark-kind slave warriors and a few Xiu Clan scholars, on a daily patrol. The dark-kind warriors vigilantly looked around, while the Xiu Clan scholars were writing down their new discoveries on papers.

"The life-force of this world is way too strong. It's only been a few days since the flood has receded, but the world has already come back to life, almost entirely."

"Strong life-force means inexhaustible resources. Among all worlds we have conquered, this is the richest one. I even suspect that this world is even richer than our homew..."

"Shut up! You do not say such outrageous words! Supreme Saint Pan Yu, the creator of the world, the dominator of the world... The three suns and nine moons are your eyes, and showering under your never-ending glow, we will conquer everything!"

The few Xiu Can scholars whispered to each other. Abruptly, a dark-kind warrior burst with a shout, "Look, a troop is approaching from the south! Eh? Which family is this slave-hunting troop from? So lucky! Didn't they run into our main force in Chi Ban Mountain? They haven't been brought into the main force!"

Another dark-kind warrior threw a sideways glance at him and said, "Stupid! Since they're slave hunters, how would they come through the main path in Chi Ban Mountain? They must have used the secret passage hiding in Chi Ban Market...Hah, as long as they avoid meeting the main force, those outer circle patrol troops are easy to deal with, with nothing but..."

This dark-kind slave warrior craftily rubbed his thumb, forefinger, and middle fingers together, as if he were counting jade coins.

The metal plates slowly descended and stopped in midair, lesser than six-feet from the ground. Under the metal plates, dim lightning bolts sparkled and covered the grasses down below with an extremely faint layer of lightning bolts. Along with sizzling noises, fire sparkles burst from the grasses.

In the thick growth of grass, over ten three-meters wide circles emerged. Within the circles, all grasses were pressed down to the ground in one direction. The slave-hunting troop approached, while tens of flags fluttered in the sky.

"Glowing Gold Chamber of Commerce, Sparkling Gold Chamber of Commerce, Shining Gold Chamber of Commerce...Ah, it's an allied slave-hunting army! Today is our lucky day."

A group of Yu Clan nobles mounted on tall and muscular four-horned white deers held their heads high and rushed over. Seeing this patrol troop from Liang Zhu City, they glanced at each other. With large steps, a Jia Clan warrior walked over.

"Hmm, you saw nothing today, right?" The Jia Clan warrior

puffed up his chest and glared at the dark-kind warriors on the metal plates. In Yu Dynasty, Jia Clan people were noble warriors. Their social status was much higher than dark-kind slave warriors.

The group of slave warriors hurriedly bowed to him and said, "Sir, we saw nothing."

The few Xiu Clan scholars stood on the metal plates and curiously looked at the large crowd of human slaves behind the slave-hunting troop.

A Xiu clan scholar laughed abruptly and said, "You have such a bad luck. Right now, almost all nobles have gone south, preparing for the war against the human beings. Liang Zhu City is empty now. You brought back so many slaves, but you're not gonna make any money from them."

Another Xiu Clan scholar sighed, "You can only keep them in your slave camps, but the cost of meals is going to be huge."

Another Xiu Clan scholar suddenly exclaimed out, pointing at a fat guy in the crowd, "Look, that one is like a lying olive nut...Oh my, such a fat slave? What do you expect him to do?"

In the crowd, Yu Mu rolled up his eyes. He was much taller and way huger than ordinary human beings. Patting his belly, he bared his teeth and roared like a beast towards the few Xiu Clan scholars.

Feng Xing stood by Yu Mu's side. He was tall and slim, slightly shorter than Yu Mu, looking like a toothpick stuck beside a burger. The few noisy Xiu Clans scholars didn't even notice him. As Feng Xing poked Yu Mu's soft fat on the waist, the latter snorted, pointed at the few scholars, and said proudly, "I am the best cook in my clan...My special dish is roast Xiu Clan kidneys!"

The few Xiu Clan scholars' expressions changed. Their faces twitching, they asked the Jia Clan warrior, "You brought a cook from a cannibal clan?"

The Jia Clan warrior seemed to be slightly embarrassed. The

dark-kind warriors had been extra polite to him, without daring to say anything unpleasant. But, these Xiu Clan shorts...Xiu Clan scholars and craftsmen had special social status in Yu Clan. Like the Yu Clan people, they were also high-grade nobles. Therefore, an ordinary Jia Clan warrior was always at a much lower position than these Xiu Clan shorts, who served in official institutions.

This Jia Clan warrior took out a leather bag from his sleeve sulkily and said with a deep voice, "You saw nothing today, right? Hehe, I saw this fall from your sleeve...I saw it clearly, it fell from your sleeve!"

A Xiu Clan scholar took over the bag and opened it.

The human-head-sized bag was halfway filled with raw gemstones. Thumb-sized emeralds, pigeon-egg sized rubies, hazelnut-sized sapphires, it even included two egg-sized, perfect diamonds!

"Ah, not bad!" The Xiu Clan scholars took out a handful of raw gemstones from the bag and gave to a dark-kind slave warrior behind him. All dark-kind slave warriors laughed happily, with their mouths widely opened. Surely, this handful of raw gemstone belonged to them now.

"It was truly not bad. We broke a mid-scale clan, which had three rivers in their territory. Each river was a gem mine." said the Jia Clan warrior with a muffled voice, "But, it's shame though that the time was too limited. We had to rush out before we got too many gems."

Pausing shortly, he continued asking, "How's Liang Zhu city been recently?"

The Xiu Clan scholar put the leather bag into his sleeve and said grinningly, "No war is happening in Liang Zhu City. It's all peaceful and safe, tranquil and quiet...I suggest you use the ninth gate in the southwest, near the Great Library. Not too many patrols were arranged in that area."

The Jia Clan warrior nodded seriously and returned to his troop with large steps.

Chapter 1420: Enemy At Liang Zhu City

Enemy At Liang Zhu City

The slave-hunting troop approached the ninth southwest gate.

From a long distance away, Feng Xing, who had the best eyesight, saw the tastefully built quaint black building, standing on a granite hill behind the magnificent ninth gate.

According to Feng Xing's estimation, the width of this black building was unknown, but it was over twenty miles long, and over three-hundred-meters tall. If this were the Great Library in Yu Dynasty, how many books could it contain? How much knowledge had been kept in it?

As an apprentice of the Magi Palace, Feng Xing clearly understood how valuable knowledge was. He stared at this black building, almost drooling.

Yu Mu had already grabbed a Yu Clan young man beside him, lowered his voice, and asked, "Is this your Great Library? So huge on the outside? What about the inside? Is there any space seal cast in it? How large is it on the inside?"

The Yu Clan young man showed scorn in his eyes. Looking at Yu Mu like a man from a large city looking at a country folk, he sneered with an obvious feeling of superiority and said, "How can there not be a space seal? The inner space of this library is twenty times larger than its actual volume. Many precious records and scriptures and texts are collected in there, such as..."

The Yu Clan young man suddenly stopped talking, while his face was slightly blushed.

"Such as what?" Yu Mu blinked his small beady eyes and stared at him as he asked.

The Yu Clan young man snorted and remained silent. Standing aside, Feng Xing sighed and said, "Such as you never went in there,

did you?"

The Yu Clan young man laughed embarrassedly. Rubbing his nose, he murmured to continue, "We are nobles, so we have our own tutors. My family has our own library...The Great Library, hehe, except for those old dudes, who can no longer hang out with girls, and those Xiu Clan nerds, who would want to go there?"

Spreading his hands, this Yu Clan young man continued straightforwardly, "You'll know when you notice the Great Library's location, it's not in the central area of Liang Zhu City. That's because it's not so useful, but needs to occupy such a large piece of land! In the central area of Liang Zhu City, every inch of land means incalculable wealth. Such a large piece of land, how many shopping centers and clubs can we build on it?"

"Knowledge is wealth, is strength... That's what Uncle Wen Ming said!" Feng Xing and Yu Mu murmured together.

"Wrong! Knowledge is knowledge, wealth is wealth, strength is strength!" The Yu Clan young man curved down his lip corners and said, "Stupid barbarians...Ah, I didn't mean you. I meant only the ones at the ground-breaking stage of your civilization, only those among you would crazily be seeking new knowledge. Our civilization is already highly developed. So, knowledge is just knowledge to us."

Raising his head, this Yu Clan young man smiled and said, "If I have the spare time to read, I will use the time to know more ladies from high-grade noble families. If I enjoyed their favors, I could have their delicate, beautiful bodies. If I can marry them, my whole family would be benefited."

He sighed and continued to Yu Mu and Feng Xing, sounding like a person of rich experiences, "Do you know why I chose to join a slave-hunting troop, to travel laboriously in the wilderness and take the risk to attack your human clans?"

Yu Mu and Feng Xing looked at him.

"Because, those noble ladies like brave men with a spirit of adventure!" The Yu Clan young man sighed again and said, "As a slave hunter, I am qualified to join their private salon. If I attacked a human clan personally, I could sit right by their sides, hold their tender hands, and tell them about my adventures. If I can chop off a...Eh, no, I mean, if I am wounded by a human warrior..."

The Yu Clan young man pulled his collar and exposed an extremely faint scar on his chest, then said, "See? A brave man's scar is like a medal of honor, a pass to the rooms of rich young ladies, to their soft bodies! This scar can get me at least twenty noble, pretty young ladies!"

Yu Mu narrowed his eyes, looking at this weird scar.

"You did this to yourself, didn't you?" Yu Mu pointed out the strangeness of this scar straightforwardly, "Is this even a scar? It's just a skin trauma, isn't it? I think it didn't even bleed. In order to leave a scar, you soaked it with a corrosive liquid drug."

Feng Xing shook his head as he glanced at this Yu Clan young man, whose face had begun paling, and said, "You may fool those silly women with it, but if you encounter the smart ones, your reputation would be ruined!"

The color of the Yu Clan young man's face changed from blushing to pale. Remaining silent for a while, he flatteringly put is face near Feng Xing, and said, "Lord Feng Xing, you see, we're teammates this time. I am helping you sneak into Liang Zhu City, so we're teammates now. You..."

Feng Xing pondered briefly, then slapped heavily on the Yu Clan young man's shoulder and said, "Alright, I like your attitude. Leave it to me. When we settle down in the city, I will give you a hack myself. I promise you a bloody scary wound that will leave you no future problem."

"Trust me, if Yu Clan women are really as silly as you have described, a new, bleeding wound will at least get you a hundred

little girls!" Looking at this Yu Clan young man from head to toe, he said, "If you like, I can also shoot two arrows into the fleshy parts of your body, making it even more realistic. You fought on the front line and attacked a human clan, so how can you not be wounded by arrows?"

"And me!" Yu Mu said excitedly, I can give you a few scars with a magic fire, maybe burn a few unimportant muscles to make the wounds even worse...Quoting from Ji Hao, it'll give it a stronger visual impact. Those wounds will certainly shock those girls!"

As this ridiculous conversation happened between them, the surrounding, human warriors had already tightened their muscles, vigilantly looked around.

They had already reached the ninth southwest gate. They were already in Liang Zhu City!

Since forever, non-humankind beings were the ones who started every war, assaulting human beings. No human force could approach Liang Zhu City! Except for human slaves, not a single human army ever managed to approach this city.

And this time, in the disguise of slave hunters and slaves, this elite force with three-hundred-thousand warriors under Ji Hao's command came to Liang Zhu City in broad daylight, reaching a gate of this city.

"No one ever likes the Great Library. This place is for the old dudes and nerds." murmured the Yu Clan young man, "To young people like us, this is a forbidden area. It's said that once you get close to this area, you will lose every gamble in the next three months!"

Perhaps, for the above reason, the ninth southwest gate was not heavily guarded. Bribing the guards with a tall price, the slave-hunting troop guided the large crowd of 'slaves' into Liang Zhu City.

Chapter 1421: Dangerous People Coming in

Liang Zhu City was the capital city of Yu Dynasty, the center of all Yu Clan nobles' daily lives.

In this city, one could see the fanciest club, the most magnificent theater, the most popular arena, and of course, the largest slave auction house. Right on the west of Liang Zhu City, heavily guarded castles towered up by a large lake. Each castle was a tremendous slave camp.

The floor spaces of these castles were not large. The widest castle was only about two miles squared in area. However, every insider clearly knew that the underground spaces of these castles were enormous. Numerous slaves were imprisoned in countless cells. According to the degree of obedience of each slave, he or she would suffer a long or short torment. All kinds of cruel torment would gradually wear out their temper. Once these slaves learned to kneel and obey, they would be sent to auction houses.

As for the iron-like tough ones, the ones who wouldn't give up their dignity for survival even under the cruelest torture, they would be sent to the arenas in Liang Zhu City. They would fight each other to entertain Yu Clan nobles.

All in all, once one stepped into these dark castles, which had been emitting a strong scent of blood, one would either come out on one's knees like a qualified slave or puff out one's chest and walk into an arena as a gladiator, then become a cold corpse after a series of cruel battles.

Looking at the nearest castle, Yu Mu and Feng Xing gave out their orders in low voices.

Mingling in the crowd, Wuzhi Qi, who shapeshifted into a middle-aged man wearing a black shirt, narrowed his eyes and observed the dark castle in the front. His eyes sparkled with a fierce light as he said, "Strong grievance! Hehe, how many people

have died in here? Sadly, I'm not one of those nasty spirit creatures, and the grievance of dead people is useless to me. Otherwise, I might cultivate myself in this place for three to five years, hehe!"

Wuzhi Qi looked around excitedly. This was Liang Zhu City, the central area. Gazing afar, he saw a soaring eave of a large theater behind a garden. Slightly shaking his ears, he even heard the applause and music from the theater.

"Interesting, really interesting! These non-humankind beings have been living a juicy life. Hehe, hehe, fight, smash, plunder, burn, turn this place into ruins... I like this job. Hmm, Marquis Yao Ji Hao is a faithful man. He said that as long as I finish this job, he will forgive my past misdeeds!"

Licking his lips in excitement, Wuzhi Qi continued murmuring to himself, "Good, good, good! I like this job! As long as I knock down these non-humankind beings in Liang Zhu City, I, Wuzhi Qi, will be free again. The world will become my playground!"

In the front, a resonant horn could be heard from a castle. A strong gust of wind blew over and fluttered a silk gold-rimmed, red colored flag tied on the pole — The pattern on the flag was a pile of golden bricks!

This castle belonged to the Glowing Gold Chamber of Commerce, an affiliated chamber of commerce that belonged to the Piji Family from Red Sun. Among countless non-humankind chambers of commerce, this was one of the strongest. As a family in power which stood high above the masses, the Piji Family surely wouldn't bother to manage the chamber of commerce themselves. Therefore, it had been under the joint administration of three appendant families of the Piji Family.

A four-horned white deer rushed up. Mounted on the dear, a Yu Clan man raised his head and shouted, "Oi, open the gate, damn it! We had a great harvest this time! Hah, look, so many top-quality

pieces. Open the gate now and throw these scums into the dungeon. My lips haven't touched even a drop of wine for days."

Feng Xing and Yu Mu narrowed their eyes together. In the crowd of 'slaves', quite a few scrawny Maguspreists pinched magic talismans in their sleeves, prepared to cast magic curses at any moment. The man shouting to the gate was a member of the Chi Family, and the Chi Family was one of the three families which had been running this place. The other two families were the Pi and the Ji Family. This Yu Clan man's name was Chi Li, and he was the leader of this slave-hunting troop which belonged to the Glowing Gold Chamber of Commerce. He was also a captive of Ji Hao. Ji Hao captured him outside Yao Mountain City.

At the moment, at least one-hundred and twenty evil types of magic curses had been cast at Chi Li, remaining appendant inside his body. If he dared to do anything undesirable, he would immediately become a strand of ash. His body, his soul would both disappear without a trace.

Chi Li had no desire to lay down his life for a just cause. His life was controlled by magic curses, and Ji Hao had promised him incalculable wealth. Therefore, he had been behaving well all the way. He treated himself as a true slave of Ji Hao. Right now, he only wished that he wouldn't do anything stupid at the last gasp.

The heavy gate slowly rose. About ten Jia Clan warriors and a hundred dark-kind slave warriors walked out with quick steps.

"Commander Chi Li, so many slaves?" The Jia Clan warriors were shocked. The slave-hunting troop of the Glowing Gold Chamber of Commerce was strong, but Chi Li only brought about ten-thousand slave hunters. Based on the records, this number of slave hunters could capture fifty-thousand slaves at most, without a large number of high-grade warriors. Otherwise, slave hunters wouldn't be able to control all salves.

But the giant crowd behind Chi Li and his slave hunters had at

least one hundred thousand human slaves Judging by the sense of power coming from their bodies, these human slaves were all strong; some of them were even Magus Kings. Chi Li's slave-hunting troop couldn't possibly achieve this.

"We've done something serious this time." Chi Yi proudly raised his chin and said, "We joined hands with over a thousand slave-hunting troops and launched a surprise attack at the territory of a human marquis. We broke his city, and these people were his private guards...We have a few troops behind us, sending over their families."

Waving his hand, Chi Li continued loudly, "Send your people to invite the family leader and elders down here, and send these human scums to the dungeon. Damn it! If their families aren't under our control, they won't be as quiet as they are now."

Breathing deeply, Chi Li seriously looked at those Jia Clan warriors and said, "Go invite the leader and elders. I think leaders and elders from the families of the other chambers of commerce will arrive soon. How should we share the spoil, that's going to be a big problem."

The few Jia Clan warriors nodded delightfully. They shouted loudly, and following their voices, a group of non-humankind slaves walked out of the castle, yelling and wielding long spears as they drove Feng Xing, Yu Mu, and the other human beings slowly into the castle.

The crowd of human warriors walked into the castle. In the middle of the castle, the entrance of a broad underground passage opened. By the entrance were a few square tables. A few Xiu Clan old man sat behind the tables with account books, pens, and inks placed on the table. They looked at the 'slaves' walking in smilingly.

"All good pieces! Look at their muscular bodies... Haha, truly good pieces!" A Xiu Clan old man laughed aloud.

"Eh? It's not right! Why don't they have slave marks on their bodies? No slave marks, no chains either?" Another Xiu Clan old man found something wrong. He immediately stood up and yelled, "Chi Li, you've become more and more careless!"

Chapter 1422: Poisoned Tea

The Xiu Clan old man stood up quickly, but fell even faster.

Feng Xing didn't pull out his longbow. Instead, he pointed at that Xiu Clan old man and released a sharp stream of arrow power, causing a shrill swishing noise. The arrow power stream struck into the widely opened mouth of the Xiu Clan man, penetrated his neck, and sent his short and scrawny body a long distance away.

The other Xiu Clan old men attempted to scream, but a faint shadow flashed across the air. Carrying a large club, Yuan Li gave each of them a heavy strike. Yuan Li hit them too hard, that quite a few of them were smashed into meat pies, stuck on the ground.

The expressions of the rest of the small number of guards left in the castle changed immediately. Before they pulled the alarm, tens of elite Eastern Wasteland archers in the crowd pulled open their bows and released their arrows, nailing the guards on the wall.

"Go down, wipe out all guards. Kill them all whether they fight back or not." Wuzhi Qi walked out of the crowd and murmured in a low voice, "We don't have time for captives now. Let's make it quick, and clean this place up as soon as we can."

Dense watery mist spread from his body, which gushed into the underground passage, leading to the dungeon. Yu Mu incanted a spell. Following his voice, the Disease God Streamer emerged behind him and released a poisonous mist which merged with Wuzhi Qi's watery mist and quickly flew down to the dungeon.

"Chi Li, that little b*stard!"

Sitting in a carriage, a Yu Clan old man was complaining. The carriage was speeding to the castle of the Glowing Gold Chamber of Commerce with a troop of guards. This Yu Clan old man narrowed his eyes and murmured, "Why did he tell everyone about this? B*stard. A Marquis's territory? Which one? You can't get too many

profits from those young marquises and earls, not even if you peel them. But if it's one of those, whose families had hundred of centuries of history..."

The Yu Clan old man trembled in excitement as he continued mumbling to himself, "Ah, let's have a look now. See if we can, secretly, hide something, yeah? They transported those slaves and treasures all the way to Liang Zhu City from the human territory, so some losses during transportation are completely reasonable."

Suddenly, this Yu Clan old man seemed to have thought of something. He burst into hysterical screams, kicked the carriage heavily, and yelled, "Damn you, b*stard! Go faster! Ah, the few bloody clerks! Two of them are from the Pi Family and Ji Family!"

The dark-kind warrior who had been driving the carriage hurriedly wielded his whip. Lashed by the whip, the four fire-horn bulls were infuriated. They roared and breathed out scorching hot air, then began running as fast as they could. The tiny carriage was quaking while darting towards the castle, raising clouds of dust. The poor guards following behind the carriage inhaled all the dust in the air.

"Hurry up, hurry up! I have to arrive not only earlier than people from the Pi Family and Ji Family, but also quicker than those old bastards from our family too! Hmm, fortunately, Chi Li is my nephew...Secretly hiding something will be okay, and no one will disagree, right? This is for the family anyway!"

More and more carriages rushed towards the castle of the Glowing Gold Chamber of Commerce. Large groups of human warriors had still been walking into the dungeon. From the carriage, elders from the Chi Family, the Pi Family, and the Ji Family walked out, greedily looking at these strong human warriors. Some of them even drooled from their mouth corners.

Tall, strong warriors, with thriving spirit blood. All elites!

In Liang Zhu City, these warriors could get great prices, but their

value was much higher than this. High-grade warriors like these should be sent back to Pan Yu world through portals, because their prices could be sky-high in there!

Back in the Pan Yu world, all large families had been trying to conquer newly discovered worlds. Every family had an especially strong thirst for powerful warriors. These high-grade elite human warriors would become best-selling goods in that world!

"Damn it! Why was it a joint action? Why can't our Glowing Gold Chamber of Commerce have all the spoils?" A group of elders from the three families had already arrived in the manager office in the castle. They angrily queried Chi Li before even taking a glance around.

"My dear elders, calm down, calm down! I sure want to have all the spoils too!" Chi Li helplessly spread his hands and said, "But, please understand, that human marquis was very strong. He had billions of people, and with a single word, he could immediately raise an army of tens of millions of warriors! Compared to Yu Clan people, many more human beings would like to fight."

He shrugged and continued mildly, "Therefore, over a thousand slave-hunting troops joined hands. With the help of a human enemy of our poor marquis, we finally destroyed his army and swept across his territory."

Clickings his tongue loudly, he laughed, "You will soon find out that it's a great deal. It's a great deal. He only lost a half of his army, and the residents in his territory are barely harmed. We have only brought the best warriors and commanders in his army, and a large batch of ordinary warriors and residents are still coming behind us."

Narrowing his eyes, Chi Li sighed and said, "Too many of our military forces are gathered in the Chi Ban Mountain area. It was not that easy for us to bring back all the slaves we captured."

The group of elders had their faces blushed because of the

excitement. They destroyed such a powerful marquis? Damn it! Billions of people, tens of millions of warriors? How much were these people worth? These elders felt that they had been watching a new mine open up, from which mountain-huge piles of precious metal ores and crystals were to be carried out.

Yu Clan people had an endless need for resources. To them, any slave meant wealth!

"Damn it! Over a thousand slave-hunting troops? Then, how less can we share?" A Pi Family elder murmured, "If all the other slave-hunting troops and all their family members die, things would be so perfect!"

"Hmm, like our families, their family leaders took out all their warriors to join the war. Less than a thousand warriors are left guarding each family." A Ji Family elder mentioned an aphorism of the Yu Clan people, "Any crime without a witness never happened."

"The fewer shareholders we have, the higher can our shares be, right?" A Chi Family elder narrowed his eyes and looked at his friends, then said, "We are representing the Piji Family, so we can't let those small families take advantage of us."

Chi Li smiled mildly. A few beautiful human girls served hot tea as Chi Li persuaded the group of elders attentively, "Elders, try the tea, just try the tea. This is the best tea I found from the marquis's territory."

Those elders picked up teacups with dazzling eyes and poured the tea into their mouths.

A few minutes later, all these elders fell to the ground, foaming at the mouth.

A Pi Family elder barely raised his hand and tried to activate a spell symbol ring worn on his finger. But Yu Mu smilingly walked in and stomped on his hand, then said, "Hmm, you better don't

move. Now, the poison you have taken is only softening your bodies, making you powerless. If you show any undesired attempts, we will give you the strongest poison."

These elders moaned in despair, helplessly falling to the ground.

Chapter 1423: Occupying the Nest

Elders from the non-humankind families, which would raise slave-hunting troops to hunt human slaves, were definitely not free from corruption.

The attraction of a human marquis' territory to these Yu Clan people surprised Yu Mu and Feng Xing. More and more noble elders rushed to the castle of the Glowing Gold Chamber of Commerce, drank the poisoned tea, then fell to the ground one after another, foaming at the mouths without any vigilance or preparation.

'Liang Zhu City is peaceful and safe'... This fact turned these elders into tender flowers in a greenhouse, almost ending up being killed by Yu Mu, Feng Xing, and their people, who were like a cruel hurricane.

Very 'amicably', Wuzhi Qi and a group of his children communicated with these elders five times in the dungeon. All kinds of clubs whipped on the bodies of these weak, thin noble Yu Clan people, causing muffled swishing noises. Soon, these elders became the most loyal 'guides'.

Hundreds of types of magic curses were cast at these elders, and the eggs of tens of kinds of fierce Gu bugs were buried inside their bodies. Then, a trace of each of their souls was forcibly drawn into the Disease God Streamer. After all this, one needed not worry that they might betray them.

As appendant families of the Piji Family, Pi Family, Ji Family, and Chi Family owned broad territories, right around the huge mansion that belonged to the Piji Family, surrounding the territory of the Piji Family.

A large group of carriages lined up straight, heading towards the Chi Family's garden. Running rumblingly on both sides of the carriages were troops of heavily armed human warriors, whose

faces were covered in masks. They guarded, or escorted the carriages to proceed ahead.

Inevitably, on the way back to the Chi Family garden from the castle, the troop would pass the mansion that belonged to the Piji Family. Before a giant arch, a group of energetic Jia Clan warriors guarded in a straight line, vigilantly scanning across every living creature on the road.

A luxuriously dressed Yu Clan young man held his hands behind his body and lazily stood under the arch. Seeing the troop, his eyes shone as he slowly waved his hands.

A few Jia Clan warriors immediately rushed up, spread their arms, and forced the troop to stop.

Chi Li hurriedly came out from a carriage and walked to the Yu Clan man with a humble smile. From about a hundred meters away from him, Chi Li laughed exaggeratedly and said, "Dear Childe Piji Xing, it's been a while! The hurricane gold falcon I let my people send to you the last time, did you like it? That was a top-grade one!"

"Just so-so, tasted rather delicious, but too skinny!" Piji Xing lazily greeted Chi Li and said, "I heard you went out with your slave-hunting troop, right? How was it? So many of you rushing back, the harvest must be good, right?"

Chi Li's face twitched intensely. He spent great efforts to get the hurricane gold falcon for Piji Xing, the most famous playboy in the Piji Family, because he wanted to leave a good impression. But, Piji Xing actually ate the falcon, which could serve as a top-grade battle beast! A hurricane gold falcon, a top-grade fierce bird, it could even become a peak-Divine-Magus-level, an enormous spirit creature, when it matured! Piji Xing was indeed the most well-known playboy in his family. How could he eat such a precious animal?

"Only a noble being like you can enjoy a dish like that!" Chi Li bowed to Piji Xing and said, "Thanks to you, the harvest this time

is indeed not bad. The family will earn a huge profit!"

Piji Xing's eyes shone immediately. He chuckled and said, "A huge profit? Perfect! Let me advance my share! Damn it! The old dudes in the family all left with all warriors for the war. The treasury is sealed. Now, I can only have a poor little allowance each month. How can that be enough?"

Piji Xing made a few steps to Chi Li, directly reached out his hand, and said, "See, I'm lucky, that I ran into you. Let me advance my share. Let me see, it should at least be a million...No, ten million jade coins, right? Ah, give me my father's share too. Without a billion jade coins, he would be unhappy!"

Chi Li gave an embarrassed grin.

Piji Xing was the worst, but the most powerful playboy in the Piji Family. He was the younger brother of Piji Nu, the Red Sun Emperor, and was favored by many elders. In Liang Zhu City, one would rather offend Piji Nu than Piji Xing, because, if one offended Piji Nu, he would punish strictly according to the laws of Yu Dynasty. But, if it were Piji Xing who one offended, he would destroy one's entire family and kill them through all illegal methods. Piji Xing was evil, and he had done many dirty things.

Grinning honestly, Yu Mu carried ten large bags and sauntered to Chi Li.

Before Yu Mu said a word, Piji Xing impatiently grabbed over all ten bags and opened one to look in it. He saw a hill-huge pile of raw gems, large pieces of jade, and tons of crystals, all of which made his eyes sparkle. Even his breath paused for a second.

Raising his head, Piji Xing smiled brilliantly and said, "Chi Li, as I thought, you are the most loyal minister of the Piij Family. I think you can carry an even more important responsibility. Just wait till my father and old brother return. You will be rewarded. You deserve rewards."

Rolling up his eyes, he threw a sideways glimpse at Yu Mu, then twisted his nose and sneered scornfully, "It's just, your taste is so weird. Is this your new slave? So fat...How much food does he eat in a day? Why don't you get yourself a few young and pretty girls? Well...Alright, you are indeed lowlier than us. I can understand your weird taste."

Carrying the ten bags, Piji Xing left, without glancing back.

Chi Li grinned again embarrassedly. Helplessly shaking his head, he said, "So, Childe Piji Xing, if you have the time, I'll find a day to bring you some interesting gifts."

Piji Xing waved and laughed, "Gifts? I like the idea! Tomorrow then, bring the gifts to me tomorrow."

The few Jia Clan warriors who stopped the troop returned to the arch and smirked. The troop moved along, past the tremendous mansion and garden of the Piji Family, through a small land of woods that separated the two territories, finally arriving in front of the gate of the Chi Family mansion.

A few Chi Family elders walked out and ordered the guards to open the gate. Then, Chi Li and the other core family members led the way themselves, guiding the human warriors into the mansion. Most of the warriors had been taken away, and now was the weakest period of the Chi Family. Without spending much of efforts, all guards left in the family were captured, all vital areas were occupied, and all defensive formations and seals were taken over by human Maguspriests.

Within a quarter of an hour, the Chi Family mansion, which was as large as a small city, and broad enough to accommodate one hundred thousand people, fell into the hands of Feng Xing and Yu Mu.

A super-long-distance teleporting formation was quickly built in the mansion.

Chapter 1424: Meeting by Chance

The Chi Family was the first to be occupied, followed by the Pi Family and the Ji Family right afterward.

Elite human warriors walked out form the teleporting formation. Covered by the defensive formations of the Chi Family, no one noticed anything strange in this area. Guided by the non-humankind moles under Ji Hao's control, human warriors easily controlled hundreds of non-humankind families, bringing all core members of these families under control.

Currently, the humankind already had enough strongholds in Liang Zhu City. As long as these human warriors figured out a way to control the great defensive formation of this city, the entire Liang Zhu City would fall under the control of the humankind. With so many Yu Clan nobles in the city as hostages, the twelve emperors would have to yield to the humankind, no matter what they wanted.

Nevertheless, the great defensive formation was controlled by the twelve families in power, and not even citizens of Liang Zhu City could approach the core of the formation. Except for the powerful core members of the twelve families in power, no living creature could reach within ten miles of the core alive.

"Piji Xing has access to the highest conference hall. The core of the great defensive formation is right beneath the hall, guarded by three-thousand great masters from the Full Moon in turns, all year around." It was a wonderful thing to have moles against the enemy during a war. The information given by Chi Li made Yu Mu and Feng Xing's eyes shine. They were responsible for this mission.

"That useless thing that extorted us on the street has access to the highest conference hall?" Feng Xing seriously doubted this.

"And, he is a leader of all guards in Liang Zhu City. He also has access to the defense hub under the hall." Chi Li spread his hands

and gave a weird look, "After all, he is the younger brother of Red Sun Emperor, Piji Nu, and his father, who is also the father of Emperor Pii Nu, is one of the most powerful twelve elders in the highest council of elders."

With a strange smile, Chi Li continued with a low voice, "In fact, when Piji Xing was still a baby, he was already the highest commander of the three strongest main military forces of the Red Sun. The military power held in his hand is only slightly weaker than Emperor Piji Nu."

Feng Xing and Yu Mu widely opened their eyes and remained silent for a long while.

Chi Li's expression was indescribably complicated as he continued, "As a human being, even if you are born in a homeless clan, as long as you are strong enough, you can still become an official. Like Marquis Yao Ji Hao, we've studied all about him. He is a Southern Wasteland barbarian, so it was not very easy for him to become Marquis Yao. But, in Yu Dynasty, your family background decides many things for you."

"Like the glorious titles possessed by Lord Piji Xing, I can't possibly have any one of those, not even if I try all my life." Chi Li sighed and said, "My brightest future should be a commander of a regular troop, I guess. As for those main forces, I can make a middle-grade commander at most, because the highest commanders have to be members of the Piji Family."

Squatting aside, Feng Xing, Yu Mu, and Wuzhi Qi had been having a taste of a nicely scented tea. Hearing Chi Li, they curved down their lip corners together. They had no interest in knowing about non-humankind beings intriguing against each other. However, what Chi Li said about Piji Xing brought them lots of thoughts.

The whole night, guided by the moles under Ji Hao's control, human warriors occupied countless mansions that belonged to

non-humankind families one after another. They thus built up all kinds of defensive and teleporting formations, and other powerful defensive seals.

As the dawn was breaking, everything was ready. Chi Li led three large carriages and tens of Yu Clan warriors, along with about a hundred Jia Clan warriors, and headed into the mansion of the Piji Family. It was easy to tell that the Piji Family was indeed different, as one of the twelve families in power. Even though all main forces in Liang Zhu City had been deployed to threaten the alliance of human clans, the mansion of Piji Family was still heavily guarded. Jia Clan warriors armed to the teeth could be seen in every corner of the mansion. Small-scale divine towers hiding in bushes were activated twenty-four hours each day, releasing red beams of light and scanning across the bodies of every guard. In the sky, metal plates hovered slowly.

In some important areas around some magnificent palaces, defensive screens had been sparkling visibly. The defensive screens of these palaces were also activated all day long. The crystals consumed by all defensive mechanisms was a giant number, but the Piji Family couldn't care less about it. Clearly, the Piji Family was wealthy.

In a three-story building not far from the side entrance, Chi Li saw Piji Xing.

In the bedroom, Piji Xing leaned against a soft bench, wearing a night-robe. Two beautiful young girls were giving him a foot massage, while the other two girls were serving him breakfast. It was early in the morning, but Piji Xing's meal was awfully greasy, including large pieces of grilled meat, fried eggs, large amount of milk and juice. His table manners were a disaster, as oil, milk, and juices splashed all over the ground.

Chi Li carefully bowed by the door of the bedroom and said politely, "Childe Piji Xin?"

Piji Xing raised his head and mumbled, "Ah, Chi Li, you brought my gifts? Come in, stand inside. Let me finish my breakfast, then I'll talk to you...Be careful, you just came back from wild human places, so I don't know how many germs you have brought back. Be careful, don't touch the treasures in my room. Otherwise, I have to throw them all away, and you would have to pay me a lot of money!"

Chi li's face twitched a little bit. Hurriedly, he squeezed a smile out of his face and said, "Yes, yes, I will, I will be careful!"

Tightening his robe, Chi Li carefully walked into the room and avoided stepping on the luxurious clothes dropped randomly on the ground, long benches placed in disorder, and some small things with unknown functions.

Finally, he found a place to stand. He stood there carefully and watched Piji Xing continue wolfing. From aside, a laughter could abruptly be heard, "Are you Chi Li? The leader of the Chi Family? People say that you're the most talented young man in the Chi Family, are you? Shame though, even in the Chi Family, you're not carrying a great weight. Otherwise, why would you serve as a slave-hunting troop leader? That kind of a lowly job..."

Chi Li hurriedly turned around and saw Yemo Tian stand by a stuffed four-winged flying snake with a weird smile. Yemo Tian was well-dressed. Holding his hands behind his body, Yemo Tian had been looking at Chi Li from head to toe. Chi Li's pupils shrank immediately. He hurriedly bowed to Yemo Tian deeply, then said, "Lord Yemo Tian, I didn't think that I could meet you here! It's been years!"

"Yeah, it's been years! I remember that you often fawned on Piij Xing since long ago." Yemo Tian slowly walked to Chi Li, then smiled and said, "You're an ambitious man. So, what about I offer you a chance to release your ambition?"

Chi Li looked at Yemo Tian, not knowing what to do. Last night,

Feng Xing and Yu Mu created a 'screenplay' for him, and that did not include Yemo Tian.

This task today was to lure Piji Xing out of the mansion for fun. Out there, Feng Xing and Yu Mu would capture him alive, then force him to work for the humankind. But why would Yemo Tian show up so suddenly?

Chi Li had been flattering Piij Xing all year round, so he surely knew Yemo Tian. After all, Yemo Tian, Piji Xing, and the other few playboys used to hang around together every day years ago. Chi Li also knew that Yemo Tian was the leader of the small group of playboys!

"It's a great honor to work for you!" Without thinking for too long, Chi Li bowed deeply to Yemo Tian, then kneeled on one knee and touched Yemo Tian's shoe with his forehead.

Chapter 1425: Walking into the Trap

"Chi Li, you're a b*stard!" Piji Xing sent away the maids around him, then slowly straightened his body from the soft bench, and said, "Look at you now. You're one of our Piji Family. How can you be so soft?"

Yemo Tian grinned delightfully, then patted Chi Li's shoulder, turned around, and said to Piji Xing, "Alright, alright! Piji Xing, we're friends, friends. Chi Li did the right thing. He is willing to follow my lead. Following me, following you, what's the difference? This is a smart guy, which why I say that he's very capable!"

A door in a corner of the room opened abruptly. A Xiu Clan old man wearing a black robe silently walked out while smirking, then came to Chi Li like an old bat which had its eyes on a prey. Crack! The Xiu Clan old man put a golden chaplet on Chi Li's neck.

The three-inch-wide chaplet was exquisitely crafted and embossed with delicate floral patterns. It was of a suitable size, fitting right next to Chi Li's skin, but without affecting his breathing.

"Lord Yemo Tian!" Chi Li raised his head in shock and looked at Yemo Tian in fright.

"Ah, ah, just in case, just in case!" Yemo Tian dragged Chi Li to his side, patted his shoulders with both hands, and said, "Let me introduce myself to you. I am Yemo Tian, the great leader of the Glorious Domination, the owner of Pan Gu world and all surrounding worlds, the highest ruler of all species in these worlds!"

"It's your glory to become my follower, and also your opportunity. Now, right now, right at this moment, we are doing something world-shaking! You ran into an opportunity, which means you are clearly lucky!" Gripping Chi Li's face with both

hands, Yemo Tuan rubbed his face as if it were a dough.

"But, how can I trust you? Chi Li? How do I know that you won't betray me for your family? How do I know that you will try your best to accomplish your mission?" Patting the chaplet around Chi Li's neck, Yemo Tian smiled and said, "It's indeed a bit humiliating, but don't worry! With this, I can completely trust you!"

Chi Li didn't have a happy look. Clearly, this chaplet wasn't going to make him healthier.

"Follow my words, and you will be safe. Don't follow my words... Boom!" Yemo Tian gave a bright grin and continued, "Not only you, everything inside your body, boom... will all disappear! Don't worry, you will die immediately, and won't feel any pain. Your soul won't even have a chance to return to the Red Moon. You will die, both your body and soul. DO you understand?"

Chi Li's face twitched intensely. With a dry voice, he looked at Yemo Tian and stuttered, "Lord...Lord Yemo Tian, what, what do you want me to-to do?"

Glancing at Piji Xing, Yemo Tian said in a deep voice, "You know more about the Chi Family. Tell me, what can Chi Li do?"

"The Chi Family, Pi Family, Ji Family, the mansions of these three families are the cores of our Piji Family's perimeter defense. We can control their defensive formations and reserve our great defensive formation. Added with the defense hub of our Piji Family, we can isolate the Piji Family completely from the rest of the world." Piji Xing said with a serious look. His cheekily grinning, playboy-face was suddenly solemn. "Boss, we should control all Piji Family people first."

Yemo Tian seriously nodded and said, "Alright, let's do it right now. Chi Li will lead the way. I think it will go well, won't it?"

Piji Xing smilingly patted his own chest with a fist and said, "Don't worry, boss! You give directions, and we will do the rest. In

fact, we can still do this without Chi Li. But with him, we can make it slightly easier...And, he is indeed capable. In the future, he will be a good helper of us."

A quarter of an hour later, Piji Xing, who was gorgeously dressed, much similar to a male peacock, rushed out of the side gate of the Piji Family mansion with a large group of guards. He was laughing happily, while Chi Li smilingly guided the way aside. Chi Li led Piji Xing and his guards through a land of woods, straight to the front gate of the Chi Family.

A few Chi Family elders had been expecting them by the gate politely. Seeing Piji Xing walking over, they immediately showed a complicated expression. The eldest elder took a deep breath and seemed to say something. But suddenly, his heart missed a beat. He sensed an indescribably, soul-deep pain, that made cold sweat stream down his back. He hurriedly shut his mouth.

"Childe Piji Xing, it's a great honor to have you as a guest." Another elder bowed to Piji Xing, then curiously looked at the thousands of elite Jia Clan warriors behind him and asked, "You are..."

"I prepare to go hunting, I heard that the city is not safe these days, so I brought a few more guards." Piji Xing said, "But, I heard from Chi Li that your Chi Family made a fortune this time, eh? Yesterday, he gave me a little bit of profit that I deserved, but I suspect that you hide things which also belong to me in your treasury."

Spreading his hands, Piji Xing sighed, "I truly don't want to doubt your loyalty, but you should at least open your treasury, and let me see if you have hidden things or not, right?"

The few Chi Family elders' faces turned darker and darker. Did Piji Xing want to die?

Chi Li's expressions had constantly been changing as well. Somehow, he felt that Piji Xing, and the Glorious Domination had

the same intention as Feng Xing and Yu Mu. They all wanted to control the entire Liang Zhu City!

Was this a coincidence?

Piji Xing yelled loudly and attempted to lead his people to break into the Chi Family. But at that moment, heavy sounds of wheels could abruptly be heard from the street. People turned to the source of the sound and saw a large troop of warriors escorting hundreds of large carriages and approaching.

"Pi Feng! What're you doing here? You should be in Tusk Basin!" Piji Xing rolled his eyes and shouted at the Yu Clan man at the front of the troop, "Eh? What did you bring? Is it good? Did you find treasures in Tusk Basin? Haha, are you secretly sending the treasure into Pi Family treasury? No, you can't go. I'm telling you, follow me with your carriage. Otherwise, you will suffer."

Piji Xing yelled at Pi Feng with dazzling eyes.

Pi Feng blinked and looked at Piji Xing and Chi Li, not knowing what to do.

Piji Xing narrowed his eyes, then slightly waved his hands. A large group of Jia Clan warriors rushed up and surrounded Pi Feng and his carriages. One Jia Clan warrior violently ripped off the waterproof cloth on a carriage, exposing heavy metal boxes covered under it.

A random box was opened. Contained in the box were neatly piled magic talismans, releasing strong energy waves.

"Ah! Nice!" Piji Xing gave a complicated glance at the talismans, then walked into the Chi Family mansion in big steps. The group of Jia Clan warriors pushed Pi Feng, forcing him and his troop into the Chi Family mansion as well.

Chi Li glanced at Pi Feng, who merely shrugged. But deep in Pi Feng's pupils, hazy lotuses sparkled faintly, then disappeared.

Chapter 1426: Swim With the Current

In the Chi Family's reception room, Piji Xing was whipping his knees with his gloves, seeming to be a bit upset.

Pi Feng stood in front of him, extra politely. From time to time, he glanced at Chi Family elders standing in the hall. A few Chi Family elders were gathered together, and had been checking the batch of jade talismans Pi Feng brought back to Liang Zhu City. The jade talismans were made from top-grade jade and crystals. They were especially exquisite, perfectly in line with Yu Clan people's sense of aesthetics. The artistic lines carved on the jade talismans were smooth as water, reaching the peak of perfection. Clearly, these were all masterpieces.

"Good stuff." A Chi Family elder finally put down the talisman held in his hand, politely bowed to Piji Xing, and said, "Childe Piji Xing, these are the best defensive and offensive jade talismans. A defensive talisman can protect its owner from a full strike launched by a general warrior for a quarter of an hour, while an offensive talisman can momentarily release a peak-general-level power to attack the enemy."

So-called non-humankind general warriors were as strong as Magus Kings.

These jade talismans which could defend against full strikes from general warriors for a quarter of an hour, or momentarily release a peak-general-level power to attack the enemies, were indeed good pieces. More importantly, this was a huge batch.

"One jade talisman like this can make over ten-thousand jade coins in an auction house in Liang Zhu City." Piji Xing took over a talisman from a Chi Family elder, then looked at Pi Feng, seeming to think of something. "I haven't heard that the Pi Family made such a huge income these days."

Po Feng licked his dried lips, smiled embarrassedly, and said,

"There are...legal surpluses from Tusk Basin. This..."

Piji Xing narrowed his eyes and grinned. 'Legal surpluses' were off-the-books incomes allowed by some hidden rules. Every Yu Clan noble understood it.

"Dishi Jin is the manager of Tusk Basin, right?" Piji Xing smilingly crossed his legs and fiddled with the exquisite jade talismans in his hand as he said blandly, "We helped him become the manager, didn't we...? Alright, these jade talismans are a gift to me from him, so I'll take them, all of them. Actually, I might use these treasures soon.

Piji Xing put the talisman inside his pocket with a bright grin on his face. Standing aside, Pi Feng smiled embarrassedly, without saying a word.

Piji Xing clapped his hands and laughed loudly, "Alright, send these things to my place. My people will take over from there. Hehe, Tusk Basin? Dishi Jin? I'll remember his name."

Buzz! In the reception hall of the Chi Family, strong magic seals were silently triggered. Layers of defensive screens enveloped the hall, while a dreadfully strong pressure descended.

Piji Xing, Pi Feng, and tens of guards who followed Piji Xing in trembled slightly, then were disabled from moving by a powerful magnetic magic seal. They couldn't move even a finger anymore. Piji Xing was shocked. He immediately turned to Chi Li and yelled, "Chi Li! What's going on? You, don't you forget, neck, your neck!"

Touching the chaplet on his neck which would blow him up at any moment, Chi Li gave a bitter grin. He shook his head, then spread his hands and said, "Childe Piji Xing, I don't know what's going on either. You see, I haven't left your side all this long. I truly don't know what happened."

Piji Xing's eye corners twitched intensely. This wasn't right!

In their plan, they should control the defensive formations of the

Chi Family, Pi Family, and Ji Family one after another, then bring all members of the three families under control with their defensive formations. Afterward, they would reverse the defensive formations; in cooperation with the defensive formation that belonged to the Piji Family, they would control all Piji Family people.

In other areas of the city, Glorious Domination people would be doing the same things. Together, they would control all the twelve families in power and their appendant families, then head to the highest conference hall, and control the defensive formation of the entire Liang Zhu City.

With the members of all these families as hostages, with the defensive formation of Liang Zhu City, those old elders from the highest council of elder would definitely not dare to take any reckless action. Yemo Tian was confident too. He believed that he could forcibly control all old people staying in the city, and let them work for the Glorious Domination.

But how come the thing wasn't going well?

"Who is it? Who is it?" Piji Xing shouted through gritted teeth, "Who is going against us?"

Pi Feng's eyes sparkled with a cold light as he glanced around, without knowing what to do — This wasn't going according to their plan either. They sent this batch of jade talisman to Piji Xing on purpose, to strengthen the Glorious Domination and allow Piji Xing and his people to successfully take over Liang Zhu City. After that, they would destroy the Glorious Domination!

But now, it seemed that a third party had stepped into this? Who? Those old ones from the highest council of elders?

Alright, if it were truly those old people, those playboys from the Glorious Domination would be the only ones to suffer!

Pi Feng slightly curved up his mouth corners. The people Master

Shifu sent over indeed had wonderful foresight, that they pushed the Glorious Domination forward to be the cannon fodder. In this way, no matter how it went, the White Lotus Altar, Cyan Lotus Altar, Gold Lotus Altar, and the Red Lotus Altar would always gain a good harvest, and the credit would eventually belong to the dragon man, the tiger man, the lion man, and the mammoth man!

A door in another corner of the hall opened. Carrying a giant teacup, Yu Mu walked out with an honest smile.

Inside the water-tank-sized 'teacup', mist coiled in streams. The 'teacup' was filled with a colorful steaming liquid which was still boiling. In the mist, hazy silhouettes of centipedes, scorpions, poisonous snakes, and worms had been darting around, letting out shrill peeping noises.

"This soup is very nourishing." Yu Mu walked to Piji Xing grinningly and said, "Childe Piji Xing? Take a sip if you want to live! From now on, we're all families. Yesterday, we had been thinking about how we should invite you here as a guest. But today, you brought yourself to us!"

Piji Xing looked at Chi Li suspiciously.

Chi Li ripped his collar open and screamed, "Lord Yu Mu! Please be careful! Piji Xing and his people have an organization called Glorious Domination. They also want to take over Liang Zhu City. Look at this on my neck. They worried that I might betray them, so they put this thing on my neck. They said that once it's triggered, all living creatures within a mile radius will die!"

Yu Mu paused for a second, blinking his small beady eyes quickly.

As a shred of shadow flashed across the air, Wuzhi Qi suddenly showed up, squatting on the table beside Piji Xing. He gripped Piji Xing's chin with his fingers and clenched his five fingers slightly. Piji Xing howled, opened his mouth, then Yu Mu raised the giant 'teacup' and poured some 'nourishing soup' into his mouth.

"What is this? What is this? Chi Li, your life is in my hands! What're you doing? What do you want?" Piji Xin struggled and shrieked hysterically.

"Tie Chi Li and this one together. If that thing on his neck goes off, they can die together!" Wuzhi Qi said carelessly, "Some other people have the same purpose as we do? Interesting! Let's talk about how we should do this."

Feng Xing frowningly while walked out, then said in a deep voice, "Why don't we cooperate with them? Just help them control Liang Zhu City."

Chapter 1427: The Highest Conference Hall

Liang Zhu City, the highest Conference Hall...

This was an enormous building, as magnificent as a palace of a god. Pan Gu world had nearly inexhaustible resources, and Yu Clan nobles had been spending lavishly. The base floor of the building was built with jade, paved by golden floor tiles, and the walls were built from crystals, silvers, corals, the shells of hawksbill sea turtles, and other rare materials.

The roof was pieced together by large crystal pieces and different colored gemstones with a special method. The glistening gemstones formed complicated patterns on the roof, which were also a part of the great defensive formation.

Under the base floor, the large underground space was filled with mountain-huge piles of top-grade crystals. Transformed by large-scale formations, the crystals released liquified natural power. Highly compressed liquefied natural powers spurted out from the well-designed tubes in the base floor, forming a dense, waist-deep layer of white mist.

A dense mist, transformed from completely pure natural powers!

This was a perfect cultivation ground. However, not a single Yu Clan noble would cultivate themselves in this place. They spent so many resources to build this place and created such a stunning scene, only because they were too rich! The resources in Pan Gu world were nearly inexhaustible. Therefore, they allowed themselves to squander.

"What a nice place! But, not imposing enough! Not good enough for my future supreme position!" Walking on the broad square of the Highest Conference Hall, Yemo Tian sneered and said, "When I become the owner of Pan Gu world and all the surrounding worlds, I will expand this hall by ten...no, a hundred times!"

He paused in the middle of a large square, turned around, and looked at those golden statues standing on over a hundred white silver pillars by the edge of the square. Those were the statues of ancient powerful Yu Clan people. They fought bravely with no pains spared. Because of them, the non-humankind based themselves upon Pan Gu world and built the tremendous Yu Dynasty.

"A bunch of old dudes! In the future, only one statue will stand in here, which will belong to me, Yemo Tian!" Yemo Tian snorted coldly, "One statue will be enough. Putting so many statues in here will block the line of sight!"

"But of course, my statue can't be so small. The base has to be at least three-thousand-meters-tall, or one-hundred-thousand-meters? At the very least, every Liang Zhu City person has to be able to see my glorious figure from every corner of the city!"

"My statue can't be vulgarly golden either. What material should we use? How about a giant natural gemstone? No, that sounds plain. But what should we use? I need it to be precious, dazzling, and unique!"

So hard to decide!

Standing beside Yemo Tian, Poto Feili, another leader of the Glorious Domination, slightly frowned and took out a fist-sized crystal ball. He carefully put his ear near the crystal ball, listened to the whispers from it, then smiled and said, "Boss, the Piji Family, Dishi Family, and Jialou Family have all been brought under control. Things are going well in the other areas as well... Now, it depends on us!"

"Hmm, it seems that our brothers have done a good job!" Yemo Tian patted heavily on Poto Feili's shoulder and said, "Trust me, I will give you a bright future! Now, in these old dudes' eyes, you're just a bunch of useless scums."

"But me, will make you the owners of worlds. Our Glorious

Domination will rule everything. We, are going to become the true gods in the hearts of countless species! We will all become gods, and I, Yemo Tian, will be the king of gods!" Yemo Tian raised his eyebrows and excitedly looking at the Highest Conference Hall, which was surrounded by twelve tall divine towers, in the front.

Poto Feili grinned, puffed out his chest, and walked to the hall with large steps.

Keeping a low profile, Yemo Tian followed behind Poto Feili, mingling with his twenty guards. His family situation was obvious and clear, that no affection of brothers and sisters existed between Yemo Luoye and himself. The last thing he wanted was encountering Yemo Luoye's people in this place.

No accidents were allowed. At the moment, the most important thing was safely accessing the defense hub of Liang Zhu City. Like Piji Xing, Poto Feili had many titles ever since he was little kid. He too had access to the Highest Conference Hall, and the defense hub of the city.

As long as Yemo Tian successfully accessed the hall under Poto Feili's cover, everything would be under his control.

The base floor of the hall was nine-hundred-meters-tall, the stairs paved by jade and silver tiles that looked like a staircase leading to the heaven. On both sides of the three-hundred-meters-wide stairs, sturdy Jia Clan guards with golden armors looked like gods in heaven. Seeing Poto Feili walking over, every guard kneeled on one knee and saluted him silently.

"Poto Feili!" As Yemo Tian and the others were walking up to the stairs, a clear male voice could be heard abruptly from the Great Court aside.

Poto Feili's face twitched slightly as he hurriedly turned around.

The Highest Conference Hall was the place for Yu Clan leaders to discuss national affairs. By the east of the hall was the Great Court

of Yu Dynasty. In the court, three chief judges controlled all legal proceedings of Yu Dynasty. The twelve emperors in power were selected by the highest council of elders, and the main duty of each emperor was mostly managing their people and family affairs. The three chief judges were nominated by the highest council of elders, and appointed by the twelve emperors. Their powers affected all families and people from the three suns and nine moons. In other words, the three chief judges were even more powerful than the twelve emperors.

Taking Dishi Yanluo as an example, he had the right to take away the life of any Blood Moon person, but he was not allowed to interfere with any Red Sun affairs. Unlike him, the three chief judges had the law enforcement power over any family and any person from the three suns and nine moons. They could even initiate investigations and impeachments of the twelve emperors.

At the moment, the one standing on a stair and calling Poto Feili's name was one of the three chief judges, named Polo Do, a member of the Flow Moon.

Flow Moon people were the keepers and spreaders of the non-humankind culture. They weren't good fighters, but many of them were scholars, and were wise. A big half of the officers serving in the administrative departments of Yu Dynasty Government were from Flow Moon.

Polo Do stood in the middle of a stairs, narrowing his eyes as he looked at Poto Feili and said, "Our emperors and elders have led the troops out of the city. Nothing is going on in the hall now. What are you here for?"

Poto Feili's eye corners twitched. He laughed embarrassedly and hollowly, "I'm just strolling."

Polo Do grinned warmly and said, "Strolling? How old are you? Still spending time strolling? There's nothing to see in the hall. I have a few interesting cases here. Why don't you judge cases? You

should learn some useful things."

The eye corners of Yemo Tian and Poto Feili twitched simultaneously. In their heads, they cursed Polo Do over and over again.

Chapter 1428: Force on Entrance

"Because no one's in there now, I brought my people to go in and see!" Silently cursing Polo Do's ancestors a thousand times, Poto Feili wore a standard playboy face as he grinningly pointed at the Highest Conference Hall and said, "I just want to go in and take a look now!"

Polo Do held his hands behind his body and walked down through stairs. While walking, he was shaking his hands and saying, "The Highest Conference Hall is the power center of Yu Dynasty. But, it's strength doesn't come from this lifeless building, it's from the people working inside it."

Staring at Poto Feili straight in the eyes, Polo Do smiled and said, "It's an empty building now, so what is there to look at? If you have spare time, you should use it on learning things from me."

Poto Feili chuckled, slightly and slowly shaking his body as he said, "I just want to go in while nobody is there...Conveniently, I want to sit on each one of the twelve thrones, which belong to the twelve emperors in power. You won't tell them, will you?"

Sitting on every throne of the twelve emperors while nobody was in the hall, this sounded like a thought of a typical playboy, like Poto Feili. Only a top-grade noble playboy like him could say things like this with a serious face.

Guarding on the stairs with tightened faces, all guards lowered their heads and pretended to hear nothing. Some things that playboys like Poto Feili could do freely were stuff these guards couldn't even bear to hear.

The Highest Conference Hall was about three miles away from the Great Court. Polo Do walked down the stairs slowly. He seemed to have taken no more than two unhurried steps, but he had already reached to Poto Feili's face. Holding his hands behind his body, he stared at Poto Feili and said blandly, "So soon, you will be

an adult too. Poto Feili, my mother and your grandmother are sisters."

Poto Feili paused briefly. Blinking his eyes, he suddenly remembered this fact. "Ahyaya, I shouldn't curse you in my head just now. You see, by cursing you, I cursed myself too, didn't I? Haha, yeah, yeah, we're relatives, close relatives! Alright, you can leave me alone. I'm just going in and take a quick look!"

Turning around, Poto Feili attempted to continue moving towards the Highest Conference Hall.

A shadow flashed through the air, then Polo Do blocked his way. Deep in Polo Do's pupils, a frosty light had been sparkling. "Eh? I think you should better go watch me judge cases. You kids don't know how to behave properly yet. You should learn more and do less. That'll be good to you, to us, to our families, and the entire Yu Dynasty!"

"You, what're you talking about?" Poto Feili raised his head in fury and shouted, "You're not my father. Why do you think you can tell me what to do?"

Polo Do responded with a harsh, cold voice, "Your father led your Sunset Moon family army down to attack Pu Ban City with the twelve emperors. He isn't around, so I have to restrain you! Don't do anything that will make you regret, Poto Feili!"

"What did I do? Oi, make it clear, what did I do? Don't you think that you can incriminate anyone only because you're a chief judge!" Poto Feili was indignant. He pointed at Polo Do and yelled, "I am Poto Feili, the first heir of the Sunset Moon, the deputy commander of Liang Zhu security force, an officer in the Highest Conference Hall. Am I not allowed to access the hall?"

Waving his hand, Poto Feili continued with a bright voice, "Brothers, pay no attention to these sneaky old dudes. We..."

Poto Feili paused abruptly. Silently, Yemo Tian, who mingled in

Poti Feili's guards, changed his expression.

From behind the Great Court by the east, a troop of warriors silently dashed down, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air as they surrounded Yemo Tian, Poto Feili, and his people. These warriors were wearing tight black armors and black helmets. Their upper bodies were covered in heavy dragon-scale armors, faces covered in pure black masks, and even eyes protected by black crystals.

Poto Feili and Yemo Tian' faces twisted immediately.

"Polo Do! What are you doing? You deployed the secret guards of the Highest Conference Hall. What on earth do you want? I am Poto Feili, the first heir of the Poto Family! I..." Poto Feili screamed with a purple-red face.

Polo Do abruptly raised his hand and threw a heavy slap on Poto Feili's face.

Polo Do had average cultivation. He was at the level of a low-level Divine Magi. Flow Moon people were mostly scholars. Therefore, their fighting capacity was a grade lower than their cultivation levels. Which meant, Polo Do could be at most as strong as a peak-level Magus King on the battlefields. His fighting experience wasn't even as rich as the experience of a Senior Magus.

Nevertheless, Poto Feili never learned a thing. Except for being a playboy, he had no other specialties. The Poto Family consumed incalculable resources to forcibly promote him to the level of peak-Divine-Magus, but he never truly fought anyone in his whole life. Polo To slapped him, which was something he could not even dream about.

The heavy slap threw Poto Feili to the ground. Crack! Polo Do's wrist weirdly twisted by ninety degrees. He slapped Poto Feili to the ground with all his strength, but there was a large difference between the cultivations of the two. He suffered a strong counterforce from Poto Feili's face, which shattered his wrist

bones into tens of pieces.

"Since you recognize the secret guards of the Highest Conference Hall, you should understand that they are responsible for the entire city. What are you kids doing? What do you want?" said Polo Do coldly, as if he couldn't feel the pain from his wrist.

Polo Do looked angry and serious. One could also find a dreadful intent of killing from his face as he continued, "Within two hours, I received thirty-seven messages from different sources. The Piji Family, Yemo Family, Jialou Family...Kids from quite a few families in power showed up in different areas of the city with large troops of elite warriors, which had unknown backgrounds."

"What confused me even more was that troops from Dark Mountain Mine, Tusk Basin, and the other two important mines happened to send large batches of supplies into the city within these two hours. You kids intercepted them and gained large quantities of war supplies!"

Poto Feili looked at Polo Do in shock and said, "Tusk Basin? And other mines? What's going on?"

"What are you waiting for?" Yemo Tian suddenly burst into a growl. "This old man exposed us! Let him die! Full strikes! Break into the hall!"

As Yemo Tian raised his arms, hundreds of exquisite jade talismans flew out of his sleeves and dazzled blindingly, quickly forming a small-scale teleporting formation around Yemo Tian.

Heavily armored Jia Clan warriors rushed out of the formation, one after another. They roared like wild beasts and raised their blades. Tens of secret guards of the Highest Conference Hall howled in both pain and shock before these powerful Jia clan warriors cut them into two.

Chapter 1429: Stepping into Liang Zhu City

By the west of Liang Zhu City, in a wild land, thousands of priests were holding long streamers and standing according to the locations of stars. Thick clouds of mist had been rising from the streamers, as light streams flowed along the mountains and covered the area with a radius of a hundred miles. Under the mist and light were numerous quiet square arrays. Those were countless human warriors who had just left the dark mine tunnels. Their hearts were filled with hatred. They gritted their teeth as they stared at Liang Zhu City, their eyes burning with anger.

The dragon man sat on a rock, with his legs crossed. His dragon coiled around the rock, yawning lazily. Dishi Jin stood behind him, gazing at the faintly visible city wall of Liang Zhu City as he asked in a low voice, "Shifu, why did we send so many magic talismans and supplies to those useless playboys? With our power, who could stop us even if we want to break into the city directly?"

The dragon man locked his fingers together and put his hands before his lower belly. Hearing Dishi Jin, he responded blandly, "The two master Shifu always say that our sect doesn't have a solid foundation and enough disciples. Therefore, we should be cautious and careful when doing anything, so that we can save our strength."

Breathing deeply, he pointed at Liang Zhu City, then grinned and continued, "Liang Zhu City, that's Liang Zhu City. To you, that's your hometown, but to me and the other ancient beings who attended that ancient war, Liang Zhu City is the nest of the enemies. It has the power to destroy the world."

Narrowing his eyes, the dragon man sighed, "You are from Liang Zhu City, so you can't see its real face. Back then, when your people descended to this world, our two Master Shifu, my brothers, sisters, I, and countless powerful beings joined all living beings in Pan Gu world and fought back...Our two Master Shifu

were smart enough to save their strengths, but still, our sect suffered severe losses, and both the two Master Shifu were injured."

"We don't know how many forces have been hiding in Liang Zhu City, or how many preparations they have done, neither do you."

The dragon man narrowed his eyes, gave a sly smile, and said, "Therefore, since those ambitious kids want to build some 'achievements', my three brothers and I decided to let them feel Liang Zhu City out. We gave them those supplies and talismans because we don't want them to lose too fast, too embarrassedly."

While he was talking, tens of tiny dark spots suddenly rose from Liang Zhu City. Those were tens of heavily armored Jia Clan warriors, treading on metal plates. The dragon man and Dishi Jin saw them clearly. Blood had been spraying out from their bodies. They flew up, turned in the air, and attempted to leave the city. But all of a sudden, a raging fire puffed up from the ground and wrapped them up.

Muffled booms could be heard without an end, while hundreds of water-tank-sized purple thunder bombs went off around these warriors. Following their hoarse roars, they were torn into pieces.

"See, didn't we hear it? As we strengthened those kids, we didn't forget to inform the leaders in the city about their actions." The dragon man smiled delightfully, "If the city didn't have any preparation, those kids would succeed. But, they are surrounded by plenty of our disciples. Once they control the city, we can easily control them."

"If the city does have preparations, let these kids bleed. The city is like a deep lake, and these kids can stir up all flood dragons and enormous boas hiding in the bottom of the lake. After that, we will make our moves. The truly powerful ones won't surprise us, and we won't lose our disciples for no good reason." The dragon man seriously glanced at Dishi Jin and said, "You need to remember

this, we are indeed strong, but we can't let our disciples die without a good reason...We can't afford to lose more elite disciples."

Saying this, the dragon man felt his heart was bleeding.

Damnable Marquis Yao Ji Hao, how many elite disciples under the guidance of Priest Hua and Priest Mu had fallen in his hands? Among them, many were the dragon man's very own disciples. Those poor disciples were all killed by Ji Hao, cruelly and brutally. This hatred was so deep that it could never be washed off.

From the fire, three Jia Clan warriors, whose bodies barely remained in whole pieces, rushed out. They flew across the sky and darted out of the city from the southwest corner, then turned to the south. Blood splashed behind them.

"Wanna deliver a message? No, you're not doing it! We four lotus altars combined our powers to seal the surrounding area of Liang Zhu City, but we didn't do this to allow you to call back your main forces!" The dragon man giggled, sounding so cruel.

The three Jia Clan warriors struggled out of the City, but before they could make a thousand miles far, hundreds of sharp beams of sword light flashed across the sky from a misty woods down bellow, immediately tearing these badly wounded warriors into pieces.

Muffled booms could be heard from every corner of the city while the fire burned. People crazily fought against each other. From the boundless south city wall, a large number of seriously injured Jia Clan warriors rushed out of the city and flew south, attempting to inform the twelve emperors about what happened in the city. But, none of them managed to go further than a thousand miles. Within this distance, the suddenly dazzling sword lights killed all of them.

"Our tiger brother means well. The life is bitter, and the sooner you die, the sooner you'll be saved. Remember to be born in good

families in your next lives. And, in your next lives, you shall join our sect, with no worries. Our gate is widely opened. Everyone has a destiny to be one of us, and can eventually be saved from the bitterness of life."

Between the dragon man's eyebrows, a lotus bloomed slowly. With a gentle voice, he started chanting a scripture to send away the souls of the dead in peace. The mist condensed into lotuses and rose from his mouth, emitting a faint aroma. A warm light covered the surrounding area. All human warriors in the surroundings who heard his voice suddenly sensed an unburdened body and a clearer mind, feeling that an inexhaustible strength had been generated from their bodies.

Outside the Highest Conference Hall, a small half of the troop of secret guards were slaughtered by Yemo Tian's Jia Clan warriors who had been continuously running out from the teleporting formation. The corpses of those secret guards lied on the ground, blood flowing all over the ground.

The secret guards of the Highest Conference Hall were best at information-collecting and torturing. They were the best scouts and prison guards, but not strong warriors. Facing these trusted, carefully cultivated and well-trained fighters under Yemo Tian's command, the secret guards were destroyed so easily.

Under the protection of nearly a hundred secret guards, Polo Do stepped backward step by step, towards the Highest Conference Hall through the stairs. Yemo Tian and Poto Feili led a large group of warriors and followed tenaciously.

"Polo Do!" Yemo Tian shouted, "You shouldn't put your finger in our pie! You have to pay for your behavior! Killing a chief judge, I'd like to know what that feels like!"

Polo Do responded in a harsh tone, "Yemo Tian, do you know what you are doing? This is a rebellion! Your whole family will die for your crime!"

Yemo Tian laughed scornfully and said, "Sure, go kill that bitch if you dare to. Go kill Yemo Luoye, will you?"

Polo Do rolled his eyes, not knowing what to say.

At the moment, one could hear warriors roaring from every building in Liang Zhu City. For an unknown reason, the secret action of Yemo Tian's Glorious Domination was suddenly exposed. The entire city seemed to hunt his people.

Amidst the shouts and growls, a clear stream of light flashed across the air above Liang Zhi City.

Ji Hao descended from the sky and quietly stepped into Liang Zhu City. Followed behind him were one-hundred-thousand half-dragon warriors and a million blood-pool ghosts given by Netherworld Hierarch.

Chapter 1430: Burn Liang Zhu City

Once Ji Hao landed on the ground, a heavily armored Jia Clan commander and a large group of slave warriors rushed out from an alley. Seeing Ji Hao, he popped up his four eyes. Pointing at Ji Hao, these Jia Clan warriors burst into a hysterical scream.

The dark-slave slave warriors growled out in chorus. They widely opened their mouths and exposed their shiny white teeth, looking rather hideous. They kneeled on one knee and raised brightly glowing spell symbol bows, releasing tens of arrows to Ji Hao which caused a shrill swishing noise.

Ji Hao wielded his broad sleeve. Following his move, the tens of purely steel arrows shattered into pieces. Before Ji Hao attacked these suddenly appearing non-humankind warriors, hundreds of heavily armored warriors gushed out from behind and launched a massive wave of attack on them.

Along with hoarse howls, tens of slave warriors fell on the ground, covered in blood. The firstly appearing Jia Clan warrior luckily survived. One of his arms was chopped off from the shoulder. Holding his broken arm and dragging his severely injured body, which had over ten holes on it, he struggled into an alley.

"Chase up and chop him!" Another Jia Clan warrior raised his large blade and growled, "No one dares to refuse the glow of the Glorious Domination! For the great lord Yemo Tian, chase up and cut him!"

The group of slave warriors and non-humankind slaves shouted in excitement, rushing into that alley while bringing up an intense aura of killing.

Suddenly, the ground began shaking along with a rumbling noise. Right on both sides of this street, two mansions belonging to Yu Clan nobles emitted a faint glow. The defensive screens of these

two mansions were triggered. From the thick walls, which were surrounded by thriving plants, brightly shining spell symbols emerged, which made this wall seem to be on fire.

From the miles wide wall, over ten small-scale divine towers rose, each tower about ten meters tall. Above every tower, the human-head-sized erect eye was faintly visible in a sphere of light, releasing a sharp sense of danger.

The fierce warriors who had been shouting the names of Yemo Tian and the Glorious Domination paused instantly. They began growling in rage, but before they could make any reaction, they watched those divine towers release beams of destructive light.

The chests of tens of Jia Clan warriors in the front were penetrated. Those divine towers had different types of power, for which reason, some Jia Clan warriors had their wounds, and even the upper halves of their bodies burned to carbon, while the others had their chests covered in a palm-thick frost. A strong coldness began spreading from their bodies.

As the main force, the Jia Clan warriors were all killed. Watching this, all dark-kind slave warriors and non-humankind slaves screamed in fear, turning around and attempting to run. However, warriors showed up scattered on the walls of the two mansions. Clearly, not too many guards were left in the mansions, but their number could reach three-hundred in total. They raised crossbows and aimed at these fleeing slave warriors, releasing waves of arrows.

"Lowly slaves, how dare you rebel?" The arrows fell like a rain and killed batches of slaves and slave warriors. A luxuriously dressed Yu Clan old man gasped quickly, leaping on the wall as he yelled, "Chop off and preserve their heads! After this whole thing, find their families and kill them all!"

Clearly, this Yu Clan old man had a relatively high social status. Because of the anger, he even rolled up his eyes while he screamed,

"This is Liang Zhu City, lowly slaves! How dare you point your weapon at your masters? All you families have to die!"

Ji Hao looked at this hysterical old noble in surprise, wondering what happened in Liang Zhu City.

He finally found an excuse to leave Chi Ban Mountain, where the leaders of the humankind and non-humankind had been running an endless negotiation. He sneaked into Liang Zhu City, thinking of doing something in this city with Feng Xing and Yu Mu to teach those proud non-humankind beings a lesson and earn a greater strength for the humankind, so that human beings wouldn't fall at a disadvantage in the negotiation.

But how come once he arrived in the city, he found people in here fighting against each other? Blood splashing everywhere, heads rolling on the ground, what a great show!

"A human being! Lowly barbarian! Kill him!" The old noble yelling on the wall suddenly noticed Ji Hao. His eyes grew wider as he stared at Ji Hao and shouted, "How dare a barbarian walk on a street of the great Yu Clan? Bloody things! Kill him! Mince him! Feed him to the wolves!"

Tens of Jia Clan warriors leaped down from the wall and roared, marching towards Ji Hao.

Ji Hao chuckled. With less than ten percent of his power, he launched the sky-opening move. The tens of Jia Clan warriors saw nothing but countless fists before their eyes, each aimed at a vital part of their bodies. They couldn't dodge, neither could they defend; they couldn't even see the fists clearly.

Ji Hao's fists landed on the heart of the tens of strong Jia Clan warriors. Each one of them suffered a punch almost simultaneously. Silently, these warriors fell on the ground, soon turning into sticky puddles of blood flowing out of their armors. Ji Hao's punches were as heavy as mountains that crushed every cell of these warriors.

The old noble shrieked on the wall. He took a glimpse at Ji Hao, then turned around and rushed right away, as if Ji Hao were a ghost.

Ji Hao paid no attention to this old coward. His spirit power spread in every direction like torrents, instantly covering a big half of the city along with a faintly audible swishing noise.

At the stage, Ji Hao's spirit power was already strong to a dreadful degree. His highly concentrated spirit power spread to the surrounding area, causing the heart of every single non-humankind being under its coverage to twitch. For an unknown reason, these non-humankind beings sensed an indescribable terror, almost similar to a natural disaster.

"Yemo Tian, the Glorious Domination? Yemo Tian rebelled? Eh? These people? Priest Hua, Priest Mu, you are indeed capable! White Lotus Altar? Cyan lotus? Red lotus? Gold lotus?" Ji Hao murmured, "What a show! Everyone is here, huh? Shall we make this big show even better?"

A stream of spirit power swept across the air, with which, Ji Hao found Yu Mu and Feng Xing, who were preparing for a war. By using his spirit power, he told them, "Prepare our people. Once the fire rises, immediately capture all non-humankind beings crossing your eyes, then empty their treasuries!"

"I want non-humankind beings, and I also want their wealth. Don't leave them a penny!" Ji Hao quickly shared the information with Yu Mu, Feng Xin, and the others, "Remember, two other forces have stepped in. Don't start any conflict with them. We kidnap people and rob wealth, nothing more!"

After finishing, Ji Hao let out the Taiji universe cauldron and released the Pan Jia sun from it, which grew into a miles-wide fireball that floated in the sky.

If one wanted to start a fire, what could serve as a better tool than a natural sun?

Ji Hao controlled the energy of the Pan Jia sun with his spirit power, as countless thumb-sized golden-red light beams descended from the sky. Followed by a shrill swishing noise that sounded like a rain of arrows, the defensive screens of luxurious mansions were penetrated. From wherever the golden-red light reached, raging fires rose to the sky.

Within a second, hundreds of thousands of fires were started in Liang Zhu City.

Chapter 1431: Countless Captives

Fire, all over the sky, covered the ground. The golden-red fire looked like melted glass, burning wildly on the surface of everything. Bricks and tiles were melted, sands were turned into lava; magnificent buildings collapsed, becoming strands of smoke in the fire.

Countless non-humankind beings rushed out of their mansions, howling, crying, and shrieking. Yu Clan nobles shouted in pain and desperately ripped off their burning luxurious clothing. Jia Clan warriors howled and tried to take off their melting armors. Dark-kind slave warriors with lower positions and weak non-humankind slaves suddenly turned into drifting ashes after they struggled a few steps in the fire.

Fire, the essence sun fire from the Pan Jia sun, was the extreme of the fire in a world. Under Ji Hao's control, the destructive power released from Pan Jia sun was even a hundred times greater than it could ever be back in Pan Jia world.

If the great defensive formation of Liang Zhu City were activated, it wouldn't be so easy for Ji Hao to start such a great fire. Nevertheless, the defensive formation had been so quiet so far. As for the defensive formations based on the mansions in the city, which one of those could ever defend against the power of a natural sun?

Facing the raging fire, Yemo Tian, people from the Glorious Domination, and all other non-humankind beings, who were still enveloped in the mystery, panicked. Countless people were running on streets, wielding their weapons and shouting in confusion. They didn't know where the enemies were, or how they launched the attack.

Feng Xing, Yu Mu, Wuzhi Qi, and the others smiled. They heard Ji Hao and hurriedly drove all Yu Clan nobles they controlled out

of the temporary prison, making them stand under the line of the Pan Jia sun.

The Taiji creation cauldron floated above Ji Hao's head. A stream of mist connected the cauldron and the sun.

Inside the sun, two faintly visible eyes looked down on the ground. Those were Ji Hao's eyes. Through the Pan Jia sun, he could see the whole city. Ji Hao's sight covered wherever the sunlight reached.

Seeing groups of Yu Clan nobles driven outside, Ji Hao smiled. From the Pan Jia sun, the golden light poured down light water streams. Showering under the sunlight, the bodies of the Yu Clan nobles from tens of large families suddenly began shrinking, then turned into strands of golden mist that rose towards the Pan Jia sun.

The Taiji creation cauldron buzzed loudly, as countless Yu Clan captives were sent into it.

Within a couple of breaths, people from the Piji Family, the Pi Family, Ji Family, and Chi Family as its three appendant families, Dishi Family and its four appendant families, which were the Di Family, Shi Family, Lo Family, Mo Family, the other four families in power, and about twenty appendant families, were all sent into the cauldron. Those Yu Clan people fell into the deepest sleep in the cauldron.

Afterward, Feng Xing, Yu Mu, and the others got busy in all mansions that belonged to these families. They opened all treasuries, broke all secret rooms, unsealed countless well hidden small spaces, and carried out all crystals, jade, magic herbs, precious plans, expensive metals, and all other kinds of natural treasures out, as fast as they could.

These Yu Clan nobles had been in Pan Gu world for countless years. They enslaved numerous human beings, exploited mines, plowing, sowing, and collecting; they dug through every inch of

land they occupied, and accumulated an immeasurable wealth.

A big part of their harvests was sent back to Pan Yu world. With the resources from Pan Gu world, Yu Clan people built strong forces in Pan Yu world, and tremendous relational networks. But in Pan Gu world, these Yu Clan nobles still had a solid foundation. Even Ji Hao was shocked by their wealth.

Piles of crystals were as enormous as real mountains. All kinds of top-quality jade and incalculable precious natural treasures, magical herbs kept in exquisitely carved jade boxes, and billions of jade boxes releasing strong energy waves could be found. The quantity of the rare metals, which could be forged into great weapons, was immeasurable. The results of the efforts made by countless human slaves in the past centuries were all accumulated in here. Seeing all the rare resources carried out from small sealed spaces by Feng Xing and the others, Ji Hao even temporally lost his eyesight in shock.

"Damn, these all belong to us!" Gritting his teeth, Ji Hao said in anger, in sadness, and also in delight. Again, the golden light poured down from the Pan Jia sun and collected all the rare resources.

Ji Hao turned around his palm, conveniently took a thirty-thousand years old 'thousand-eye snake fruit' from a pile of herbs, and took a big bite. Immediately, he felt a coolness in his eyes. His eyes were relaxed, and his eyesight turned much better than before. Without casting any magic, he even had a slightly better vision.

Lowering his head, Ji Hao looked down at the ground without using any magic power. Surprisingly, he saw thirty-meter deep underground through the rocks. Within this depth, he saw everything clearly.

With a magic herb like this, added with some secret magic, a pair of greatly powerful eyes could be created, without a doubt. More

than one-thousand and three-hundred 'thousand-eye snake fruits' like this were found in those mansions!

"You non-humankind beings wasted all the good stuff. Why don't you use these treasures to improve your powers but keep them all in treasuries?" Ji Hao sighed with a low voice, while the Pan Jia sun shone in the sky once again.

The golden light descended from the sky. Large groups of Yu Clan nobles screamed in the light, but they were turned into wisps of golden light uncontrollably and brought to the sky. Ji Hao especially targeted Yu Clan nobles that rushed out of mansions, surrounded by large numbers of guards, and were luxuriously dressed with elegant manners.

Within a quarter of an hour, including the members of the few families in power and their appendant families, Ji Hao had taken about ten-million Yu Clan nobles into the cauldron.

By the end, Ji Hao was too lazy to differentiate the nobles from the ordinary ones. He simply sent all three-eyed Yu Clan people into the cauldron. In the meanwhile, the Pan Jia sun's bright golden light spread in the city and captured countless Jia Clan and Xiu Clan people, who clearly had higher social statuses. He also captured a large number of dark-kind slave warriors and non-humankind slaves who rushed all over the city in panic. He had many dark-kind warriors and non-humankind slaves in his Yao Mountain territory. Therefore, he deeply understood that they were truly useful.

While Ji Hao and his people were emptying the city, a raging growl could be heard from the Highest Conference Hall.

"Enough! Yemo Tian! You stupid scum! Are you trying to destroy Liang Zhu City? Destroy our base in this world? Tell your gang to end all actions. Otherwise, today will be the day you die!"

Tens of especially strong energy waves rose from the hall. Within a blink of an eye, tens of figure showed up in the sky, above the

hall.

Ji Hao's heart twitched suddenly — So many Sun and Moon stage beings!

Yu Dynasty was indeed powerful, indeed extraordinary. No wonder they had been suppressing the humankind all these years!

Chapter 1432: Terrifying Weapon

The Taiji universe mirror transformed into a faint shadow and surrounded Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao merged into the air with the extremely negative power, silently and swiftly approaching the Highest Conference Hall. The extreme negative power was traceless and untouchable. Therefore, even if quite a number of powerful non-humankind beings had been scanning across the surrounding area with strong soul power waves, none of them discovered Ji Hao.

The Highest Conference Hall, the Great Court by the east, and the Administrative Center by the west were the core of Liang Zhu City, the center of the highest power. At the moment, all these three buildings were covered in thick light shells that looked like eggshells.

Twelve different-natured powers generated twelve different-colored layers of light, which represented the three suns and nine moons, overlapping with distinct gradation. The light shells were crystalline, within which, clearly visible, brightly glowing spell symbols looked like tangible, golden sculptures. The spell symbols interwove as they emitted a dazzling light, even covering the three buildings.

Polo Do and a large group of secret guards stood on the last stair, looking at Yemo Tian and his people, who were stopped outside the light shell, with faint smiles on their faces.

Yemo Tian's face had turned slightly blue in anger. Standing in front of the light shell, he glared at Polo Do. Abruptly, he burst into a raging growl and punched on the light shell.

'Sizzle...Crack!'

Lightning bolts darted out of the light shell and, coiled on Yemo Tian's arm, cutting him. Blood splashed and muscle pieces flew, while his arm was shredded.

"Yemo Tian, no living creature can break these three defensive screens." Looking down at Yemo Tian, Polo Do said, "These defensive screens were designed for the final war, back when our kind arrived in Pan Gu world. In case we failed under the counteroffensive of barbarians in the world one day, and if Liang Zhu City is broken, this place would be our final defense."

"During the past countless years, generations of our people had been improving this final defense. We spent incalculable resources, purchased countless powerful magic formations, seals, and added to it." Polo Do said slowly, "Except for the true power possessors, not even the direct descendants of the largest families knew about this final defense."

Tens of figures floated outside the three defensive screens, releasing strong energy waves. An elderly man, who had pale-yellow hair and beard that made him look extra old, looked at Yemo Tian scornfully and coldly, then sneered faintly.

"Kid, you are still so young and ignorant, but you already learned to rebel, didn't you?" The old man held his hands behind his body as he looked at Yemo Tian. Because of the pain, cold sweat had been streaming down Yemo Tian's head. "But kid, there're a lot of things you don't know yet. Do you really believe that you few useless kids can overturn the Yu Dynasty?"

Polo Do stood on the stair as he smilingly talked to the tens of figures in the sky, "Glorious Domination, lords, they founded an organization and named it Glorious Domination. In their early days, we had built a special file for them in the Great Court. We thought it was a game of these kids to earn themselves more allowance."

Shaking his head, Polo Do sighed, "I didn't think, didn't think that the truth would be them attempting to use this organization to overturn the twelve families in power. I have to a admit that the Great Court has made an unforgivable mistake on this. We actually failed to discover such a 'great goal' of theirs.

Floating in the sky, the tens of people chuckled together. Their voices were filled with scorn towards Yemo Tian and confidence towards this current situation.

Ji Hao floated above a roof about ten miles away, silently looking at them. He understood these elders. In their eyes, Yemo Tian's Glorious Domination and the rebellion they started today were both ridiculous kids' games.

Yemo Tian didn't even know about the final defense of the Highest Conference Hall, Great Court, and the Administrative Center, neither did he know that his Glorious Domination had been put under surveillance by the Great Court. He didn't even know how many high-grade forces were hiding in Liang Zhu City.

If such a 'rebellion' could succeed, wouldn't these elders seem to be too useless?

"Yemo Tian, you brought yourself in today." Standing on the last stair, Polo Do smilingly looked at Yemo Tian and said, "In fact, we already know that the twelve portal-base formations, which have now been serving as a navigational light, are related to you and Dishi Cha. We've been secretly hunting you all the time. Do you know that?"

Yemo Tian slowly nodded and sighed to Poto Feili, "It seems that our calculation skills are truly not as good as these old dudes. They have been waiting until we show our greatest power, then catch us all in one action."

Polo Do grinned and said, "You're right. We're glad to see you bringing yourselves in. Actually, the first day you returned to Liang Zhu City, we knew about it. But, we were curious about what you came back for. Therefore, we've been secretly watching you. As a result, you indeed gave us a surprise."

Shaking his head, Polo Do continued with a slight disappointment, as if this whole thing was a flavorless chicken rib to chew, "Just a small surprise, but not a harvest. Yemo Tian, did

you come back only to do this ridiculous thing this time?"

Yemo Tian remained silent for a short while. Pointing at the direction of Dark Mountain Mine, he said, "I have three cities of great calamity, one city of domination, and millions of slave warriors in Dark Mountain Mine, all armed with top-grade equipments."

Hearing him, the elderly power elder shook his head and said blandly, "Don't underestimate the defense of Liang Zhu City, Kid Yemo Tian! Those four lifeless things can never break Liang Zhu City! Do you think that our twelve families in power can't even deal with four lifeless machines?"

Yemo Tian quickly interrupted him and said, "Lifeless things? If you don't give a damn about my cities of great calamity and city of domination, what about this treasure of mine?"

Following his shrill laughter, a dark, diamond-shaped crystal flew out of Yemo Tian's forehead.

A suffocating, dreadful energy wave condensed into almost-tangible black torrents, surging in all directions while a hundreds of meters tall, slim giant with twenty-four pairs of wings and eight long arms suddenly showed up.

The destructive weapon, Yemo Tian activated this destructive weapon that Ji Hao had seen once back in the White Dragon River.

The faces of the group of elders paled. Before they could make any reaction, an arm of the destructive weapon suddenly disappeared.

Clap! The elder with pale-yellow hair and beard was slapped flying away by the weapon. Vomiting blood, he thudded against the defensive screen of the Great Court.

"Sun and Moon stage? Hehe, ants! You damned old things!" Inside the transparent crystal between the destructive weapon's eyebrows, Yemo Tian howled hysterically.

Chapter 1433: Kill Him Together

Ji Hao's fingers twitched slightly as he stared straight at the destructive weapon. Back then, when he saw this oddly shaped destructive weapon for the very first time in White Dragon River, the sense of power from it was extremely terrifying. Powerful, violent, cruel, brutal, an aura of pure death coming at one's face. Merely this sense of power from the destructive weapon could make a living being collapse, both from the outside and the inside.

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!

Within every span of a breath, a transparent dark circle of ripple would spread from the destructive weapon, spreading out faster than lightning bolts, even faster than light.

The dark ripples swept across the air, twisted the space, and paused the time immediately. Wherever the darkness reached, Ji Hao clearly sensed that even the natural laws in Pan Gu world were slightly twisted. Some basic natural laws that ordinary human beings believed in changed weirdly.

Every time the dark ripples passed by Ji Hao, he felt a sharp pain from his pores. His heart and internal organs twitched, and the embryo of Dao quivered uncontrollably, even though he was under the protection of the Taiji universe mirror. He had merged himself into the air by using the extreme negative power. However, the extreme negative power had been changed slightly. As a consequence, Ji Hao nearly exposed himself. But after all, Ji Hao had quite a few powerful treasures for his own defense. The dark ripples released from the destructive weapon were indeed fierce, but Ji Hao managed to endure them.

Those non-humankind elders were strong. They had been trembling slightly, with sweat streaming down their bodies. But meanwhile, different colored glows emitted from their bodies, as extremely powerful treasures were triggered to protect their

bodies and souls, allowing them to withstand the overwhelming energy waves from the destructive weapon.

Poor Poto Feili and those Jia Clan warriors who followed Yemo Tian here through the teleporting formation! They didn't have those powerful treasures, that only high-grade elders could have. As the destructive weapon released the first wave of energy, Poto Feili and nearly ten-thousand warriors under Yemo Tian's command were sent flying to tens of miles away like drifting falling leaves, while vomiting blood.

Circles of dark ripples roared across, along with a destructive power. The bodies of Poto Feili and those warriors twitched intensively, while sticky blood gushed out of their eyes, mouths, noses, and ears.

Ji Hao clearly watched these poor things' skins chap, which made them look like broken porcelains glued back together. Some ruptures on their skins reached deep into their muscles, then into their bones and internal organs. Poto Feili's life-force was fading quickly. If Yemo Tian didn't deactivate the destructive weapon, in ten minutes at most, Poto Feili's body would turn into ashes and his soul would perish.

"Yemo Tian...Boss!" Poto Feili screamed with a dry, hoarse voice. Beams of light shone from his body as he triggered his life-saving magic treasures and tried to defend himself against the destructive weapon.

Buzz! Another dark ripple swept across and shattered the lights emitted from his body. Followed by a faintly audible cracking noise, his skin was shattered. Within a blink of an eye, Poto Feili's skin cracked into the finest bits, exposing his muscles.

"Ah, Poto Feili, my brother, for our goal, some sacrifices are inevitable." Yemo Tian smiled faintly and heartlessly, then said, "These old dudes aren't so easy to deal with!"

That was true through. These elders were not easy to deal with.

Without the destructive weapon, Yemo Tian could never possibly rival these elders. In order to fully suppress these power elders, Yemo Tian had no other choice but to let his followers suffer.

"I am Yamo Di!" While Yemo Tian was 'comforting' his follower Poto Feili, the elder who was sent flying away by him earlier burst into a shrill scream. The elder's pale-yellow long hair stood straight up from his scalp, while he was 'inlaid' in the defensive screen, which had been dazzling with lightning. He cupped his hands before his chest, as if he were holding a ball. Blinding lightning bolts had been merging into his palms from all directions.

"Yamo Di?" Yemo Tian growled in anger. From the inside, he put his face tightly against the transparent crystal cockpit of the destructive weapon, even flattening his nose. Staring at Yamo Di, he yelled, "Are you the strongest supporter of that bitch Yemo Luoye? Damn you! Yamo, Yamo, the Yamo Family, you're only an appendant of the Yemo Family!"

Yamo Di slowly opened his erect eye. Within that purely dark eye, a dim light had been spinning. His body had been absorbing the lightning bolts merging into his palms from all directions. A waxy luster was gradually added to his skin and his hair. Slowly, his body turned translucent.

"The Yamo Family is a 'branch' of the great Yemo Family, instead of an 'appendant'!" Yamo Di slowly left the defensive screen and rose back into the sky. A wave of thunderbolts stuck to him, but were absorbed fully by his body. Yamo Di's body seemed to become a bottomless black hole, that even the space around him had been collapsing into his body.

Yamo Di looked at the destructive weapon vigilantly and said slowly, "Yemo Tian, you damned little kid...Back then, I suggested the former emperor to execute you while you were still an infant! The emperor loved your mother too much, so he couldn't bear to do it...Otherwise, how could today's trouble even happen?"

Yemo Tian gave a cold grin and said, "I knew you suggested him to execute me, an infant, younger than six-month of age! What did I do wrong? Eh? What did I do wrong? You old b*stard, you should die, just like that bloody old man!"

"You have always been a mistake!" Yamo Di said in a bland tone, "The emperor abdicated ahead of schedule because of you. Because of you, he returned to our hometown, and because of you, he was stuck in Holy Realm...for..."

Yamo Di abruptly shut his mouth.

Yemo Tian laughed wildly, "Go on? Finish it, will you? You old b*stard! Go on! For what? My mother? That b*tch Yemo Luoye's mother? And, the 'most beloved' woman of my nominal father? Say it, tell me, say it!"

Yamo Di breathed deeply and remained silent, but straightened his ten fingers, pointing at the destructive weapon.

A sky-shaking noise could be heard, while countless thin bolts of lightning struck on the destructive weapon like countless sharp swords. Followed by muffled booms, dazzling fire sparkles rose against the surface of the destructive weapon and exploded into giant fiery clouds.

But, the destructive weapon remained motionless. Not even a mark was left on it.

Yemo Tian smirked, as two long arms of the weapon suddenly moved. Yamo Di didn't manage to dodge and suffered a heavy strike. Vomiting blood, he was again sent flying away by the destructive weapon.

Yamo Di flew straight towards Ji Hao. Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and silently threw a heavy punch at Yamo Di's heart from the back.

Chapter 1434: Destructive Slaughter

Everything happened so fast! Within a short moment, a lot of things happened.

Yamo Di was the chief elder of the Yemo Family and the Highest Council of elders. He attended the series of great wars that happened back when the non-humankind invaded Pan Gu world. The word 'high' wasn't enough to describe Yamo Di's position and social status. He could even be counted as a symbol of Yu Dynasty, a flag, a 'living fossil'!

Without a doubt, Yamo Di was one of the most powerful beings in Yu Dynasty. Naturally, he possessed the best resources of Yu Dynasty. He had hundreds of powerful defensive treasures, all top-grade pieces.

When the destructive weapon attacked him again, Yamo Di's soft armor, long robe, and all unnoticeable pendents he wore triggered automatically. One-hundred and twenty-thousand silk-thin defensive screens with different natures of power wrapped him up and formed a large-scale defensive seal, which was as strong as the defensive formation of a large fort.

Nevertheless, the destructive weapon's power was beyond Yamo Di's imagination. Along with Yemo Tian's wild laughter, the energy wave released from the destructive weapon condensed into a nine-headed dragon and bumped into Yamo Di's body.

Layers of defensive screen blasted like bubbles. The tremendous impact force struck directly on Yamo Di's body, quaked his bones violently, and twitched his internal organs intensely. Yamo Di even felt like a well-cleaned piece of meat being thrown into a meat grinder.

"Hang in there!" The piercing pain cleared his mind. He gritted his teeth and forcibly triggered his strongest three defensive treasures.

Those were a dragon pearl, a phoenix feather, and one Qi Lin scale. The three treasures seemed to be ordinary, but in fact, each of them contained an immeasurably strong power. Back then, when the non-humankind invaded Pan Gu world and started a series of world-shaking wars, a dragon emperor, a phoenix emperor, and a Qi Lin emperor were killed by Yu Clan people. Their corpses were sent back to Pan Yu world by Yamo Di, turned into three supreme treasures by the powerful beings there, at a great cost.

A blue colored watery light, a red fire, and twelve golden light shields glowed simultaneously. While the one-hundred and twenty-thousand layers of defensive screen were crushed completely by the destructive weapon, the three supreme treasures emitted a blinding light and shielded Yamo Di.

Crack! A giant palm of the destructive weapon twisted the space. The twisted space pressed down Yamo Di's body like a dark cloud, pushing him flying backward. The three supreme treasures buzzed shrilly; their lights had been dimming, tearing apart. Soon, spider-web-like cracks appeared on the three supreme treasures.

"You can't stop me! Yamo Di, you old b*stard!" Yemo Tian shrieked as a thin stream of blood flowed down his nostrils. Under his control, another pair of arms of the destructive weapon were raised high and slapped down to Yamo Di.

"Yemo Tian, with your pathetic power, how long can you control this destructive weapon for?" Under the protection of the three supreme treasures, Yamo Di also burst into a hysterical scream, "It's such a powerful weapon! Only I can release its entire power! You're nothing but a stupid child. Your strength...can't even trigger one-millionth of its power!"

Yemo Tian roared in rage. The destructive weapon's arm smashed down fiercely, squeezing a creaking noise out of Yamo Di's three supreme treasures. Yamo Di vomited blood, being sent flying to Ji Hao by the pair of arms of the destructive weapon.

This was Yamo Di's weakest moment in his whole life.

All his defensive treasures and talismans were destroyed, his three supreme treasures were on the verge of collapse. At the moment, the three treasures, which were made from the corpses of top-grade, powerful ancient creatures, could only provide their owner with a Divine-Magus-level defensive power.

Seventy percent of Yamo Di's bones had been broken, and a big half of his internal organs were crushed. But his soul was burning ragingly. Tremendous waves of soul power flooded in all directions, burning wildly in the sky like a black fire.

"Yemo Tian, you can't kill me!" Yamo Di's throat was broken. Therefore, he couldn't make any sound with his physical body right now. However, the flood of his soul power delivered his raging voice and his fury to everywhere.

Every single living creature in Liang Zhu City heard Yamo Di's shrill voice from its head. The brains of some relatively weaker non-humankind warriors were even shattered by this scary soul power strike, having blood spurted out from their eyes, nose, ears, and mouth.

Because of Yamo Di's overwhelming soul power, centered at the Highest Conference Hall, the ground suddenly began sinking along with rumbling noises. Magnificent buildings collapsed thunderously in waves of dark soul power. Countless sharp pieces of these buildings darted shrilly out in all directions like arrows.

Circles of ripples were stirred up from the dark defensive screen on the surface of the destructive weapon. Earlier, the weapon remained perfectly motionless under Yamo Di's thunder attack. But now, it was pushed back for about a hundred meters.

In this very moment, Ji Hao threw a punch on Yao Mo Di's back.

Yamo Di was flying in the sky, but punched by Ji Hao, he paused abruptly. His limbs straightened backward, with his chest bulged.

Followed by a loud and clear series of cracking noise, Yamo Di's three supreme treasures shattered under the combination of the five moves launched by Ji Hao with full strength. Ji Hao's crystalline, transparent fist penetrated Yamo Di's almost-broken robe and soft armor, and sank deeply into his body, crushing his heart as it sent raging-dragon-like torrents of Chaos power into his internal organs.

The air was inundated with a terrifying energy wave released from the destructive weapon, mixed with the dark soul power of Yamo Di. The entire world was darkened, and the space was utterly disordered.

The eyesight and spirit powers were useless now. No one could see what Yamo Di had been through clearly.

Only Yamo Di himself managed to turn around his head with difficulty. Weirdly, his neck rotated one-hundred and eighty degrees backward, which allowed him to stare straight at where Ji Hao was.

Ji Hao had merged himself into the air by using the extremely negative power, and he didn't show his face even when launching this punch.

In confusion, Yamo Di looked at the 'empty' air and murmured, "You are... a human being? Your power... I..."

Ji Hao pulled out Pan Gu Dragon Mark with his left hand and penetrated Yamo Di's forehead.

Without giving him a chance to fight back, Ji Hao killed his body and Pan Gu Dragon Mark devoured his soul. From the five-colored cauldron, a streak of flame whooshed out and wrapped up Yamo Di's body, dragging him in.

Putting his face against the crystal cockpit, Yemo Tian raised his arms, laughing and shouting, "Old b*stard, you died! Finally! You insulted my mother and me, and I will give it back to your

families... I will give it back!"

"Now, old b*stards, it's your turn to...Die!"

The breastplate of the destructive weapon was opened. On its chest, a dark light had been glistening.

Followed by an ear-piercing swishing noise, tens of thumb-thick dark light beams flashed across the sky and penetrated the chests of tens of elders.

Chapter 1435: Fall One After Another

Ji Hao counted carefully. Not including Yamo Di, sixty-seven elders floated above the Highest Conference Hall!

Sixty-seven Sun and Moon stage powerful beings, who were as strong as Supreme Magi... They were a part of Yu Clan's top-grade force, a part of the heavy mountain laid upon the alliance of human clans by the non-humankind for the past countless years. They were also the strongest tentacle for the non-humankind to crazily plunder resources from Pan Gu world, and drain the blood of human beings.

On the back of the destructive weapon, twenty-four pairs of wings spread out, as a dark mist spread all over the sky.

Sixty-seven thumb-sized dark beams of light fiercely penetrated the chests of these elders, leaving beautiful arcs in the sky along with a world-destroying power vibration. The sixty-seven elders, the strongest, top-grade force of Yu Dynasty, screamed in pain. Like butterflies in a storm, they weakly fell from the sky.

Yemo Tian gasped quickly for air, with blood flowing out of his nose and ears and mouth.

As Yamo Di said, the consumption of this strike had gone beyond Yemo Tian's limit. For attacking sixty-seven Sun and Moon stage powerful being at one time, Yemo Tian had to take a part of the counterforce from the destructive weapon with his body. His soul was connected with the weapon because he had to help the weapon's to target the weaknesses of those elders, and to design the tracings of the dark light beams.

A white stream rose from Yemo Tian's head. As the wave of dark light beam flashed across the sky, even his brain boiled because of the massive calculation. His brain was nearly cooked.

"You will all die!" Yemo Tian laughed with a twisted voice. He

took out a bottle of purple liquid with quite some effort and poured it into his mouth. A purple mist immediately rose from his body and transformed into nine faint dragon silhouettes, hovering slowly around him.

Ji Hao raised his head and took a glance at Yemo Tian. He clearly saw Yemo Tian take the drug.

'Damn you, damn you!' Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and clenched his fists — The drug Yemo Tian took was the 'soul-retrieving dew' produced by the dragon-kind, one of the most famous few life-saving drugs created by the dragon-kind.

Perhaps, because dragons were too stupid, they never learned a thing about treasure-forging, talismans-drawing, medicine-concoction, or formation-creation. However, they were wealthy enough to produce life-saving drugs like the 'soul-retrieving dew'. Simply speaking, the cost of concocting one tiny bottle of 'soul-retrieving dew' was as high as the cost of forging thirty Divine-Magus-level magic treasures!

The dragon-kind produce these top-grade life-saving magic drugs regardless of the cost!

The 'soul-retrieving dew' was even rare to royal dragons. However, Yemo Tian took out a bottle so easily to replenish himself. The dragon leaders had been colluding with the non-humankind. Other than this, Ji Hao couldn't come up with another reasonable explanation.

"Scums! They forgot who their ancestor was!" Cursing with a low voice, Ji Hao transformed into a clear gust of wind and flew forward.

The sixty-seven power elders screamed while falling from the sky. Each of them had a human-head-sized hole in their chest. Thirty-four of them died right on the spot; both their bodies and souls collapsed rapidly. Their bodies turned into ashes, while their souls shrank into tiny light spots, drifting away along the wind.

The other thirty-three elders who were relatively stronger had been trying their best to boost up their powers, defending against the destructive power from the destructive weapon. While falling from the sky, they desperately took out the best life-saving drugs they had, pouring them in their mouths.

Meanwhile, nearly a hundred light streams rose into the sky from the Great Court and the Administrative Center on both sides of the Highest Conference Hall. Strong power streams generated dense clouds with twelve different colors, representing the natures of the original powers, of the three suns and nine moons, spreading out.

Nearly a hundred Sun and Moon stage Jia Clan warriors with heavy armors and shiny weapons flew into the sky. Roaring deeply, they marched towards the destructive weapon.

In the social structure of Pan Yu world, Yu Clan possessed the highest power, and Yu Clan people were power-holders. Sun and Moon stage Yu Clan beings had the chance to join the Highest council of elders and become a power elder in the Highest Conference Hall. Jia Clan people were military nobles in Pan Yu world. They controlled elite military forces; they were fierce commanders on battlefields. Jia Clan people were the core of the military strength of Pan Yu world. Sun and Moon stage Jia Clan beings also had the chance to earn an access to the Highest Conference Hall. However, they wouldn't become power elders. Instead, they could only serve as deputy elders in the Highest Headquarters, which was at the same level as the Highest Conference Hall.

Yemo Tian's Glorious Domination rebelled, which was an internal conflict between Yu Clan people. Yemo Di and other power elders came out to suppress the rebellion, but surely, deputy Jia Clan elders wouldn't take part in this. They even gloated a slight little bit. Silently, these deputy Jia Clan elders watched from the sides to see how it went; they even paid no attention to the

chaos that happened in Liang Zhu City. Instead, they all focused on the battle between Yemo Tian and Yamo Di.

When Yamo Di was killed, these deputy elders didn't move. They were 'glad' to witness Yamo Di's death.

However, the moment the sixty-seven elders were killed and wounded severely, these deputy commanders could no longer remain silent. Yu Clan, Jia Clan, and Xiu Clan were an organic wholeness. Without the direction of these wise power elders, the deputy commanders clearly understood that they weren't capable enough to lead the Yu Dynasty to another prosperous era.

They had nothing but violence.

Therefore, nearly a hundred deputy elders rushed out while growling, as they launched full strikes towards the destructive weapon.

Yemo Tian took the soul-retrieving dew and laughed wildly as he looked at these deputy elders in excitement and shouted, "So scary, truly scary! The powers I sensed from you are really scary. But, would they be useful? As long as I still have this destructive weapon, I will be invincible! In the whole Pan Gu world, I am the most powerful being!"

With blood flowing out of his ears, Yemo Tian growled hysterically. His erect eye suddenly grew wider as he merged his soul and spirit completely with the destructive weapon.

On the destructive weapon's back, wings slowly spread. The air collapsed, being ceaselessly devoured by the destructive weapon. The eight arms of the weapon grew longer and longer. In every palm of it, a dark light condensed into a sharp, intensely shaking sword light.

Yemo Tian's skin split, exposing his muscles. He screamed with a hoarse voice while the eight sword lights wove into a dark light web and descended on those deputy elders.

Ji Hao didn't get involved in the fight between Yemo Tian and those deputy elders. He rushed to those falling power elders and wielded a small flag held in his hands. Beside these elders, a gate thickly embossed with ghost portraits suddenly emerged, wide open.

Streams of Netherworld power condensed into chains, flying out of the gate as they coiled around the severely wounded power elders, forcibly dragging them into the dark, scary gate.

These elders could still move. They struggled desperately and howled hoarsely, burning their spirit blood as they generated terrifying powers to fight against the gate.

Chapter 1436: Ever-changing

No one clearly witnessed Ji Hao kill Yamo Di, but when he sold tens of power elders directly to the Netherworld right in front of the others, countless people saw it.

Yemo Tian paused for quite a while, then began laughing, even dancing in the crystal cockpit, seeming to be insane. He failed to see Ji Hao's face. No one did. But still, Yemo Tian hysterically applauded for what Ji Hao did.

"Nicely done! Who is it? Who? Who is dealing with these old dudes? Carry on! Work harder! Kill them all! I will award you! I will award you a lot! When I become the divine ruler of Pan Gu world and all surrounding worlds, you will receive my sweet rewards!"

Yemo Tian laughed so hard that his eyes and nose were even twisted.

Earlier, Yemo Tian controlled the destructive weapon with all of his power and launched a wave of strike. That was the best he could do at the stage. But still, thirty-three power elders were only badly injured, not killed.

Severely injured, almost killed, it was nothing to these old non-humankind beings who had been plundering Pan Gu world for countless years. No one knew how many powerful magic drugs they had, that could heal them perfectly at any time.

The tens of power elders didn't frighten him, neither did nearly a hundred deputy elders. However, all non-humankind beings were deeply aware of one fact — The strongest fighting capacity could only be released when the powers of Yu Clan and Jia Clan were combined. The battle effectiveness delivered by the perfect cooperation between a Yu Clan noble and a Jia Clan warrior would be at least three times, even five times better than their individual combat effectiveness.

If the tens of surviving power elders successfully joined hands with those deputy elders, Yemo Tian wouldn't be able to endure their attacks anymore, no matter how arrogant he was. Therefore, seeing an invisible person sneakily attacking these badly wounded power elders, Yemo Tian burst into wild laughter, even though he was still vomiting blood.

Eighteen deputy elders immediately gave up on attacking Yemo Tian. Instead, they roared thunderously and marched towards Ji Hao, bringing eighteen hurricanes.

They still failed to locate Ji Hao. But based on the widely opened bronze gate in the midair and their rich fighting experiences, they found the most possible location of his. Eighteen brightly shining sharp weapons shrilly swished across the air and accurately lunged towards Ji Hao.

"Impressive!" Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and praised sincerely.

These Jia Clan elders couldn't even see him, yet, they managed to launch such accurate attacks. Indeed, these deputy elders were extraordinary.

Countless chains tied up the thirty-three violently struggling power elders. They screamed and howled, but the tremendous power from the Netherworld world dragged them inch by inch into that dark realm.

Ji Hao sensed Netherworld Hierarch's excitement. Same as Yemo Tian, he was insanely excited — Thirty-three badly wounded powerful non-humankind elders, thirty-three Sun and Moon stage powerful beings! This might be his greatest harvest in all these years.

Safely, Ji Hao sensed the vibration of Netherworld Hierarch's soul power. After all, those were thirty-three powerful non-humankind elders. When they combined their powers to fight back, it wasn't easy for Netherworld Hierarch to forcibly drag them into the Netherworld.

Those power elders were badly wounded indeed. But, their injuries made them the most dangerous beings. At the moment, Netherworld Hierarch could easily kill these power elders, but in comparison, dragging them into Netherworld alive was far more difficult.

Netherworld Hierarch anxiously told Ji Hao that no one should interrupt him right now.

The attacks launched by the eighteen deputy elders were aimed at Ji Hao's body. He made himself invisible with the extreme negative power. Therefore, only five-percent of the powers released by these deputy elders could actually land on Ji Hao at most. But without a doubt, the rest ninety-five would strike on the gate behind Ji Hao, which led to the Netherworld.

Ji Hao smiled and shook his head. Eighteen long hair fell off his scalp. He sent a strand of spirit power into each hair, then let a strong wave of energy out of his mouth into the eighteen hairs. Countless tiny spell symbols flashed across on the hair as the surrounding natural powers began surging into them like a flood.

"Yah...Dai!"

With a resonant growl, eighteen brightly glowing clones of Ji Hao burst from the eighteen hair. They flashed across the sky, as swiftly as ghosts, and instantly dashed to the eighteen deputy elders, launching heavy palm strikes straight to their faces.

The eighteen deputy elders shouted out in shock.

The felt that the things coming at their faces weren't palms but enormous sharp axes, swishing shrilly and hacking down along mysterious tracks, seeming even to cut the world into pieces.

What made these deputy elders with extra rich fighting experiences despair, even terrified, was that they realized that the fingertips of these palms descending towards their heads were pointing at their weakest body parts, the weaknesses that they

would never expose during any battle!

Their every move was well-designed and practiced. Through countless cruel, bloody fights, they created the fighting styles that suited themselves the most. They dared to swear with their lives that their moves did not have weaknesses...Even if the weaknesses did exist, no one would be able to discover them on constantly changing battlefields, because the time would never be enough for their enemies.

Nevertheless, the weaknesses of all eighteen of them were discovered by the enemy simultaneously. The enormous axe-like palms came fiercely at their weaknesses, along with a world-destroying power.

The rich fighting experiences of these deputy elders had now become their largest burden. After they realized that Ji Hao had discovered their weaknesses, they were immediately shocked and frightened by the dreadful power delivered by the eighteen palms.

'We're dead!' Their heads were smashed, their bodies were torn apart, and their souls were crushed; based on their experiences, their brains automatically pictured these scary results.

They dropped their weapons while their heavy armors automatically disintegrated, flying away from their bodies. The eighteen deputy elders gave up on attacking. Instead, they drew back and ran away from Ji Hao at their highest speed.

The strongest, most experienced two deputy elders sank deeply into the imagination generated by Ji Hao's attack. Based on their current powers and former experiences, they simulated tens of thousands of ways to defend themselves against this strike in their heads within a moment. But, the results were all the same, that they failed and were crushed.

Suddenly, blood spurted out of their mouths. Their eyes dimmed down, as their souls were trapped by the great power of Dao delivered by Ji Hao's attack, and were badly injured.

Ji Hao laughed out loud as his long hair fluttered in the sky. Tens of more hair fell off from his head and became tens of clones that roared and dashed out.

That was a shape-shifting magic he learned from Priest Hua's embryo of evolvement that he had been casting.

Chapter 1437: Polo Do Changed

Infinite variety was Priest Hua's greatest magic. With Priest Hua's power and cultivation, he could truly create billions of clones to cover the whole world, within a single moment, and with a single thought.

Ji Hao was surely far weaker than Priest Hua. By draining himself, he created seventy-two clones with his long hair. Each clone was created from a trace of his soul and a wisp of his spirit power, based on which, the clone absorbed a giant amount of natural powers to grow a physical body under the effect of a special magic. Each clone had three-percent of Ji Hao's power.

At this stage, Ji Hao had basically attained a Pan Gu body, and had reached the seventh turn of the cultivation method with nine turns. With pure physical strength, he could now rival any Supreme-level powerful being without falling into any disadvantage. A clone of Ji Hao only had three percent of his power, but still, each clone had a basic-level Pan Gu body, and the strength equaled to the sixth turn of the cultivation method with nine turns.

Activating the sixth turn of the cultivation method with nine turns, the physical strength of a clone of Ji Hao could be improved by sixty-thousand and four-hundred percent. This meant that a clone of Ji Hao could still fight against an average-level Sun and Moon Stage powerful being with pure physical strength.

With a slight carelessness, the eighteen deputy commanders were surrounded by Ji Hao's clones within a blink of an eye. The seventy-two clones made a formation according to the seventy-two fierce natural stars with a nature of earth and incanted a secret spell in chorus. The spell was passed down from an ancient star king from the heaven, and was secretly taught by the Magi Palace. In the sky, natural stars dazzled one after another. The seventy-two fierce stars with a nature of earth released bright streams of

starlight and merged into the bodies of Ji Hao's clones.

The hazy silhouettes of seventy-two ferocious-looking creatures emerged above the heads of Ji Hao's seventy-two clones. Within a twinkling of an eye, these creatures transformed into seventy-two ancient gods in golden armors as they floated in the air, swinging their sharp weapons towards the eighteen deputy elders.

Without paying attention to the fight happening between his clones and the eighteen deputy elders, Ji Hao stayed by the bronze gate of the Netherworld, violently kicking and punching those power elders, who had been struggling desperately with the last bit of their strengths. Ji Hao broke their bones and made them vomit blood and howl.

They were already wounded so severely. Their whole bodies were wrapped in Netherworld power streams, and they were being dragged inch by inch into that scary realm. This was already awful enough. Yet, Ji Hao beat them savagely and made them scream in pain. Once again, they were pulled much further towards the Netherworld.

Ji Hao beat them heavily. Watching these power elders vomit blood under Ji Hao's heavy punches and seeing Ji Hao break a big half of their bones, Netherworld Hierarch's let out his pressing voice from the bronze gate, "My little friend, little friend, show mercy! Leave some life-force inside their bodies! If you crush them all, how long would it take me to repair their bodies?"

Ji Hao laughed, then grabbed an unconscious power elder and threw him into the Netherworld.

Yemo Tian laughed as well. The destructive weapon raised its eight long arms, wielding the eight dark light swords as he fought fiercely against the tens of deputy elders. The eight dark light swords remained perfectly unharmed, while the sharp weapons held in the hands of the deputy elders buzzed shrilly. Large and deep cracks were left on those weapons.

Ji Hao's seventy-two clones laughed out loud as well. They constructed a 'fierce earth star devil-slaying sky formation', which was a powerful formation from the ancient heaven, as he surrounded the eighteen deputy elders and launched a savage wave of strikes. The starlight condensed into all kinds of weapons, leaving countless bone-deep slashes on the bodies of the eighteen deputy elders. Because of the formation, the eighteen deputy elders couldn't even release ten percent of their powers.

"Polo Do!" Shrieked a power elder who was still struggling, "What are you doing? Go! Activate the final defense! Eliminate all enemies of our kind...Only the final defense can save can rival this destructive weapon."

Standing on the last stair before the Highest Conference Hall, Polo Do bowed deeply to this power elder, who was stuck in a desperate situation, and said, "Dear elder, I can indeed access the core of the city defensive formation. But, to activate the final defense, I need the joint authorization of at least twelve power elders, added with my authority. That's the only way I can activate the final defense."

This power elder gave a resonant shout, opened his erect eye, and released a blood-red beam of light that flashed to Polo Do, leaving an arc in the sky.

The defensive screen of the Highest Conference Hall split open. The blood-red light beam accurately flew to Polo Do, who promptly seized it. Immediately, an erect blood-red eye emerged on the back of his hand.

The other thirty-two power elders who were still struggling before the bronze gate all shouted with bright and strong voices, opened their erect eyes, and released differently colored light beams to Polo Do, leaving beautiful arc traces in the sky.

"The final defense?" Yemo Tian yelled in both shock and rage, "What final defense? What final defense needs the authorization of

twelve power elders and a chief judge to be activated?"

Yemo Tian leaped up in fury. As he leaped, the defensive treasure leaped up as well. Nearly tangible dark ripples spread out, crushing all buildings in the surroundings. The dark ripples drained the life-force and spirit power of countless secret guards and non-humankind beings, turning their bodies into ashes, dissipating in the air.

As Poto Feili was going to die under the dark ripples, Ji Hao turned around. The Taiji creation cauldron released an invisible stream of light and swept across his body, easily dragging and sealing him in.

Yemo Tian was still growling ferociously. He was truly enraged.

Before Dishi Cha contacted him, before he knew about the great plan of Dishi Cha and his biological father, he was the noblest descendant of Yemo Family. He had access to all secret places in Liang Zhu City. That was his special right, brought by his noble identity!

Nevertheless, right now, right under his eyes, right in Liang Zhu City, he found a secret that he didn't know!

Yemo Tian felt humiliated. It was like he had carefully raised a girl as his future wife, but before the wedding, the girl suddenly brought back a one-year-old son of hers; that was how humiliated he was.

Turning away from those deputy elders, Yemo Tian rushed towards the Highest Conference Hall in fury. The eight long arms of the destructive weapon wielded the hundreds of meters long dark light swords and hacked violently on the defensive screen wrapped outside the hall.

Buzz! The defensive screen burst into a dazzling light. The round-shaped defensive screen was squeezed oval, as large clouds of dust rose into the sky. Surrounding the Highest Conference Hall, the

bases of all buildings collapsed, yet the hall itself remained perfectly undamaged.

Polo Do smilingly nodded to Yemo Tian, as a golden lotus slowly bloomed between his eyebrows.

With a weird, faint smile, Polo Do silently turned around and walked quickly to the front gate of the hall.

"Oi, what do you mean? Why is there a flower blooming on your head?" Yemo Tian screamed. By now, he couldn't even put together a sentence easily. Instinctively, he felt that the things were going out of control!

It seemed that other than his Glorious Domination and these old elders representing the Yu Dynasty Government, another force had stepped in?

What did they want?

Chapter 1438: The Hidden Worry of Destruction

A flower blooming on the head?

Ji Hao turned to Polo Do in confusion. Between Polo Do's eyebrows, a golden lotus had been spinning slowly, emitting a mysterious golden light that seemed to be sacred and miraculous.

"Priest Hua, your hand has reached so long!" murmured JI Hao.

Polo Do turned around with a faint, complicated smile, walking straight to the gate of the Highest Conference Hall.

A tremor went across Ji Hao's body. Hurriedly, he told Yu Mu, Feng Xing, and the others by using his spirit power about what had been happening over here. He reminded them to build teleporting formations to leave Liang Zhu City once anything unexpected happened.

The golden bridge flashed across the sky, then Ji Hao and his seventy-two clones disappeared simultaneously. As a quickly spinning swirl emerged on the defense screen of the Highest Conference Hall, Ji Hao and his clones had already broken into the hall following a cloth-tearing noise. Whatever Polo Do was doing, as long as it was Priest Hua and Priest Mu's plan, Ji Hao didn't need a good reason to ruin it.

Ji Hao's seventy-two clones were gone all of a sudden. The eighteen deputy elders, who had been suffering their savage beating, paused. They turned around and stared at the destructive weapon, much similar to a group of mice staring at a cat.

"Leave Polo Do alone! Save us! Save us first!" screamed the few power elders by the gate of the Netherworld. They were the only ones who still had the strength to shout. More dark chains reached out from the Netherworld and coiled around their bodies like snakes, dragging them in with an even stronger force.

The group of deputy elders burst into a roar. Instead of attacking Yemo Tian, they marched towards the bronze gate in giant steps, raised their weapons, and hacked down towards those dark chains.

Followed by a series of sizzling noise, the chains broke immediately and became a dark mist. But, when these deputy elders raised their weapon again, the dark mist instantly coiled back together and recondensed into dark chains.

"Hehe." A strong, frosty sneer could be heard from the Netherworld. All of a sudden, two extremely sharp, tens of thousands of meters long beams of sword light dazzled from the Netherworld, along with the shrill cries of millions of ghosts. The eighteen deputy elders weren't prepared for this. They couldn't dodge, and as a result, their chests were penetrated at once.

Warm blood splashed as the eighteen deputy elders growled, flying backward while vomiting blood. What a terrifying power! When the two beams of sword light penetrated their chests, they sensed a boundless blood sea and countless twisted faces that were struggling and crying in it. Some of those faces drifting in the blood sea were even familiar to them.

They sensed death. They even felt that the two beams of sword light were death, or the meaning, the origin of death.

Their spirit blood was withering, and bones and tendons were softening. Their souls were like dead pigs which were slaughtered by butchers. The pain drilled straight into their souls, such that not even these experienced deputy elders could bear it. They howled in pain and retreated at their highest speed. They gave up on those power elders who needed help, and fled as fast as they could.

"Come back!" said the cold voice in the bronze gate. Hundreds of dark chains swished out of the gate and drowned the eighteen deputy elders like a flood.

If Ji Hao were still here, he would know that it wasn't

Netherworld Hierarch talking inside the gate. Instead, it was Netherworld Priest, the true ruler of the entire Netherworld. Thirty-three non-humankind power elders and eighteen deputy elders who sent themselves over, how could Netherworld Priest ever let such a large juicy piece of meat slip away from the corner of his mouth?

Ji Hao went through the defensive formation of the Highest Conference Hall, merging himself again into the air by using the extreme negative power. He followed closely behind Polo Do. Countless thoughts popped out in his mind, and the blueprints of a great number of formations he learned from Yu Yu emerged in his head, as he was pondering how to hinder Polo Do's action.

Killing him directly? But that would be the worst choice. The best way was controlling the core of the defense of Liang Zhu City through him, so that the entire city could be under Ji Hao's control. This would be much smarter than kidnapping the members of the twelve families in power and their appendant families.

With about ten secret guards, Polo Do hid his hands inside his sleeves as he slowly walked into the gate of the hall. Standing by the gate, he looked around, then smilingly waved his hand to Yemo Tian, who was still inside the destructive weapon.

The destructive weapon had been crazily attacking the defensive screen of the Highest conference hall, raising dazzling fire sparkles that seemed even like an eruption of a volcano. Clearly, based on the intensity of the weapon's attack, in a quarter of an hour tops, the defensive screen would be broken by the destructive weapon.

Nevertheless, deputy elders approached again and launched attacks on the destructive weapon. Blood had been flowing out of Yemo Tian's eyes, nose, mouth, and ears. To him, controlling the destructive weapon was indeed too demanding. This terrifying weapon could serve as his trump card at most, instead of his regular weapon.

Polo Do walked into the hall smilingly as he proceeded along the path in the middle for over three-hundred meters. In the middle of the hall, he stomped his foot loudly against the ground. In his hands, numerous erect eye marks glowed brightly. Next, a hundreds of meters wide part of the hall quaked slightly. Along with a series of creaking noise, this part of the hall sank down entirely.

Calmly standing in the middle of the hall, Polo Do abruptly asked the secret guard beside him, "Do you know why I 'betrayed' my own kind? I am a direct descendant of the Polo Family, one of the three chief judges of Yu Dynasty. I am in a high position. I possessed a great power, and I had a bright future. But, why did I betray?"

The group of guard glanced at each other and shook their heads.

What could they say? What did they dare to say?

"Because... I'm a wise man." Pointing at his head, Polo Do narrowed his head and continued, "All Polo Family people are wise, but without a doubt, I'm the wisest among them all. Therefore, I am deeply aware of the problems of Yu Dynasty, which is now at its golden age. I can see the possible destruction of Yu Dynasty. Many other people do too, but they pretend to see nothing.

"The destruction I mention won't be delivered by that powerful being descending from our world."

"The destruction I am foreseeing, is from Pan Gu world, from those people who led all living creatures and fought against us, back when we invaded this world. If our records are correct, Spirit Wa, Donggong, Ximu...As we know, they are the leaders of Pan Gu world living beings. But behind them, those mysterious beings are the truly terrifying ones, including the two Master Shifu."

"Back in that war, I can tell for sure that the two Master Shifu watched our people injure Spirit Wa, Donggong, and Ximu severely."

He frowned, then confirmedly nodded and continued, "Perhaps, the one who called himself Yu Yu, who killed countless of our people with a sword formation, he fought with no spare pains. But, all the rest watched the three leaders be injured seriously by our people."

"I've been simulating this scene in my head. What if these hidden, mysterious beings decide to fight us with all of their powers?"

Polo Do showed an obvious fear and despair on his face.

"I'd say we'd be doomed. Do you believe it?"

Chapter 1439: Immortal Spirit

"We will all die."

The floor sank slowly as Polo Do continued with a deep voice, "If we don't make any changes, and stay so proud and arrogant, we will all die."

The group of secret guards remained silent, looking at Polo Do in confusion.

Polo Do was a wise man. He had the wisdom, and a wide range of knowledge. Therefore, he became one of the three chief judges of Yu Dynasty. Through the records kept in the Yu Dynasty, he could look back into the history and see the unknown facts through the mist.

But, these secret guards were different. They served the Highest Court; they scouted in darkness. They were trusted by Polo Do, and followed him to under Priest Hua and Priest Mu' guidance. But, they weren't capable of understanding the hidden worry in Polo To's heart.

"Never mind, you won't understand anyway." Polo Do waved his hands and said blandly, "Anyway, you can simply believe that I am on the right path. Under my lead, you are now on the most right path. That's all you need to know."

The ground quaked slightly, as the floor had already sunken down for about ten-thousand meters. In the surroundings, the wall was thick, cast from an alloy and embossed with complicated, beautiful patterns. Strong power streams speedily flowing in thin, curved grooves on the wall. All patterns on the wall glowed dazzlingly, looking like countless fireflies dancing happily.

Ji Hao floated in the air, less than three meters away from Polo Do. His foot tips were three-inches above the ground. He restrained all of his powers, as he worried that Polo Do might have

some unknown abilities to discover him. His focus wasn't all on Polo Do. Instead, he fixed his eyes on Polo Do's boots, and a dark-golden peal inlaid in one boot of his.

Polo Do raised his hands. Those erect eye marks he gained from the power elders shone blindingly. Before his face, the air rippled like water, while he said something with a low voice.

Ji Hao's ear twitched slightly. What Polo Do spoke out was in the original language of Yu Clan. It should be an ancient type of language from Pan Yu world. Ji Hao had learned some of the modern language of the Yu Clan back in the Magi Palace, but he failed to understand what Polo Do said just now. He recognized a few syllables, but still, he didn't understand a word.

A door of light emerged before Polo Do. He carefully stood outside the shining door, reaching his hands into it. Along with a series of creaking noise, Polo Do dragged a strange machine out of the door. The machine was covered in gears and pull rods. He quickly moved a few gears, then pulled a few rods.

Crack! The ground before Polo Do's feet suddenly split up, exposing stairs leading down while glowing dimly. Polo Do pushed the complicated machine back into the gate of light, then the door closed silently.

On the stairs, fist-sized spell symbols sparkled one after another. He turned around and said something to the group of secret guards. Under his order, the group of secret guards pulled out their weapons and guarded around the entrance of the stairs as Polo Do walked downstairs alone.

Ji Hao followed behind Polo Do, with the seventy-two clones transformed into wisps of smoke, coiling around his long hair as he silently walked down as well.

Walking down the stairs for a while, a broad space appeared in the front. Soon, Ji Hao saw a giant door, which was purely golden, inlaid with hundreds of thousands of gemstones, shining

splendidly and luxuriously. Thirty-six brilliantly glowing, translucent, nearly ten-meters-tall man-shaped puppets guarded by the door in a straight line. Judging by the power vibration released from these puppets, they were even stronger than Sun and Moon powerful beings. Seeing Polo Do walking over, the eyes of these puppets shone simultaneously.

Buzz! Strong energy waves were released from these puppets, which twisted the sky and disordered the natural powers. Under the effect of the energy waves, Polo Do quivered, even having his eyes bulge out of his eye sockets.

He hurriedly reached out his hands and let the erect marks on his hands glow. The lights in the eyes of these puppets dimmed, then they moved away towards both sides and created a path for him.

Polo Do walked to the golden door and pressed his hands on a pair of three-inches-deep handprints on the door, then slightly pushed. Next, the hundreds of meters tall, tens of meters thick golden door silently slid open, exposing the tremendous hemisphere-shaped space behind it.

One-hundred and twenty-four, ten-miles-long, colorful light spheres floated in the air, rotating along certain tracks, sometimes slow and sometimes fast like stars that never changed.

Inlaid in the wall of this hemisphere space were over one-hundred thousand statues of legendary creatures, such as dragons, phoenixes, Qilins, Yaci, and Chaos beasts. These statues must be connected with the immense earth meridians under the city, as each statue had a widely opened mouth, from which, dense and pure streams of natural powers had been flowing into the one-hundred and twenty-four light spheres

Inside the hemispherical space, countless different sized light screens were faintly visible. From the screens, one could clearly see the real-time images of every street, every alley, even every corner of the city.

Without a doubt, this place was not only the core of the defense of Liang Zhu City, but it was also a monitoring center for the Highest Conference Hall to watch over the whole city.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye and saw countless light beams that were thinner than hair connecting these one hundred and twenty four light spheres. The light beams twisted in the air, forming countless complicated patterns and spell symbols that seemed to be parts of a formation.

A large number of translucent figures wearing translucent grey robes had been drifting airily in this hemispherical space, which was over five-hundred-miles in diameter. When Polo Do pushed the door open and walked in, these figures only cast a glance at him, without greeting him or saying a word to him.

"Eh? Judge Polo Do...This place doesn't seem to under the control of the Great Court."

A strong, deep voice came from the air, sounding like two iron blocks clanging against each other.

Ji Hao raised his head and saw tens of transparent figures descending from the air. Each of them were over fifteen meters tall, and had been releasing a surprisingly strong soul energy vibration. Some of them were Yu Clan people, but a big half of them were Xiu Clan people.

They weren't living beings.

They were the souls of dead non-humankind beings, preserved with some sort of magic!

No one knew what kind of magic did they cast on themselves. They were all in a state of spirit, which was supposed to be their weakest state. However, their souls were so powerful that they even stunned Ji Hao. They were weak souls, but the original soul power of each of them was at least ten times greater than that of those power elders outside!

If one could build them suitable new physical bodies, they physically would also be ten times more powerful than those power elders!

Suddenly, Ji Hao understood why the Westin Family people and the representatives from the other Yu Clan families were so eager for the blood sea ganodarma back in the Kui Gate.

In his lower belly, the five-colored cauldron quaked slightly. Ji Hao clearly sensed the cauldron's appetite for these souls.

Chapter 1440: Great Liberty Arrived

Polo Do reached out his hands. The erect eye marks given by the elders glowed in his hands. He gave a deep shout, and the group of souls glanced at him simultaneously, then started swift movements.

Led by thirty-six Xiu Clan souls, countless non-humankind souls floated in the air.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye. He saw that these souls floated in the convergent points of the extra thin light beams that only his erect eye could see. As the thin light beams penetrated their bodies, these souls began glowing. They moaned with deep voices, as the strong natural powers flowed through their bodies, bringing them a deep pressure.

But apparently, converted by the formation based on this space, the natural powers were quite beneficial to these souls.

As the natural powers flushed through their bodies over and over again, these souls turned clearer and clearer, while their eyes shone brighter and brighter.

Buzz! Uncontrollably, the arms of all souls spread, while their long hair fluttered in the air like aquatic plants in the bottom of a river. Light streams rose from their hair, and a tremendous energy wave even made the entire space start twisting.

Inlaid in the wall, the statues of legendary creatures opened their mouths even wider, letting out stronger, brighter light streams, and pouring into the one-hundred and twenty-four light spheres. In the core of the formation, a powerful Xiu Clan soul, which had tens of thousands of light beams going through his body, cast a spell with a high-pitched voice. Following his voice, a three-feet wide, purple colored crystal ball emerged in the air, in front of Polo Do.

Countless tiny spell symbols had been rolling in the crystal ball, connected by the thin light beams. The floor of this space was suddenly brightened. As the light grew brighter and brighter, dark lines emerged on the floor, forming a gigantic formation blueprint.

Through the intensely shaking floor,Ji Hao sensed the earth meridians boiling and roaring underground like countless infuriated dragons. The final defense of Liang Zhu City was activated. By now, everything was under the control of the purple crystal ball floating in front of Polo Do.

Polo Do pressed his hands on the crystal ball. As a tremor went through his body, a dazzling light drilled into his body from the crystal ball. His body shone all of a sudden; the blinding light shone from every single pore of his.

Ji Hao couldn't sense Polo Do anymore. The sense of power coming from his body turned faint and weak, connected with the formation in this space. In this very moment, Polo Do was Liang Zhu City, and Liang Zhu City was an extension of Polo Do's body.

Among the ten trusted secrets guards of Polo To who guarded on the outside, a tall and slim one abruptly took off his mask and slightly twisted his neck. The others immediately looked at him and asked, "Number ninety-three, what are you doing?"

Number ninety-three gave a weird smile. A strange, dim light flashed across his eyes, which froze the other secret guards immediately. They sensed fear and despair.

They couldn't help but look at Number ninety-three's eyes, which had turned purely dark. His pair of eyes were like a bottomless black hole, devouring their souls and life-force.

Followed by a sizzling noise, dim light streams drifted out from the eyes of the other secret guards and flew into the eyes of Number ninety-three. Number ninety-three gave a twisted grin silently while trembling. Gradually, a flowing seven-colored light emerged on his skin. Within the span of three to five breaths, the

bodies of the other secret guards were drained and dried. Their withered bodies fell heavily on the ground and shattered into pieces.

Number ninety-three slightly shook his body, laughed with a hissing voice, "An interesting place! The final defense of the entire Liang Zhu City? If I kill people with it, how many souls can I take?"

Along with a series of cracking noise, the soft armor on his body split up inch by inch. He calmly smiled while being naked and walked downstairs step by step, soon coming to the golden door.

The eyes of the thirty-six puppets shone suddenly. Together, they made a step forward and pressed a strong energy wave on Number ninety-three. A faintly sensible power vibration spread from these puppets. In a special way, they forced Number ninety-three to show a pass.

"But, I'm not allowed in here!" Number ninety-three laughed, then his body suddenly disintegrated. From the collapsing body, a meters long, colorful sphere of light burst, glisteningly hovered around the thirty-six puppets. The bright light in these puppets' eyes was dimmed instantly, then they thudded loudly against the ground one after another.

The energy waves releasing from these puppets were still incredibly strong, but they were already dead by now. All their spirits were taken away by the colorful light, that turned them into dead beings, which couldn't even move.

Faintly audible chuckles came from the colorful light as it flashed into the golden door at lightning speed.

Based on the golden door, which was inlaid with countless gemstones, incredibly powerful offensive formations were triggered one after another, releasing countless splendid light streams that poured down to the light sphere.

Like a phantom, the colorful light sphere was penetrated by the

light streams, but never harmed.

Polo Do had merged with the final defense of Liang Zhu City, and was getting familiar with all details of this enormous and complicated defense. Abruptly, he exclaimed in shock. Turned around, he saw the dazzling colorful light sphere.

A fist-sized golden lotus bloomed between his eyebrows. A golden light sphere circled around his body, wrapping him up tightly.

The colorful light sphere chuckled again and pounced on Polo Do. Amidst a beautiful rain of light, a colorful figure easily penetrated the golden light and drilled into Polo Do's forehead.

Polo Do shrieked. All of a sudden, his eyes turned multi-colored like gemstones. Even his skin was added with a faint layer of colorful light.

The souls in the formation screamed together, especially the strong ones. In chorus, they growled to ask, "Polo Do, what happened to you?"

Polo Do slightly trembled. A while later, he slowly raised his head with a weird smile and looked at those souls like a bloodthirsty wolf looking at a delicious rabbit, murmuring to himself with a hoarse voice, "So many souls? You are...too nice. Since you offered, I shall accept."

Laughing wildly, 'Polo Do' shouted, "Come, come, fresh, juicy souls! Become a part of me! I am Great Liberty, I will give you an immortal..."

"Eh? The people that colluded with this guy are still waiting outside?" Great Liberty curved up his mouth corners and said, "Let them in then!"

Chapter 1441: Earn Natural Award

Ji Hao cast a complicated glance at 'Polo Do'.

No, he wasn't Polo, one of the three chief judges of Yu Dynasty anymore. Instead, he was Great Liberty, a powerful sky devil, a scary being who devoured the creator of Pan Jia world.

Great Liberty pressed his hands on the crystal ball. His ten fingers flicked quickly as they brought up extremely thin light beams inside the crystal ball. The hemispherical space quaked slightly, as strong natural powers flooded in. Through the light screens floating in the hemispherical space, one could see that Liang Zhu City was changing largely.

In streets and alleys, ground sank, while thousands of meters tall divine towers rose from the ground. Each tower was wrapped in a hundreds of meters thick defensive screen. In the screen, lightning bolts dazzled and twisted unbridledly like countless tentacles. Especially around the Highest Conference Hall, the density of divine towers had reached an amazing degree. Every other mile, a divine tower stood straight from ground. All these divine towers were of different sizes. On the bases of these towers, countless differently sized spell symbols had been sparkling.

"Come on, let me see how powerful this so-called final defense is!" Great Liberty laughed, then slapped heavily on the crystal ball with both his hands. A wave of purple light immediately spread out in torrents.

Tens of approaching souls let out shrieks in shock and fear. Struck by the purple light, their bodies began flashing as they staggered backward. Cracks appeared on many of them, which made them look like broken porcelains.

"Polo Do...No, unknown creature, what do you want?" The soul of a Yu Clan elderly man shouted harshly, "Do you know how powerful our Yu Clan is? Not a single species ever dared to go

against us! Never!"

Great Liberty's eyes shone with a weird five-colored light. A refreshing aroma was released from his body, rising up through the air. Fist-sized white flowers bloomed in the air. He smilingly looked at this Yu Clan old man and chuckled, "What a coincidence! My kind has never found an opponent either."

Great Liberty laughingly shook his head and said, "It has been countless years. We destroyed so many cultures, devoured so many living beings. The origin of any world discovered by us will eventually be devoured, and the world would become nothing. Yu Clan? Pan Yu World? We will certainly take a chance to visit your world!"

Great Liberty grinned and scornfully glanced at these soul-state non-humankind beings, then said, "From the memory of this guy named Polo Do, I read your history. Did you conquer so many worlds? What a waste of time and strength. We never conquer, we only destroy."

He suddenly opened his three eyes, as thin beams of colorful light burst from Great Liberty's eye sockets, immediately penetrating these non-humankind souls. These strong souls screamed and twitched intensely, but were unable to defend themselves. Step by step, they were dragged towards Great Liberty.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. Sky devils were the destroyer of all souls. If these non-humankind souls still had their physical bodies, they wouldn't fail so easily. However, they were merely souls now. In Great Liberty's eyes, these souls were like a fresh piece of meat placed right in front of a starving wolf, a delicious meal served to him.

"Come on, come on, merge with me! Your souls are so strong, you have such a sweet aroma!" A large stream of saliva flowed down from Great Liberty's mouth corner, but he didn't care. He wiped his mouth with his sleeve, then laughed and said, "Come on,

become a part of me... Make your strengths mine!"

Great Liberty laughed in excitement, then giggled tremblingly, "Come on, come on... As long as I kill you, I can earn natural reward power! Haha, Pan Gu world will reward me for killing your people!"

Great Liberty raised his head and looked at the ceiling of the hemispherical space, then murmured, "You are the invaders of this world, so by killing you, my people and I...will actually be rewarded by the great Dao of this world. How amazing!" He seemed to take a great pleasure in each word he said.

"With enough natural reward power, the great Dao of Pan Gu world will no longer suppress my power. Then, I will be able to release all my power in Pan Gu world!" Great Liberty trembled slightly, with a dangerous light sparkling in his eyes, "As long as I can release all my power, my people...Hehe, my old enemies will certainly be so surprised when I devour them!"

"Great Freedom, Great Bliss, Great Elation...They're hiding, but I can feel them. They are right here, in this world." Great Liberty laughed happily, "As long as I devour them, I will be able to evolve to a higher level. I will have a hundred, a thousand, even ten-thousand times greater power."

"Then, even if the great Dao of this world will keep suppressing me, I will still be able to devour all living creatures in this world! I will reach the top, equaling the Earliest Ancestor!"

Great Liberty's face twisted quickly as he murmured, "To a supreme being like that, all worlds in the Chaos are preys, and all living beings in the universe are foods."

Ji Hao suddenly had an idea. 'Great Liberty, you had such a good plan.' Thought Ji Hao. Meanwhile, his heart missed a beat. 'Damn you! If you succeed, Pan Gu world might really encounter an unprecedented crisis.'

Tens of non-humankind souls were dragged to Great Liberty, screaming in fear. Great Liberty smilingly twitched his nose. Like a food-seeking wild dog, he put his nose near those souls and carefully sniffed their smells.

In the meanwhile, a golden lotus gradually bloomed on Great Liberty's finger, then transformed into four extremely thin golden light beams, spreading towards the east, north, south, and west.

Great Liberty gently pointed his fingers on the purple crystal ball. From the light screens in the air, one could see that hundreds of divine towers near the Highest Conference Hall dazzle simultaneously with a blinding light. The light struck on the bodies of the deputy elders who had been attacking Yemo Tian.

Those nearly a hundred deputy elders didn't see this coming. Their armors exploded, and their bodies were almost torn apart by the fierce attack from divine towers. They fell from the sky, with dense black smoke puffing up from their bodies. They thudded on the ground and twisted, without being able to move for a long while.

"Come on, merge with me!" Great Liberty smilingly spread his arms, widely opened his mouth, and inhaled deeply towards the nearest soul.

Ji Hao silently showed up behind Great Liberty and raised the Pan Gu bell high, smashing violently on the back of his head.

"Holy sky devil, no one can have too much natural reward, right? So please, become a part of my natural reward!"

The bell rang resoundingly and resonantly, while Great Liberty's body collapsed.

Chapter 1442: Invite them to the City

Outside Liang Zhu City, the dragon man was holding a scroll made from linden leaves, reading while slowly shaking his head.

On the cyan-colored linden leaf scroll, tiny golden characters had been emitting wisps of golden light. Every time the dragon man read an interesting part, a stream of golden light would rise from the scroll and transform into an inches long dragon, hovering around his fingers.

Hundreds of small golden dragons had been hovering around his hands, from which, a strong dragon power had been continuously releasing. Standing beside the dragon man, Dishi Jin was very jealous. With admiration and passion, he looked at the dragon man's pair of purely golden, flawless hands, that looked like gold statues, his eyes filled with longing.

A golden beam of light flashed over from Liang Zhu City, and the dragon man abruptly raised his head. His left hand glowed faintly, caught the golden light beam.

Pop!

The golden light blasted on the dragon man's fingertips and generated a basin-sized golden lotus, spinning slowly. Polo Do's voice came from the lotus.

"We made it, my four brothers! Please enter the city now! Do not let anyone escape!" 'Polo Do' sounded fairly proud and calm.

"We made it! We've earned a great credit!" The dragon man leaped straight up. His square, serious face now burst into a brilliant grin, like ice melting in a warm spring breeze. "Haha, my disciples, follow me into Liang Zhu City and capture all non-humankind monsters in the city! Kill anyone who dares to resist!"

Breathing deeply, the dragon man shouted, "We will receive an immeasurably great amount of natural reward power for what we

did this time. You should be able to enhance your cultivation, and you will be protected by the natural fortune. In the future, through severe cultivation, your powers will soar. One day, you will live a free, immortal life, with infinite happiness!"

Wielding his sleeve, the dragon man took out a bowl with his left hand and carried a staff with his right hand as he walked up to the head of his mount, a flying dragon, with large steps. The dragon was coiled around a rock in sleep. As the dragon man stepped onto its head, it raised its head and roared resonantly, then made a full-strength leap towards the sky. With its four feet treading on a cloud, it carried the dragon man, flying to the city.

Dishi Jin breathed deeply as well. Looking at his own hands, he murmured to himself, "What's done is done. There's no reason to turn back. I chose the right path. The Dishi Family is rotten. We can only burn the sins of the family with the red lotus fire, so that the family can have a chance to be reborn. I, Dishi Jin, will be the great ancestor of the new Dishi Family, which will be tens of thousands of times stronger than the old one!"

Shouting towards the sky, Dishi Jin pulled out his sword and pointed at the city. Then, he raised his left hand, holding a meters long flag. A silk flag with a cyan lotus painted on it fluttered in the wind. Dishi Jin raised the large flag with solid efforts and followed closely behind the dragon man to Liang Zhu City with giant steps.

"Whoo-hah!" While growling, millions of human warriors from Tusk Basin began moving in perfectly ordered arrays. They approached Liang Zhu City like strong metal walls.

Wearing heavy armors and holding sharp blades, these human warriors were slaves in the mine. Their eyes were burning, and they had been praying in low voices. They stomped their feet against the ground as loudly as they could, gasping quickly and heavily while running towards the city. They quaked the ground and the mountains with all their strengths, making the earth buzz. Their thunderous footsteps even vibrated the sky and scared away

all living creatures in the surroundings.

Some of these human warriors were sent to Tusk Basin in the recent years. They roared like beasts, with their blood boiling inside their bodies like surging torrents. They couldn't wait to break into the city to channel their fury, to take revenge for themselves, for what they had suffered all these years.

But, more human warriors had lived their whole lives in the dark mine. Their families existed in the mine, generation after generation, even back to tens or hundreds of generations. Their ancestors were captured by the non-humankind and sent to Tusk Basin, then never left.

Till this day, these human beings, who were born as slaves for generations, had never seen the green mountains and rivers, the blue sky, and the white clouds. They never laid an eye on their ancestral lands, and for many, many years, their people hadn't been returning to the ancestral lands to worship their ancestors.

In dark, moist mine tunnels, these human beings, who always lived as slaves and struggled to survive like bugs, kept every word passed down from their ancestors through generations in mind. Their ancestors kept telling them that they were human beings, along with their family names and the locations of their ancestral lands!

They clearly remembered the last words of their fathers and grandfathers, that they were human beings, and their ancestors used to live in beautiful mountains, surrounded by clear rivers. They were told that their ancestors used to walk under the blue sky with their chins up and chests out. Whenever it was, no matter how many generations had lived in this place, once they had a chance to escape from the Tusk Basin, they would seize it, rush out, and return to their homelands.

Roughly crafted clay jars were tied around the waists of these human warriors, whose families had been living in the mine

tunnels of Tusk Basin for generations, even tens or hundreds of generations. Contained in these differently sized jars were their ancestors' ashes.

The life in Tusk Basin was hard, and these dead ancestors couldn't even have their own jars. The ashes of fathers, grandfathers, great-grandfathers, great-great-grandfathers and even older ones were all mixed in these jars...The ancestors' ashes were all mixed in the jars. These warriors wanted to bring the ashes back to their ancestral lands and bury them in their family graveyards.

Even though these ancestors had drifted all their lives away from home like falling leaves, they still wanted their remains to be buried where their families originated from.

That was a small part, yet the strongest and most precious part of the spirit of the humankind. It might be not worth mentioning, but it created the humankind.

But before that!

These human warriors, who had clay jars tied around their waists, gripped their weapons tightly. They breathed like angry bulls, and their nostrils expanded because of the excitement. Before they sent the ashes of their ancestors back to the ancestral lands, which was imprinted deep in their souls, they would first make the non-humankind monsters pay their debts.

Their ancestors, their parents, all died in the dark, moist mine tunnels like bugs, miserably, and without any dignity. But, why could those non-humankind monsters enjoy endless luxury in such a magnificent city?

This was Pan Gu world. This world belonged to human beings!

Human beings died in mine tunnels without dignity, while non-humankind beings stood high above the humankind, enjoying their lives? These human warriors knew very less about general

principles, but they knew that since their ancestors had already died in sorrow, the non-humankind beings could no longer live the lives they liked!

The anger rose from their hearts, and generated an endless intent of killing.

Dense dark mist floated above the heads of millions of human slaves. That was the hatred accumulated in the past countless years. Soon, the dark mist turned red with the color of the killing intent, drifting above the tremendous array like a giant flag.

The dragon man, the tiger man, the lion man, and the mammoth man, each led a ferocious army like this and marched into Liang Zhu City in a formidable, unstoppable way.

Chapter 1443: Great Liberty Dies

Above the Highest Conference Hall, the destructive weapon transformed into a dark laser under the control of Yemo Tian, whose face was covered in blood. Flashing across the sky at an unimaginably high speed, it bumped into the defensive light of the hall over and over again.

Divine towers shone brightly, while strong natural powers had been surging into the defensive formation of the Highest Conference Hall. Yemo Tian bumped more and more violently, yet the defensive screen grew thicker and thicker, stronger and stronger. By the end, the Highest Conference Hall was surrounded by an iceberg-like, crystalline circle of light. The destructive weapon hit against it and generated a series of tinkling noise that sounded like two iron blocks clanging against each other. Waves of dark ripples released from the destructive weapon flattened all buildings around the hall, but no matter how many times it tried, it failed to break the thick defensive screen.

The final defense of Liang Zhu City was activated. Yemo Tian couldn't possibly break this final defense, which was built with countless years of severe efforts, unless he promoted himself into the Sun and Moon stage and gained a better control of the destructive weapon.

Vomiting blood, Yemo Tian cursed Polo Do with the worst language he knew. Like him, the group of deputy elders had also been cursing Polo Do, a traitor. Divine Towers dazzled and sent down beams of light with different power natures, falling like a rain as they struck on the bodies of these deputy elders. These deputy elders were nearly torn apart, and quite a few of them were even dying.

By now, even a pig could understand that Polo Do had betrayed his own kind! He controlled the final defense of Liang Zhu City, then used the destructive power of it to attack the deputy elders!

"Traitor!" A deputy elder growled hoarsely, "Polo Family nerds! You call yourself the wisest beings in the world, but why didn't you see through the hearts of Polo Do?"

A meters thick thunderbolts descended and landed accurately on this deputy elder. His armor suddenly shone, but once a thin defense screen emerged around his body, the armor was shattered amidst the thunderbolts. The half-foot-thick armor was blown into pieces, and the skin and muscles of this deputy elder were burned black. He thudded loudly against the ground, with black smoke puffing out of his mouth.

"Turning against each other? That I like!" From the bronze gate of the Netherworld, Netherworld Priest laughed brightly, as if he was happy to see this happening. Thumb-sized dark chains clanged against each other, swishing out of the gate and swiftly tying up these wounded deputy elders.

"All good materials! I can't let you be destroyed just like this. Be obedient and come to my place. I can let you live as long as the world, the sun, and the moon last!" Netherworld Priest laughed quite delightfully, sounding like a little boy had his eyes on a giant pile of candy. One could even sense his excitement and happiness from the bronze gate.

The dark chains had been shaking intensely, as the tens of deputy elders roared in rage, struggling madly. But, they were dragged into the Netherworld step by step. Followed by a series of sizzling noise, divine towers in the surroundings released another wave of thunderbolts, worsening these deputy elders' injuries and weakening their strengths to fight against the Netherworld Priest.

"Polo Do...I swear, I will chop you into a thousand pieces!" Seeing the bronze gate right before their faces, and the strong Netherworld power already drilling slowly into their bodies, a few deputy elders howled in despair.

Yemo Tian was laughing hysterically. He laughed so hard that he

could barely breathe, as blood had been spurting out of his mouth. Even these deputy elders had to suffer like this? He continued attacking the defensive screen of the Highest Conference Hall, showing no sign of helping.

Bloody old things! They attacked Yemo Tian earlier. So now, Yemo Tian wanted them to suffer!

Underground, in the hemispherical space, tens of non-humankind souls who had their chests penetrated by Great Liberty's colorful light beams screamed in fright. They saw Ji Hao show up behind Great Liberty, raise a three-meters tall colorless bell, and smash Great Liberty's body with one strike.

A gust of wind with a faint aroma blew out of the collapsing physical body, wrapping a barely visible man-shaped figure.

"Eh? You? Kid, you have infuriated me once again. Do you have to go against me? Marquis Yao Ji Hao, yeah? I found memories about you from many people' souls. You're an impressive lucky little kid!" Great Liberty's charming voice echoed through the entire space.

All of a sudden, a colorful silhouette dashed out of the wind. Great Liberty transformed into a faint colorful light stream, flashing to the spot between Ji Hao's eyebrows. He prepared to deal with Ji Hao the same way he beat Polo Do just now. He believed that as long as he could break into Ji Hao's body, he will be able to devour Ji Hao's soul.

"I was worrying that you may not try!" Ji Hao laughed out loud. He dimmed his defensive light and forcibly restrained the Taiji cloak, which had been attempting to activate itself to protect its owner, and let Great Liberty drill into his forehead. Immediately, he sensed a slight warmth from his body. Then, a warm, refreshing aroma came right at his face. Suddenly, he saw layers of illusions.

Great Liberty happily drilled into Ji Hao's body, instinctively heading to Ji Hao's spiritual space.

However, an intensive quake suddenly happened inside Ji Hao's body. Chaos power streams burst from every corner of his body, generating countless Chaos swirls that disordered the entire inner system of Ji Hao's body. Great Liberty was a powerful being, but at the moment, he couldn't even differentiate Ji Hao's head and feet, neither could he find Ji Hao's internal organs.

He wasn't able to locate Ji Hao's spiritual space. Instead, he could only drift along the Chaos power torrents.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you're capable, aren't you? Did you set such a strange seal inside your body? Have you been preparing your own body for an invasion of our kind? Hehe, you're indeed..." Great Liberty thought that Ji Hao prepared this long ago. He praised Ji Yao sincerely, "You're indeed smart! But, facing the supreme power of our kind, nothing can save you!"

"Merge with me, become a part of me! This is a great honor that I give you!" Great Liberty laughed, "You need to know that it's not just any lowly creature that can become a part of my power!"

At this time, the chaos swirls suddenly disappeared. Great Liberty laughed again, but after that, his stopped abruptly.

By the disorderly surging Chaos power inside Ji Hao's body, Great Liberty was brought to Ji Hao's lower belly. In there, a five-colored fire wrapped a tiny, five-colored cauldron, and from the cauldron, countless five-colored light streams reached out and entangled Great Liberty.

"What's this? What's this?" Great Liberty shrieked, "This...Bloody cauldron! How does it...How does it...?"

Before he finished, the cauldron let out a silvery buzz, then released a tremendous suction force. Without being able to resist, Great Liberty was pulled into the cauldron. Pure and great original soul power was then released from the cauldron, flowing into Ji Hao's embryo of Dao.

Ji Hao opened his eyes and walked to the purple crystal ball with large steps, which controlled the entire defense system of Liang Zhu City.

Chapter 1444: The Great Dao of True Water

When Ji Hao pressed his hands on the crystal ball, a tsunami of information flooded into his head. He even lost his eyesight when the terrifying torrents of information nearly blew up his head.

He saw everything in Liang Zhu City, and the area within thirty-million miles around this magnificent city. He could see the growth of each tree, the shaking of each grass, the crawling of each ant, the drifting of each grain of sand, even the moving track of each wisp of cloud in the sky, and the changing of each beam of sunlight. All information about the whole area surged into his head.

Once, with the sword formation Yu Yu lent him, Ji Hao was able to see and control everything within the area that had a radius of ten-thousand miles, like a god. The final defense system of Liang Zhu City was similar to Yu Yu's sword formation, and its coverage was thirty-million-miles in radius around Liang Zhu City.

Ji Hao even saw the specific circumstance of each person in the city. In Ji Hao's 'vision', the bodies of people in the city had been glowing with different colored lights. Their body temperatures, their blood flow, even their hormone secretion, Ji Hao knew everything.

Ji Hao gave a muffled snort in pain, as sharp blood streams spurted out of his mouth, ears, eyes, nose, and his erect eye. Instinctively, he took his hands away from the crystal ball. If Ji Hao weren't much stronger than ordinary human beings, the moment he pressed his hands on the crystal ball, the tremendous information flows would have blown his head up already. Being struck by the excessive information, even his soul would die instantly.

This was definitely a trap set by the non-humankind. Polo Do was undoubtedly much weaker than Ji Hao, in both terms of physical

strength and soul cultivation. But, he was able to freely control this crystal ball, while Ji Hao was injured by the strong information flows. This was a trap.

"Hah! The authorizations from those power elders!" Ji Hao wiped the blood on his mouth corners and grinned towards those flashing non-humankind souls.

"Indeed, power elder authorizations!" said a grey-haired Xiu Clan soul, pointing at Ji Hao, "Stupid barbarian, without those authorizations, you can't possibly control Liang Zhu City! This is our final defense that we spent years of efforts on!"

Pausing for a second, this Xiu Clan soul laughed, "I'm curious though, how did you break in? Ah, every generation is worse than the older one. Stupid kids out there, they actually let a barbarian in the Highest Conference Hall! They must be punished, must be punished!"

Ji Hao coldly glanced at these souls, opened his mouth, and released a colorful light stream. Tens of souls screamed in fear, as the colorful light wrapped them up and dragged them into Ji Hao's mouth.

"No, no, no, you can't do this! Are you trying to devour our soul? No, that's evil... That's..." The tens of souls howled desperately.

"I was the leader of the Red Sun three generations ago! I am the Red Sun Emperor, Piji Nuo! You can't do this to us! You can't!"

The five-colored cauldron buzzed intensely. The colorful light stream suddenly grew even more dazzling. The tens of powerful non-humankind souls, who were in important positions in the non-humankind society, were swallowed up by the cauldron. The five-colored flame rotated slowly around the cauldron, extracting an extremely pure original soul power from these souls.

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man silently showed up, nodded slowly, and began talking, "The power of these non-

humankind beings is from Pan Gu world. They died, yet weren't willing to go. So, they should give back their powers."

One-hundred and twenty-four giant light spheres spun slowly. Countless non-humankind souls who were 'inlaid' in the great formation, formed from thin light threads, watched Ji Hao 'swallow' tens of their friends. They all began screaming shrilly.

Being 'inlaid' in the air, with his body penetrated by hundreds of thousands of glistening, extra thin light beams, without being able to move, a Yu Clan soul stared at Ji Hao and shrieked, "Lowly barbarian! You should die! You should die a thousand times! You hurt our noble people! They were supposed to have a chance to reach immortality, but you ruined their last hope!"

Ji Hao raised his head, looked at him as he smiled frigidly and responded, "It'll be your turn soon, no rush!"

The faces of all souls paled. In panic, they looked at the Yu Clan soul who yelled at Ji Hao just now.

The final defense of Liang Zhu City was activated. These souls served as the core of the energy conversion for the great defensive formation. They could only passively adjust the flows of natural powers in the formation, without any strength to defend themselves. Facing Ji Hao's threat, they all saw their own death.

The Yu Clan soul remained silent. He and the other tens of souls, who had the highest position, quickly glanced at each other and exchanged their thoughts with complicated, subtle facial expressions.

Ji Hao remained silent as well. He vigilantly looked at the purple crystal ball, then pressed his hands on it once again. This time, Ji Hao was well prepared for it. His strong spirit power condensed into billions of thin threads as they classified and collected the torrents of information surging into his head from the crystal ball.

The information flows were still violent and tremendous, but the

threads condensed from Ji Hao's spirit power served like valves, perfectly adjusting the information traffic. His eyes sparkled. By now, in his eyes, Liang Zhu City had no more secrets in his eyes.

Tens of souls floating in the air without being able to move glanced at each other again. The Yu Clan soul abruptly laughed viciously and said, "Barbarian, do you really think the thirty-six idiots out there are the only guards of the most important defense hub of our city?"

Followed by a series of creaking noise, tens of doors suddenly appeared on the wall of this hemispherical space. From the doors, hundreds of figures darted out while emitting a strong sense of death. The energy waves released from these lifeless things were mighty, judging by which, they were only slightly weaker than those power elders and deputy elders outside.

"Barbarian, these are our bodies!" growled the Yu Clan soul, "Remember my name, I am the greatest ghost puppet master from the Nether Moon! I am Fan Ling, the greatest Nether Moon Emperor! These are warriors made from our bodies, the true final guards of the Highest Conference Hall!"

Hundreds of figures dove down. The strong senses of power released from their bodies merged together and pressed down to Ji Hao like a mountain.

Ji Hao pressed his hands on the crystal ball and remained perfectly motionless.

From the five-colored cauldron, he sensed something clearly. That was the great Dao of true water gained by Ji Hao from the true spirit of Pan Jia, which was devoured by Great Liberty. It was the highest natural law regarding 'water'.

At the moment, the twelve water worlds had been merging with Pan Gu world, and the water power had taken an absolute advantage in this world.

With a single thought of Ji Hao, a series of thunderous booms were generated, along with which, twelve layers of true water defensive screens roared up, overlapped, and shielded Ji Hao's whole body.

The hundreds of puppet warriors bumped violently against the true water defensive screens, stirred up clattering waves, then were swirled to a far distance away by the rapidly flowing water.

Ji Hao's embryo of Dao trembled intensely as it momentarily absorbed the great Dao of water from Pan Jia.

Chapter 1445: Full-Scale Assault

Beyond the sky, in the heaven...

Dishi Cha was holding a glass of wine, sitting on the throne of the Central Divine Emperor while quietly looking at a glowing mirror flowing in the middle of the hall. In the mirror, Yemo Tian was barking like a crazy dog, madly controlling the destructive weapon to damage the city with his overloaded body and soul. Dishi Cha saw every move of his.

"How's it?" Taking a sip of the top-grade divine wine, which had been stored in the heaven for countless years, Dishi Cha asked slowly.

Standing beside Dishi Cha, Chi You held crossed his arms before his chest, slightly twitched his nose, then sneered, "He's like a ruttish buffalo. No skills, no strategies... Is he really that great lord's son?"

Dishi Cha sighed and helplessly spread his hands, with his eyes sparkling with a dim light. "Great Supreme Blood Moon, he is indeed a son of that great lord. Perhaps, the bloodline of his mother is too lame..." He said.

Chi You smirked, but didn't respond. Dish Cha grinned, glanced at Chi You, and avoided continuing this sensitive topic as well. No matter how bad his performance was, Yemo Tian was that great lord's son. Dishi Cha preferred to be as cautious as he could towards any topic related to that great lord. Even though that great lord was still far, far away from Pan Gu world, who knew if he could hear the disrespectful conversation happening between Dishi Cha and Chi You?

"Take your people to Liang Zhu City. Everyone from the so-called Glorious Domination can die except Lord Yemo Tian... Not even a hair of his is allowed to be harmed." Dishi Cha waved his hands and said blandly, "Once he channels all his anger, bring him back."

Dishi Cha emptied his glass, clicked his lips in satisfaction, and continued, "A young man is eager to show his abilities to his father, I understand that...But, he can't risk his life for it."

Chi You smirked again, then walked out of the hall with large steps. He and Dishi Chao both clearly understood that by risking his own life, Yemo Tian was actually risking their lives too. If anything happened to Yemo Tian, both Dishi Cha and Chi You would be begging for death.

All buildings in Liang Zhu City had been shaking slightly, partially because of the fully activated defensive formation underground, as tremendous natural powers had been flowing rapidly in the energy system in the formation. On the other hand, it was also because the dragon man, the tiger man, the lion man, and the mammoth man led their armies marching into the city.

Guided by Dishi Jin and the other Yu Clan nobles who chose to follow the four men and were familiar with every street or alley in the city, disciples from the Cyan Lotus, White Lotus, Red Lotus, and Gold Lotus successfully took over all vital areas in the outer circle of the city.

Watchtowers were occupied, forts were stormed; the small number of non-humankind guards were drowned in endless crowds of human warriors. Countless human warriors with blood-red eyes crazily dragged surrendered non-humankind beings to the wildness and minced them. They were unbridled and insane.

These human slaves from the dark mine tunnels in Tusk Basin, Dark Mountain Mine, and other mines were like evil ghosts escaped from the hell. They rampantly marched into mansions of Yu Clan nobles and hysterically smashed everything they saw.

They shouted the names of Priest Hua and Priest Mu and the four men. They destroyed all buildings that crossed their eyes, and attacked all non-humankind beings they saw. They started fires and forced non-humankind beings out of their shelters. Taking

advantage of numbers, they rushed up and killed every panicked non-humankind being.

Lotus flags fluttered in the air as countless reverent disciples raised long poles. Hanging on the poles were Priest Hua and Priest Mu's portraits.

Numerous human warriors, whose hands were all covered in blood, carried the badly mutilated heads of non-humankind beings and piously kneeled to the portraits of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. They prayed, their gazes passionate and determined. They offered the heads of non-humankind beings to Priest Hua and Priest Mu. They kowtowed to Priest Hua and Priest Mu and worshipped them, much similar to ancient, ignorant human beings worshipping divine gods descending from the heaven!

Tsunami-like faith power condensed into golden-purple torrents, flowing into Priest Hua and Priest Mu' portraits. Unlike before, today, these human warriors, who had been slaughtering non-humankind beings, had boiling blood and agitated spirits. Their faith power was filled with strong emotions, which transformed into strands of colorful mist, mixing in the golden-purple faith power, also being absorbed entirely by the portraits of Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

The hatred of these human beings from mine tunnels towards the non-humankind was as deep as the ocean.

Today, they butchered countless non-humankind beings in a crazy, brutal way. Their moods were high to an extreme point, and their faith towards Priest Hua and Priest Mu was crazily solid.

At the moment, Priest Hua and Priest Mu were their world, the only thing to follow in their hearts. They were willing to give their lives to Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

The burning faith power was as thriving as a raging fire, such that the tens of thousands of large-scale portraits shone with a blinding light. On the portraits, Priest Hua and Priest Mu seemed

to be alive. They gazed at the burning Liang Zhu City and showed faint smiles on the corners of their mouths.

"Kill monsters! Kill monsters!"

From every corner of Liang Zhu City, one could hear the thunderous roars of these armored human slaves.

Poor Yu Clan nobles living in the city! At first, the core members of large Yu Clan families were controlled by Feng Xing and Yu Mu, for which reason, the rest of them lost their direction. Afterward, the Glorious Domination started a battle against the small number of guards in the city. Right next, Yemo Tian began smashing the Highest Conference Hall. To stop him, all defensive forces remaining in the city gathered over. But as a result, Ji Hao stepped in and punched quite a few power elders and deputy elders nearly to death. That scene was too horrible to look at.

Right now, Liang Zhu City was almost defenseless!

Countless human warriors gathered into surging glows, rushing into every street, every alley. Wherever they reached, they burned, killed, and destroyed everything in their eyes. Magnificent buildings collapsed in the fire, as countless non-humankind beings howled and fell to the ground under the shine of sharp weapons.

Yemo Tian's destructive weapon stopped its crazy but useless attack and floated in the air, hundreds of meters higher from the sky. In confusion, Yemo Tian looked down at the ground and said, "What? What are you doing? I haven't given the order of a full-scale attack! B*stards! I haven't controlled the final defense of the city yet! Who ordered you to attack?"

A long while later, Yemo Tian suddenly realized that the armies marching into the city weren't from his Glorious Domination!

"Who are you? Who are looting in a burning house? Who dares to take advantages of me?!"

"Attack! Give a full strike! Kill everyone in the city that is not one

of us!"

Standing in the crystal cockpit, Yemo Tian growled in fury.

Chapter 1446: Wrangling

"Bullsh*t!"

"Nonsense!"

"You're talking nonsense!"

"You bullsh*t!"

Above Chi Ban Mountain, on the round-shaped platform, straightforward and blatant curses could be heard from the mouths of representatives of both the humankind and Yu Dynasty.

The twelve emperors shouted like ruffians, while Emperor Xuanyuan and the other human representatives yelled like uneducated everyday people. Their fingers almost touched each others' necks as they cursed with their maximum volumes.

Clang! As the most bad-tempered one, Emperor Xuanyuan pulled out his sword and hacked down. A power elder from the non-humankind's side raised his sword as well against Emperor Xuanyuan. Followed by echoing metal clangs, fire sparkles dazzled. Then, people from both sides stood up and pleaded with tactful words. Afterward, everybody dropped the weapons, sat back into their seats, and continued wrangling.

The non-humankind required the humankind to send out elite troops as spearheads to face the incoming enemies. But, human representatives seized one essential point — Why would human warriors bear the brunt of the coming enemies and die first?

Seeing human representatives staying immune to both soft and hard tactics, the twelve non-humankind elders slapped the table, stood up in anger, and pointed at human representatives, threatening them that Yu Dynasty would force human beings to obey with violence.

Without showing a sign of weakness, human representatives also slapped the table and shouted out loud, telling the twelve emperors

to bring as many armies as they liked. They said that only b*stards would obey or get softened.

Human representatives showed no intent to compromise. Therefore, the twelve emperors, once again started to amicably and politely explain how serious this whole thing was to them. They tried their best to prove that once that powerful non-humankind being and his elite army descended to Pan Gu world, the alliance of human clans would be facing a destructive disaster.

Hearing this, Emperor Shun laughed out loud. Scornfully, he said to Emperor Xuanyuan that the Yu Dynasty failed to break the humankind, so what worse thing could happen even if another non-humankind force were added to this world? Human beings were confident enough to accept all challenges. That so-called powerful Yu Clan being, they might as well just let him come!

Conveniently, Emperor Shun also pointed out that when the powerful Yu Clan being truly arrived in this world, who would be the ones to suffer? Instead of human beings, who had been suppressing by Yu Dynasty all these years, it would be Yu Clan nobles, who had already put down their roots in Pan Gu world, and had accumulated a great wealth!

At the stage, human beings had been threatened by Yu Dynasty for years. Human clans were often attacked by slave-hunting troops, and countless human beings were enslaved. The alliance of human clans prepared for wars against Yu Dynasty all year round. Each year, people would spend incalculable efforts to face the military threat from Yu Dynasty.

Even if that powerful Yu Clan being were truly here, no matter how bad the situation could be for the alliance of human clans, it wouldn't be too much worse than now. But, things would be much different for Yu Clan nobles. Currently, they stood high above the humankind, and they had everything. But, when that ambitious and powerful Yu Clan being truly descended, the first to suffer would be the twelve emperors in power, and all Yu Dynasty nobles

they represented!

All they had would be taken away. They would become the lowly ruled ones under superior rulers. They would be replaced. All their powers and wealth would be taken by the new ruler.

Emperor Shun clearly pointed out that the coming Yu Clan powerful being might be a disaster to the humankind, but to current Yu Clan nobles, it would be a doom!

Therefore, Emperor Shun told the twelve emperors and their power elders that if they wanted the humankind to join hands with them and fight against the powerful Yu Clan being together, they had to show their sincerity. This time, human beings would never serve them as spearheads, nor cannon fodder.

Emperor Shun simplified his language as much as he could, then declared himself. The twelve emperors and their power elders were awfully dissatisfied by Emperor Shun's attitude. They leaped up and criticized Emperor Shun for his attitude once again.

Emperor Shun was enraged as he pulled out his sword again. Against him, two power elders raised their weapons. After a series of metal clangs and exchanges of sword hacks, the other people hurriedly mediated the conflict. Next, people sat back into their seats while complaining.

Accusing each other and arguing, days passed like this. During this few days, no useful agreement or conclusion was made.

Yu Clan nobles wanted human beings to take the risk and serve as their shields, taking the initiative to attack. But, human leaders weren't stupid. This would clearly be a Yu Clan internal conflict, but why would healthy human beings risk their lives for it?

Yu Clan people wanted to take advantage of human beings, but human beings weren't stupid. They wouldn't let it happen.

Therefore, the twelve emperors in power and the twenty-four power elders threatened Emperor Shun, Emperor Xuanyuan, and

the others with violence many times. Yet, human representatives didn't say a word to compromise, no matter how hard the non-humankind tried.

From time to time, Piji Nu would burst into a shout like this, "Let Marquis Yao Ji Hao give back my spirit beast! Otherwise, our Red Sun will hunt him to the end of the world! My spirit beast! Give it back!"

"My sky dominator! How much did I spend to bring it here!" Piji Nu kept complaining like a dissatisfied housewife, but no one from either side paid any attention to him.

'Want your sky dominator back? Then, you should go find Ji Hao and redeem your spirit beast with a high price. Why are you yelling around here?' That was what the other people thought.

The time had been continually wasted by this endless, completely useless wrangle. Everyone was bridled up, and had been saying useless words. With the passage of time, elites from large human families all gathered in Chi Ban Mountain. Under Emperor Xuanyuan's supervision, people from many super clans and families, who never showed during the passed great wars, now showed up. Large-scale weapons designed and produced by the humankind were carried to Chi Ban Mountain.

As the human force grew stronger and stronger, the twelve non-humankind emperors became anxious.

Emperor Shun, Emperor Xuanyuan, and the other human representatives never listened to reason nor bowed to force. Determinedly, they pointed out that no matter how, human beings would not serve as the non-humankind's shields and spearheads. In addition to that, Emperor Shun also indicated that this would be an internal conflict of Yu Clan, and a problem of Yu Clan nobles. Therefore, non-humankind beings should see the reality and give up on dragging human beings down.

The twelve emperors were infuriated. As Yanmo Sha, the Dark

Sun Emperor, gave his order, the golden statues on his city of great calamity suddenly turned around and launched a small-scale strike on a human military camp in Chi Ban Mountain area.

Thunderous roars echoed through the clouds while ten Longbo Country giants carried a brightly glowing enormous shield and protected the camp from the strike. The giants were thirty miles tall, and the shield was about a hundred miles tall. They took the strike without collapsing.

The giants trembled intensely, gasping loudly and quickly for air.

It was difficult. After all, they were taking a frontal attack from a city of great calamity.

Emperor Shun and Emperor Xuanyuan laughed out loud, while the faces of the twelve emperors turned sulky. If the power of cities of great calamity couldn't make human beings yield, how should they force the humankind to fight for them, to shield them against the coming enemy?

Time kept flying, while representatives from both sides continued arguing, insulting each other in Chi Ban Mountain.

Chapter 1447: Yemo Luoye's Analysis

Clang! Emperor Xuanyuan pulled out his sword once again and started a battle against Piji Tian and Piji Di. The golden sword power streams swept across the sky while Xuanyuan Emperor growled with a resonant voice, "Do not play your little tricks in front of me!"

"You fight against each other for power and profit. Why should we risk our lives for it?"

"In the end, when that so-called powerful being really arrived in this world, he would take care of you first. It has been so many years, don't we know about each other? You three-eyed monsters are bottomlessly greedy. If that powerful being is truly here, the first thing he would do is take away all you have and occupy all your wealth."

"What should we be afraid of? One, two, three, four, no matter how many non-humankind monsters come, we will always straighten our backbones and fight against them! So simple! We will fight you to death unless you can break our backbones!"

"You want our healthy boys to fight for your powers and profits, to shield you? Do you think I'm stupid? Do you think that I, Gong Sun Xuanyuan, am a fool?"

The sword power reached straight to the sky. Emperor Xuanyuan, Piji Tian, and Piji Di cursed each other with the evilest language they knew and raised a fierce intent of killing. Emperor Xuanyuan was merely a clone, but he was protected by the immeasurably great natural reward power, and was supported by the great Dao of Pan Gu world. Therefore, fighting against Piji Tian and Piji Di, he wasn't falling at any disadvantage.

This time, no one persuaded them to stop. The twelve non-humankind emperors knew that violence could not make the humankind submit. They clearly understood that human beings

were stubborn, that these barbarians in Pan Gu world were born with straight backbones, and it was impossible to make them bow and fight for the non-humankind.

Since violence failed, they prepared to try persuading human beings with promised benefits.

After sighing, Yemo Luoye provided with a plan B. She turned to Emperor Shun with a sweet smile and slowly blinked her eyes, leering at Emperor Shun.

Emperor Shun laughed, shaking his head as he grinningly responded, "Yemo Luoye, I've passed that young and passionate age of my life. By now, all my heart is about the future of the humankind, with not much interest in beautiful girls. If you need to say something, just say it. As for the other things, hehe, I won't accept."

Ao Hao hurriedly leaped up and pressed his hands on the long table as he greedily and grinningly looked at Yemo Luoye and said, "Girl, why are you looking at this old man Emperor Shun? I am Ao Ritian. I am so energetic, strong and young. If you want a man, come to me!"

Yemo Luoye's smile froze on her face. Emperor Shun speechlessly looked at the sky, grabbed Ao Hao's arm, and dragged him back down to his seat. Giving an embarrassed smile, Emperor Shun said with a deep, strong voice, "People, let's talk in peace. All in all, I hope you all understand that if you want to use violence, we, human beings, will keep you company to the end."

Bright and resounding phoenix songs could be heard from the south. Thousands of purely black phoenixes let out dark flakes of fire from their beaks and carried tens of thousands of Maguspreists from Chu Wu Clan flying over.

Chu Wu people were evil and weird. When they were still over a thousand miles away from the platform, the sticky, frosty, and dark, snake-like senses of power released from their bodies had

reached the people on the platform. The expressions of Yemo Luoye and the other non-humankind emperors changed slightly.

They watched the humankind raise an army. The human force gathered in Chi Ban Mountain area had been growing stronger and stronger. The forces from those top-grade super human clans and families, which never showed in this area during the past great wars between the humankind and the non-humankind now all showed up. The non-humankind leaders clearly saw them all.

This meant that the flood didn't weaken the military force of the humankind at all. On the contrary, as these super families and clans joined hands, the military force under Emperor Shun's command had grown many times stronger.

"Alright, let's talk in peace." Yemo Luoye said with a soft voice, "First, Emperor Shun, we hope you can admit that in so many years, the twelve families in power from Yu Dynasty have already gotten used to all we have. As a routine, every newly ascended emperor in power would start a war against the humankind. Except for that, in recent hundreds of years, we, Yu Dynasty, didn't launch any large-scale offensive."

'Honestly", Yemo Luoye continued, "...we are used to everything we have now. We have a lot, from resources to powers. We, and our people, are satisfied by the resources we currently possess. Therefore, we aren't willing to risk our lives for more."

Looking at Emperor Shun, she said seriously, "Can you admit that?"

Emperor Shun pondered for a second and nodded.

These years, at least in Emperor Shun's tenure of duty, except for the war started by Dishi Yanluo when he ascended to the throne, and frequent harassments from slave-hunting troops, no other large-scale wars happened between the humankind and the non-humankind. And, even for the war Dishi Yanluo started, he only sent out Divine-Magus-level forces. No Sun and Moon stage

powerful beings appeared during that war, because that was a routine war, purely for showing off his power and celebrating.

Therefore, Emperor Shun agreed with Yemo Luoye.

Currently, the top-grade, core leaders of Yu Dynasty had no intention to start a full-scale war against the humankind, because the resources they currently possessed were enough for them. They didn't have to risk the lives of millions for more.

"But, the new one won't be the same." Yemo Luoye sighed and said, "His family isn't at the same level as us. If we compare Pan Gu world to a fertile grassland, our families would be like healthy rabbits... A small meadow is more than enough for us to enjoy our lives."

"But, the family behind that powerful being is like an enormous Chaos monster. They eat thousand times more than we do, so they must occupy a thousand times larger grassland than we have done, to fulfill their appetites." Yemo Luoye looked at Emperor Shun and said seriously, "You understand that the stronger creatures need more resources, don't you?"

Emperor Shun nodded. He turned around and pointed the group of Longbo Country people on the mountain behind.

To support a Longbo Country couple, one would be needing a forest with a radius of one-hundred-thousand miles. They were enormous in shapes, and their appetites were stunning. Without the preys from the forest one-hundred-thousand miles in radius, they would be starved to death. But, how many human clans could live in such a forest? The territories belonging to Ji Hao's Gold Crow Clan back in Southern Wasteland weren't as large in total. Including all branches, Gold Crow Clan had hundreds of millions of people. But still, their territories weren't as large as the hunting ground of a Longbo Country couple.

The more powerful creatures needed larger hunting grounds, and more resources; Emperor Shun was deeply aware of this fact.

"When they arrive, their target will definitely be the entire Pan Gu world." Looking at Emperor Shun, Yemo Luoye smiled coldly and said, "If you don't fight with us, we will kneel on the ground and surrender immediately. We are all Yu Clan people, so pledging allegiance to that powerful being will be a wise choice sfor us."

Emperor Shun dropped his face instantly. Had the non-humankind been preparing to surrender already?

This was undoubtedly a bad news for the humankind.

Chapter 1448: With A Dilemma

"Surrender? Pledge allegiance? You?" Emperor Shun's face suddenly turned extremely dark as he asked, "Will you be willing to do that?"

"If we can't even save our own lives, why won't we?" Yemo Luoye smiled sweetly. Once again, she leered at Emperor Shun and said, "We Yu Clan people don't have such strong and straight backbones as you barbarians do. If it's necessary, we can bend a hundred times a day, without a problem."

"Besides, that great lord is so powerful! By following him...Sure, we won't be able to keep our profits gained from Pan Gu world, but at least, our families will survive." Yemo Luoye sighed again, "All these families of our Yu Dynasty had been developing for so many years. More or less, we have some strength. If we offer to follow that great lord, presumably, he won't refuse."

Yemo Luoye smiled in a weird way, and so did the other non-humankind emperors.

They were forcing Emperor Shun to make a difficult choice — Human beings would fight against that new powerful Yu Clan being for the benefits of Yu Dynasty people. Otherwise, the twelve families in power from Yu Dynasty would surrender themselves to that powerful Yu Clan being without a hesitation. Afterward, they would serve as guides and combine their powers with the new powerful Yu Clan being to destroy the humankind.

Yemo Luoye didn't say this out so straightforwardly, but she clearly delivered her point. Emperor Shun understood it clearly as well.

Sitting beside Emperor Shun, Emperor Shennong slightly moved, then asked in a serious tone, "Have you made up your minds?"

Yemo Luoye nodded, responded, "We Yu Clan people are not like

you human beings. Facing an irresistible pressure, we will never insist...I assume you are all clearly aware of the fact that we know everything about you human beings. If we decide to follow that great lord, and to attack you as a spearhead, you can imagine the consequences."

Emperor Shun remained silent, and so did Emperor Shennong.

The humankind had been fighting against Yu Dynasty for so many years. Yu Dynasty people were familiar with the geographic condition of Pan Gu world, and their flying warships having been on patrol in the void of Pan Gu world all year round. They were familiar with all components of the military forces of the humankind; they even had commercial cooperations and conflicts of interest with quite a number of human clans.

Represented by the twelve families in power, if Yu Dynasty people truly decided to follow the new powerful Yu Clan being with their whole hearts and attack the humankind with their full strengths, perhaps, the humankind would be facing a terrible situation, a hundred times worse than the first invasion of the non-humankind.

Would that be a truly destructive disaster?

Sitting beside Yemo Luoye, Polo Jia, the Flow Moon Emperor coughed slightly, and said, "We have many choices, while you, human beings, have none. You can either fight back or all become slaves...Even worse, if you fought back too hard and caused that great lord a significant damage, he might give his order of destruction!"

Polo Jia put his hands on the long table, flicked his fingers quickly, and continued, "We have almost confirmed that great lord's identity. In his long span of life, he gave his orders of destruction of the local creatures of thirty-five worlds. To him, making the decision to destroy all barbarians in one more world wouldn't be hard."

Remaining silent for a short while, he carried on, "Back in our hometown, the title of that great lord is 'Blood Crown'! His supreme crown is dyed red by the blood from countless worlds, countless species!"

Emperor Shun's face turned darker and darker.

If the twelve families in powers kept threatening the humankind with violence, attempting to force human armies to fight for them against the coming enemy as spearheads, Emperor Shun could reject decisively on behalf of all human beings. But, when they did it in another way, when they stopped threatening, but straightforwardly and shamelessly told Emperor Shun that they would surrender immediately if human beings refuse to fight for them, Emperor Shun fell into a difficult situation.

"If, I mean, what if we join hands, for a fair cooperation?" A long while later, Emperor Shun finally said this with difficulty. His face was burning slightly. When he said this, he realized that deep down, he had already compromised. He couldn't let these sneaky and shameless Yu Clan nobles follow that 'Blood Crow' powerful being.

Together, the humankind and Yu Dynasty might be able to rival that powerful being. But, if Yu Dynasty people surrendered directly, the humankind would be facing the hardest situation ever.

"A fair cooperation? Do you mean, a fair alliance?" Polo Jia slightly shaking his head, smiling with a proud smile, as if he had everything under his control. He said with a gentle voice, "Emperor Shun, this is very impolite, but I really want to ask — What do you human beings have that can make you the equal allies of us? We have countless choices to save our own lives. But, except for fighting back, you have no other choices."

"I can even tell you this frankly," breathing deeply, Polo Jia continued with a serious tone, "Only when you take a certain

advantage in the war against that great lord, or if you don't fall in much of disadvantage in the war, and after we have evaluated the risk would we send out armies to the battlefield."

"If you can't efficiently consume that great lord's military strength, or fail to stop his offensive, we will still attack you without hesitation, no matter if we have signed an agreement or not. After that, we will... all surrender."

Polo Jia's words exposed the shameless faces of Yu Clan nobles.

According to him, human beings must risk their lives to fight against that 'Blood Crown'. If the humankind managed to take advantages in the war, or not fall into a disadvantage, the twelve families in power would make use of the opportunity, send their armies to the battlefield, and try their bests to break 'Blood Crow's army. But, if the twelve families in power from Yu Dynasty believed that the humankind had fallen in a disadvantage, and they were unlikely to win even if they joined the war, they would immediately change side. They would then use their powers to destroy the humankind, then kneel under 'Blood Crow's feet, beg for mercy, and sell their souls for self-advancement.

"In the end, you have no other choice. You have to stick with our plan." Polo Jia spread his hands and said blandly, "To be honest, speaking all this, I also feel a bit ashamed. But, you didn't accept our terms at the beginning, did you?"

"I also think that we're shameless." Polo Jia gave a bright smile, "But, Emperor You, and the others of you, you have to remember that the right of being shameless only belongs to the strong ones! The weak ones like you human beings, you don't have the right to be shameless!"

Buzz! Worn on a wrist of a power elder standing behind Polo Jia, a fist-sized ruby suddenly glowed, letting out shrill and rushing alarm sounds.

This elder raised his head in confusion and said, "What's going

on? We are responsible for guarding the Highest Conference Hall this month...But, why has the final defense under the hall been activated? Is Liang Zhu City under attack? But, why is the final defense activated?"

The twelve emperors in power stood up immediately with their expressions changed drastically.

Chapter 1449: Dim Glory

Under the Highest Conference Hall, in the hemisphere space.

Countless non-humankind souls 'inlaid' in the formation without being able to move had been screaming in sadness or fury. They struggled as hard as they could. But, they were willingly connected with the great formation, serving as the energy conversion core. So, they couldn't move at all.

The only thing they were able to do was watch Ji Hao press his hands on the purple crystal ball, sensing his stunningly strong torrents of spirit power sweep across the great formation wave after wave.

Ji Hao's eyes glowed with a bright light. Like streams of water, his spirit power was flowing in this great formation, which covered the entire Liang Zhu City, through the meridians of the formation. The magic formation knowledge he learned from Yu Yu crossed his mind like clear streams, with the help of which, Ji Hao had been learning everything about this final defensive formation of Liang Zhu City, as quickly as possible.

All non-humankind souls had been shrieking heartbreakingly and crazily, encouraging those puppet warriors, which were attacking Ji Hao.

Shreds of afterimages were left in the air as these puppet warriors swiftly flashed through the air, bumping into Ji Hao with all of their strength at lightning speed. True water defense screens emerged ceaselessly around Ji Hao's body. The puppet warriors shattered layers of water screens, but even thicker water screens rose and kept them away from Ji Hao.

The water was soft, yet it could suppress anything in the world; the water was soft, yet it had an endless flow.

Thanks to Great Liberty, Ji Hao gained all the understandings

about the great Dao of true water which used to belong to Pan Jia. Because of his limited cultivation and power, Ji Hao could merely release about ten percent of Pan Jia's power, of the great Dao of true water. But, that was enough.

Pan Jia was a 'saint' who created a world, an owner of a world. Even with ten percent of her power, Ji Hao would be able to crush these puppet warriors, which were made from the corpses of powerful non-humankind beings. No matter how hard these puppet warriors attacked, the true water defensive screens would always push them far away. None of them managed to approach Ji Hao.

Ji Hao's pores expanded. Wisps of hot air puffed out of his pores as Ji Hao sent ninety percent of his spirit power into the purple crystal ball. He had already made a deep dive into this great formation.

Merely with the magic formation knowledge he learned from Yu Yu, Ji Hao wouldn't be able to understand everything about this great formation within ten minutes. However, Great Liberty devoured Polo Do's soul, who was a top-grade scholar from the Flow Moon, which was the keeper of the non-humankind civilization. This meant that Polo Do knew about the entire final defense system of Liang Zhu City as well as he knew about himself.

Great Liberty was digested by the five-colored cauldron inside Ji Hao. So naturally, he attained Polo Do's memories about the defense system of Liang Zhu City.

Hence, all problems were solved easily. In Ji Hao's eyes, the great defensive formation of Liang Zhu City had no more secrets.

Followed by a series of cracking noise, a few extremely thin bolts of lightning burst from the crystal ball. Ji Hao had unsealed the great formation, and no more authorization was needed. He turned his soul power vibrations into a new seal and planted it in the formation. From now on, no one but Ji Hao could control this

great formation.

The violent torrents of information turned soft and obedient. The great formation stopped flooding all information into Ji Hao's brain. Instead, under Ji Hao's will, it smartly gave Ji Hao the selected information.

Ji Hao sighed in relief. Turning around, he glanced at those puppet warriors who had still been trying everything to attack him, then summoned the bronze gate of the Netherworld.

True water defensive screens transformed into enormous white whirlpools and wrapped up the puppet warriors, tying them up and sending them into the bronze gate. Instantly, Netherworld Hierarch's excited voice could be heard from the gate, "Hah? Are these puppet warriors from the Nether Moon? Made from the corpses of their powerful members? Amazing! Ji Hao, my little friend, I owe you a big one!"

Ji Hao laughed out loud, greeted Netherworld Hierarch, then hurriedly pointed his fingers at the purple crystal ball.

Based on the information given by the crystal ball, the dragon man, tiger man, lion man, and mammoth man had already broken into the city with their people, and were busy slaughtering citizens and starting fires. Ji Hao activated all defenses in the outer circle of the city. From this moment on, the city was sealed off; no one was allowed to pass in or out. But in the meanwhile, Ji Hao left a few small 'back doors' in the defensive formation, near the mansions controlled by Yu Mu and Feng Xing. As a result, the few teleporting formations built by Feng Xing and Yu Mu could still operate smoothly, and these formations were still connected with the outside of the city. Feng Xing and Yu Mu had already captured a great number of Yu Clan nobles. At the moment, they were busy at sending them out of the city through the teleporting formations.

No matter how the negotiation between Emperor Shun and those non-humankind emperors went, these Yu Clan nobles would serve

as a strong bargaining chip.

Above the Great Conference Hall, Yemo Tian's destructive weapon quietly floated in the air. He had no strength to control the weapon and continue doing damages. Instead, he stood in the crystal cockpit, waving his arms and screaming desperately, "Kill them all! Kill these b*stards who think they can loot a burning house! Who dares to take advantages of me? Piji Wuyue! Where's my city of domination? Kill them all with my city of domination!"

Four metal spheres slowly descended from the air, one larger than the other three. Those were three cities of great calamity and one city of domination, slowly spreading their enormous metal petals and blooming like giant metal flowers in the sky above the Highest Conference Hall. The thin metal petals glistened brightly in the sunlight. Visibly, natural powers gathered into strong streams and were absorbed by the four metal cities.

As the leader of the army from Dark Mountain Mine, Piji Wuyue stood on the wall of the city of domination, looking down at the Highest Conference Hall, and abruptly gave a grin.

Tens of members of the Glorious Domination were tied up tightly. They howled and screamed, while they were pushed off the wall. Thin ropes tied on their feet hung them on the wall like dead pigs.

"Boss! We were fooled! Piji Wuyue and the other scums betrayed us! Ah! They betrayed us! I, we don't know who is supporting them, but the army of the Dark Mountain Mine is theirs! We're all fooled!" A Glorious Domination leader, who was hanging upside down in the air, shouted with his face covered in tears.

Through the eyes of the powerful destructive weapon, he saw everything that happened in the sky, three-hundred miles above the ground. He heard the cries and shouts of his people.

He trembled, as a stream of blood squirted out of his mouth.

Wasn't Piji Wuyue on his side? Did Piji Wuyue betray him?

Everything the Glorious Domination did, was it done for some other people?

How could it be? Yemo Tian gazed at the four metal cities floating in the sky. He couldn't believe his eyes!

He was so smart. He had such a great plan. He was brave and foresighted, and he started the Glorious Domination. But, how on earth could he be fooled? This day was supposed to be the lucky day for him to conquer Liang Zhu City, capture all Yu Clan nobles in the city, and force the twelve emperors to yield!

Four men flew up and surrounded the destructive weapon.

"Our friend here, this treasure is destined to belong to our sect. Our friend, please, join us." The dragon man, lion man, tiger man, and mammoth man bowed simultaneously, talking to Yemo Tian each with a faint smile.

Chapter 1450: Leave When It's Finished

"The world is a chessboard, and living creatures are all chess pieces." Facing the destructive weapon, the dragon man trod on a cloud as he smilingly said to Yemo Tian, "Our two master Shifu were true chess players. The world, all living creatures are in their plan."

"Yemo Tian, you're talented, with a fair family background. If you are willing to join us..." The dragon man's eyes dazzled, as those eyes were fixed on the destructive weapon. He said seriously, "If you can offer this treasure to the sect, in the future, you will earn your luck!"

The dragon man wasn't in the city just now, but through the eyes of his people who were in the city, he had learned everything about the power of the destructive weapon.

Tens of power elders and nearly a hundred deputy elders were all defeated by the destructive weapon. According to the dragon man's estimation, even if he and his three brothers combined their powers, they wouldn't be able to defeat so many powerful non-humankind beings. This proved the power of the destructive weapon. Only if they could attain such a powerful treasure...

Yemo Tian was infuriated. He widely opened his eyes in anger, even splitting up his eye corners. He roared towards the sky, took out another bottle of soul-retrieving dew, then poured into his mouth and gritted his teeth. A dense purple mist coiled around his whole body as he regained his strength quickly. Within the span of a couple of breaths, all of his injuries recovered.

The destructive weapon buzzed slightly. On its back, the enormous wings spread gradually. The space around it began shrinking towards it, as a giant amount of natural powers had been absorbed by it. Its twenty-four differently shaped giant wings represented different power natures, releasing thunder, fire,

corrosive winds, poisonous mist...

A dark sun, a gray sun, and a red sun rose from behind the destructive weapon. Underneath the three suns were nine moons, with constantly changing shapes and colors. From crescents to full moons, the shapes of the moons had been changing without an end. Immeasurable energy waves vibrated the sky and forced the dragon man, lion man, tiger man, and mammoth man to take a series of step backward.

"This kid is putting up a desperate fight. Brothers, be careful!" The dragon man shouted with a strong voice, "Form up the four symbols killing formation. Disciples from all four lotus altars, make your moves now. Kill this Yu Clan being together!"

From all directions, clouds rolled up to the sky. East, south, west, north, twelve-thousand non-humankind warriors rose from each direction, treading on clouds while holding flags with the cyan dragon, white tiger, rosefinch, and black turtle painted on them, as they formed a large formation.

High up in the air, the stars in the constellations of these four symbols glowed simultaneously. Thin wisps of starlight penetrated the sky and landed on the heads of the forty-eight-thousand non-humankind warriors. Followed by resonant roars, the star power condensed into a cyan dragon, a white tiger, a rosefinch, and a black turtle, rising into the sky and encircling the destructive weapon.

The four men glanced at each other. Together, they opened their mouths and let out a fist-sized, brightly shining bead each.

Ji Hao pressed his hands tightly on the purple crystal ball. In the great defensive formation of Liang Zhu City, waves of ripples scanned across the sky and soon distinguished the four beads. Those were spirit Dans of the ancient four holy creatures. For some reason, the four spirit Dan fell into the hands of the four men.

The four spirit Dan merged with the four hazy figures of ancient holy creatures. Along with their resounding roars, the four creatures turned clearer and clearer. Before long, they looked like living creature with fleshy bodies, while a thriving life-force spreading out of their bodies.

The four men incanted a spell in chorus. They each transformed into a beam of light and merged with a holy creature. In the next moment, the tens of thousands of meters long holy creatures pounced on the destructive weapon, along with a sky-devouring fire and deafening roars. They circled up the destructive weapon.

"Great!" Ji Hao's fingers flicked quickly on the purple crystal ball. As fast as he could, he had been adjusting the great defensive formation of the city.

The great formation was flexible and variable, but adjusted by Ji Hao, it turned lifeless. It couldn't change itself anymore, and instead, it was only allowed to operate according to Ji Hao's current setting.

Ji Hao left countless traps in the great formation. Even if the designer and builder of this formation were right here in the city, without three to five months, they wouldn't be able to reverse Ji Hao's adjustments and turn the formation back to the way it was.

Within these months, the formation could only operate in the way Ji Hao wanted it to.

"What're you doing? What on earth are you doing?" Watching Ji Hao change the settings of the formation, slowing it down and making it inflexible, those non-humankind souls screamed in fear. As a part of the defense system of Liang Zhu City, these souls were responsible for the daily operation of this great formation, and could sense every slight change of the formation. But because of what Ji Hao had done, they felt like being separated from the formation, as if a thick wall was built between the formation and them. They could no longer sense the great formation. In other

words, they were kicked out by Ji Hao.

"You all...You're already dead. Ashes to ashes, earth to earth. You can either disappear or reincarnate. But turning yourselves into ghosts with a secret magic? That's against nature. You will certainly pay for that."

Ji Hao smilingly shook his head towards the countless non-humankind souls floating in the hemispherical space and said, "I'm your karma."

The five-colored cauldron buzzed suddenly. Ji Hao opened his mouth and let out countless streams of colorful light, which rolled up all non-humankind souls and made them howl shrilly. Uncontrollably, all souls flew towards the cauldron.

After the span of a couple of breaths, no more souls remained existing in the hemispherical space. Ji Hao wielded his broad sleeve and smashed the purple crystal ball, destroying this controller of the entire Liang Zhu City great defensive formation.

Liang Zhu City quaked slightly. From this moment on, the formation would keep operating according to Ji Hao's settings, and no other people could affect it.

"Unless you make another crystal controller... But, that kind of a treasure is not so easy to make!" Ji Hao laughed and said goodbye to Netherworld Hierarch, who was behind the bronze gate, then flashed across the air and left.

Bang! The enormous golden door shut thunderously behind Ji Hao. According to Ji Hao's settings, this door would never open again, unless one broke it violently. However, if anyone really tried to break this door with violence, he or she would definitely suffer the craziest attack from the formation itself.

"He, Ji Hao, this little kid..." From the bronze gate, Netherworld Preist's deep and hoarse voice could be heard. A dark, frosty gust of wind blew out of the gate. Just now, Netherworld Hierarch tried

pretty hard but failed to pull all puppet warriors into the Netherworld. But at the moment, the last few puppet warriors were wrapped up by the dark wind, and drifted airily into the gate without being able to resist at all.

After a quarter of an hour, Ji Hao arrived in the mansion of the Piji Family.

Feng Xing and Yu Mu had already captured enough Yu Clan nobles and emptied the treasuries of many families.

A series of teleporting formations had been operating at full-speed, sending the captives and the treasures out of the city.

Ji Hao joined them. An hour later, before the battle between the four men and Yemo Tian ended, Ji Hao and his people had left Liang Zhu City safely.

Chapter 1451: A Shaking Bad News

Chi Ban Mountain, in the midair...

Emperor Xuanyuan had already stopped, curiously looking at the power elder standing behind Polo Jia. On the elder's wrist, the ruby sparkled quickly, letting out a shrill alarm. The elder's name was Polo Di. With a gloomy face, he swiftly drew tens of spell symbols on the ruby.

Followed a series of sizzling noise, thin wisps of red light flew out of the ruby, coiling around Polo Di's wrist like mist. Soon, the red light merged into a square-shaped light screen, but nothing was in it.

"No one?" Polo Di growled with a deep voice, "Scums, even though we're not there, they can't just do anything they want. At least ten people should be guarding our family hall each day!"

Emperor Shun and Emperor Xuanyuan glanced at each other. Their eyes sparkled brightly. Of course, they knew what Ji Hao went to do. It seemed that Ji Hao had succeeded, hadn't he?

Each of the twelve families in power in Yu Dynasty had a family hall, for the family leaders to discuss daily affairs. Polo Jia led the elite force of his family out to the human territory in the south, but the Polo Family Hall should still be guarded.

A layer of cold sweat oozed out of Polo Di's forehead. He tried nine different types of spell symbols on the ruby, but there was no response.

Slightly trembling, Polo Di raised his head, looked at Polo Jia, and said, "The family hall, the department of commerce, the library, the military affairs hall, the treasury...At least one-hundred and twenty people should be on duty in the nine important places. But no response is received from any of them."

Polo Jia's face paled immediately.

"Hehe, we're not around, but the little ones in our families...they didn't party all night, did they?" Dishi Yanluo tried his best to act calmly. He stood up, smiled to a power elder behind him, and said, "Elder Mo, connect our people...Hm, directly contact the elders staying in the council."

Dishi Yanlou specially told Dishi Mo to contact the other elders in the family. The council he mentioned wasn't the Highest Council of Elder of Yu Dynasty. Instead, it was the council of elders of the Dishi Family. Only strong, calm, and capable elders could be members of this council.

Dishi Yanluo led the elite force of the Dishi Family out to the south. After he left, no was there to restrain the young people in his family. It was possible for those runaway-wild-horse-like young people to do any ridiculous thing under such circumstances. After all, everyone was clearly aware of the fact that Yu Clan people were born like this. 'Romance' was carved in their bones, and they would give up everything to lead a life of pleasure. It was not rare at all for them to be absent without leave. But, the elders were different. They were much older after all. Even if many of them still had their romantic nature, anyhow, each family should have three to five reliable elders at least.

Dishi Mo took out a fist-sized blood-red crystal and incanted a spell. The crystal released a round-shaped light screen, but it was all quiet. Nothing could be heard or seen from the crystal screen.

Dishi Mo's face froze suddenly.

A drop of cold sweat dripped down from Dishi Yanluo's forehead as he giggled embarrassedly, "Elder Mo, did you contact Elder Sui? Hah, Elder Sui is into the best wine and beautiful girls. Perhaps, he is just drunk, eh?"

All human beings and non-humankind beings, everyone on the scene raised their heads and glanced at the sky. It was the midday, so how could Dishi Sui be drunk now?

Dishi Mo gave a twisted grin. Same as Polo Di, he tried the other spells and called about ten elders stayed in the Dishi Family. But still, no one answered.

Seeing this, none of the twelve emperors in power could remain calm anymore. They hurriedly took out their secret contact treasures and tried desperately to contact their family members who stayed in Liang Zhu City. They seemed to even forget that Emperor Shun, Emperor Xuanyuan, Emperor Shennong, and the other human beings had been watching them.

Nevertheless, Ji Hao had activated the defensive formation of Liang Zhu City. At the moment, the city was sealed off completely, and no one was allowed to come in or go out of the city, not even through the sky or from the underground. In addition to that, he also sealed the space, which meant no power vibration or energy wave could come out of the city. Therefore, the signal transmitted by the twelve emperors' contact treasures failed to penetrate the final defense system of Liang Zhu City, all being devoured by the great defensive formation, which was like a bottomless hole.

Not to mention the fact that a big half of all members of the twelve families in power had been kidnapped by Ji Hao and his people, and some lucky escaping ones were now being hunted all over the city by the crazy warriors from the Glorious Domination and the four altars, who had the time to answer the calls from their elders?

No response!

No response!

Still no response!

"You!" Yemo Luoye turned to Emperor Shun the first. Her lips were slightly pale as she shouted through gritted teeth, "It was you...No, impossible, human beings can never break Liang Zhu City! Even though we have brought most of our elite forces out, so many power elders and deputy elders were left guarding the city...

And the final defense system, that we spent years of efforts on... You can't, you're not able to do that yet!"

'The final defense system'? The eyes of Emperor Shun and Emperor Xuanyuan shone again — How on earth did Ji Hao do that? Because of the final defense system, the twelve emperors in power firmly believed that human beings couldn't break the city. Clearly, the defense system was unimaginably powerful. But, how did Ji Hao manage to do that? To throw Liang Zhu City into a weird state of 'deathly stillness'?

In both shock and anger, the group of emperors and power elders tried everything to contact their people back in the city. But, there was just no response.

A dark, unlucky cloud gathered above the non-humankind army. Stationed on the northern side of Chi Ban Mountain, the army from Liang Zhu City had already heard the news from the conference table. A large number of high-grade commanders flew up, rushing over in a hurry, trying to find out what exactly had happened in Liang Zhu City.

Before long, a group of Xiu Clan masters, who stayed in the twelve cities of great calamity rushed over as well. They brought a more reliable message — The large-scale early warning mechanisms in the twelve cities of great calamity had indeed detected intense natural power vibrations from Liang Zhu City.

Based on the intensity of the natural power vibrations, it could be concluded that the final defense systems of Liang Zhu City were fully activated.

The twelve emperors and twenty-four power elders started panicking. Activating the final defense system required the authorizations of at least twelve power elders. But, since those elders had the time to give the joint authorization, why didn't they inform their emperors before that?

What happened in Liang Zhu City?

A power elder suddenly leaped up and shouted with a hoarse voice, "Send the fastest flying warship back to Liang Zhu City. Find out what exactly happened to the city! Now! Go!"

A long and slim metal ship spread its sails. Countless spell symbols sparkled on the ship, pushing it to the north at its highest speed.

With a low voice, Ao Hao murmured, "Idiots, they fly way faster than that crappy thing. Why don't they go back and take a look by themselves?"

Emperor Shun, Emperor Xuanyuan, and Emperor Shennong remained silent — How badly were these Yu Clan nobles afraid of death? Heading to a dangerous place to see what happened by themselves? Ao Hao, that was impossible.

About two hours after the flying warship took off, finally, a landlord who lived outside Liang Zhu City sent back a message.

'Liang Zhu City is broken, it's in turmoil. The extent of casualties is unknown...It's said that Yemo Tian is related to this.'

Chapter 1452: Reverse the Situation

Liang Zhu City was enormous, such that the so-called final defense system only covered the area inside the city wall. Countess mansions and castles that belonged to lower-grade Yu Dynasty nobles were located outside the city.

When raging roars echoed through the sky from the city, many of these suburban non-humankind nobles sent scouts to the city. Because Ji Hao activated the defense system, these scouts couldn't take a signal step into the city, but they had roughly figured out what was going on in the city — All in all, someone had rebelled.

Hearing that the turmoil was related to Yemo Tian, and countless scouts witnessed a destructive weapon fighting against nearly a hundred deputy elders in the sky, Yemo Luoye's face paled immediately. A tremor went through her slim body, while a dark sun whooshed up from her head. Dense wisps of dark mist coiled around her entire body. The power of the dark sun was like a black hole, drawing the surrounding space ceaselessly into her body.

"Yemo Tian, you b*stard!" Yemo Luoye forgot about her elegance. Instead, she cursed through gritted teeth.

The expressions of the other eleven emperors and the group of power elder turned extremely weird. They seemed to forget about Liang Zhu City, which had already fallen into chaos. Instead, they 'curiously' and 'excitedly' looked at Yemo Luoye.

A power elder with a pair of brightly dazzling eyes even murmured uncontrollably, "Ahah, did the Yemo Family finally admit that kid is a b*stard? Haha, dear Emperor Yemo Da, we hope you and your wife are able to maintain this pure marriage of yours!"

Yemo Luoye's face suddenly turned awfully dark. Her ten fingers twitched, with blood veins bulging on the backs of her hands. Obviously, she tried her best to keep herself from attacking this

power elder.

Yemo Da was Yemo Luoye's father, the last Dark Sun Emperor. After he stepped into the Sun and Moon stage, he chose to return to Pan Yu world and pass the throne to his daughter.

Many 'well-informed' Yu Clan nobles gossiped that Yemo Da returned to Pan Yu world because of Yemo Tian. All of a sudden, his wife brought him a son; Yu Clan nobles were indeed unconventional in lifestyle, but such things were still embarrassing.

For his reputation, Yemo Da didn't make a scene. He admitted that Yemo Tian was his son, but he left him in Liang Zhu City and let the elders raise him, while returning to Pan Yu world himself. He stayed in Pan Yu world, 'intimately' spending time with his wife, who had been 'recuperating her health'.

As the fooled one in such an affair, the Yemo Family would never admit that the wife of the former elder had ever done anything against the social rule, neither would they admit that Yemo Tian was the son of their first lady and some nameless guy.

Since always, Yemo Luoye had been acting like a nice elder sister to Yemo Tian. She was so gentle and caring to him. In Liang Zhu City, anyone who dared to even slightly offend Yemo Tian would be suppressed by Yemo Luoye with all the power of the family.

Spoilt by Yemo Luoye, Yemo Tian started the Glorious Domination, and did all kinds of illegal things with a group of playboys. Because of Yemo Tian's special family background, the other eleven families in power and the families under their commands had been extra tolerant to Yemo Tian, with a boring phycological need of watching a show.

But today, finally, Yemo Luoye called Yemo Tian 'a b*stard' herself!

Emperor Shun, Emperor Shennong, Emperor Xuanyuan, and Ao

Hao, the muddleheaded one, looked at these Yu Dynasty leaders with complicated expressions — Shouldn't they be anxious to lead their warriors back to Liang Zhu City and calm the unrest?

Why did these people look quite comfortable? And, why were their smiles so weird?

Their city had been turned upside down. Their city was in chaos. But, why didn't these people seem to worry at all?

Emperor Shun's face turned especially serious — In his eyes, these emperors and power elders from Yu Dynasty were all tough beings, as they seemed to be able to remain calm even when the world collapsed in front of them. Emperor Shun didn't think he could be as calm and even smiling as Dishi Yanluo and the other non-humankind emperors if he heard that a human clan rebelled, and Pu Ban City was turned into a mess.

"Terrifying enemies." Emperor Shun murmured to himself, "Liang Zhu City is now a city of chaos, yet, they can still sit still. Indeed, the more terrible the situation is, the calmer should we be...I've been cultivating myself all my life, but in the end, my mental state is not even as good as these Yu Clan people, who are famous for their indiscretion!"

Abruptly, Polo Jia laughed out loud. He threw a flirty leer at Yeo Luoye and said, "Dear Emperor Yemo Luoye, ah, your brother started a rebellion. Glorious Domination, the name of that tiny organization of his, isn't it? Glorious Domination occupied Liang Zhu City! Oh my, all our people have become his captives. Haha, how much do we have to pay for them?"

The group of emperors laughed, and so did those power elders. They weren't worried about the situation at all, because it was a rebellion started by Yemo Tian.

According to the hidden social rule, rebellions were allowed, as long as Yemo Tian ensured the safety of all Yu Clan nobles. Since all Yu Clan nobles in Liang Zhu City had become Yemo Tian's

captives, negotiations could be arranged. The others would pay the ransom money, and anything could be negotiated!

No matter what Yemo Tian wanted, as long as their people were fine, nothing too bad would happen, nothing worse than exchanges of powers and benefits.

Did Yemo Tian want to be the Dark Sun Emperor? That was negotiable!

In fact, that would also be good! If Yemo Luoye were kicked out of the game...

The expressions of quite a few emperors changed subtly as they looked at Yemo Luoye's perfectly shaped body from up to down. If Yemo Luoye were no longer an emperor, maybe, they could have a chance to spend some quality time with her?

Yeo Luoye was infuriated by their lascivious gazes. "Don't you forget that the real father of the b*stard may well be that great lord...The bastard started the rebellion and controlled Liang Zhu City at this point in time, what do you think he wants?" She shouted.

"Do you think he would follow the rule of our kind, charge you some ransom money, then release your people safely?" She continued in rage, "What conditions do you think he'll put forward? What if he wants us to unarm ourselves?"

"Impossible!" Yanmo Sha immediately responded confirmedly, "Of course it's impossible. We unarm ourselves and let his father easily take away everything we have? Our territories, our people, our servants, our slaves, our armies, and the profits we have been gaining from Pan Gu world and the tens of surroundings worlds every year..."

Yanmo Sha sneered and continued, "Without the profits gained from Pan Gu world, where would our families be? What would we live on?"

Yemo Luoye spread her hands and gave a cold smile.

"Together, let's kill the b*stard first!" said a power elder through gritted teeth. Suddenly, the faces of all non-humankind emperors and power elders turned serious.

Chapter 1453: A Fair Covenant

The specially designed teleporting formations led to Yao Mountain territory from Liang Zhu City.

Sorrowfully, groups of Yu Clan captives walked out of the formations. When they saw the oddly styled, enormous buildings in Yao Mountain City and countless heavily armored human warriors, a lot of elderly Yu Clan captives wailed shrilly.

They were captives now! How strange!

Starting this day, these Yu Clan nobles who used to stand high above the world, were captives of human beings. Stupid, ignorant, nasty, rude, brutal...One could use all negative words in the world to describe those barbarians in Pan Gu world. But starting this day, these wise, pure, and elegant Yu Clan nobles became the captives of barbarians.

"Great, supreme Blood Moon!" A Di Family old man raised his hands high and screamed towards the sky. He begged the Blood Moon that he believed in to release its power and save him from this nightmare. He didn't want to be a captive. He had been living an exquisite life ever since he was a child, and he couldn't allow himself to be a captive of barbarians.

"Old man!" A warrior from Pan Xi world taught this old man how to behave himself well. Baby-arm-thick, poisonous dragon skin whip lashed violently on this old man's back, causing shrill swishing noises. The old man's clothes were ripped apart, and a three-inches-long piece of skin was torn off his body. The old man shrieked in pain and fell unconscious.

Troops of Pan Xi world warriors wielded whips and clubs, yelling at these Yu Clan captives while driving them to the main building of Yao Mountain City through a broad street.

Under the main building of the city was a large underground

space, which was newly opened up by spirit souls and ancestor souls from Pan Xi world. They built an underground prison, large enough to accommodate all captives. Ji Hao prepared to treat these Yu Clan captives exactly the way they treated human slaves for sale.

On both sides of the street, countless Yao Mountain people stood quietly, curiously looking at these pale Yu Clan captives, who seemed to be badly frightened.

Some Yu Clan and Xiu Clan captives had been crying and wailing under the whips, seeing which, the Yao Mountain people would giggle. In the end, these terrifying non-humankind monsters would also get scared, frightened, bleed, and shed tears! They were just the same as human beings! A Yu Clan being had one more eye than a human being, but still, he had one head on his neck, and that head would also be cut into pieces by a sharp blade!

Gradually, a bright laughter echoed across the sky above Yao Mountain City. Yao Mountain people laughed and shouted. They had no more fear or doubts about non-humankind monsters. Instead, an unprecedented strong confidence and courage filled up their hearts.

Man Man, Shaosi, and a large group of disciples from Ji Hao's Palace of Dao sat near the entrance of the underground prison. They had been carefully doing registrations for these captives. All information of a captive would be recorded, including which branch he or she was from, which family he or she belonged to, his or her relationship with the twelve emperors, if he or she was a relative of a power elder or deputy elder...

Shaosi even recorded the total value of each captive's personal assets, family assets, and how much each captive was willing to pay Yao Mountain territory for his or her own freedom.

Every Yu Clan captive was forced to give all the information about him or her, and his or her family, before he or she was sent

down to the prison.

Ji Hao didn't return to Yao Mountain City. Instead, he took Feng Xing, Yu Mu, and Wuzhi Qi to meet Emperor Shun and the others. In Chi Ban Mountain, once again, he saw the twelve non-humankind emperors and the group of power elders, who had now been arguing against each other.

Emperor Shun and the other human representatives sat aside and silently watched them, as they weren't a part of this.

Countless Yu Clan high-grade commanders, family leaders, and elders surrounded the twelve emperors, and had been shouting, yelling, waving their arms, even having saliva spouting out of their mouths. They were urging the twelve emperors to give the order to return to Liang Zhu City and calm the unrest in the city.

Their families, their relatives, their lovers, were all in the city, and so were their sons and daughters, and their illegitimate children. Their family assets, their wealth, the resources they collected from Pan Gu world that they accumulated in all these years, were all in that city.

If it were a conflict between two families, these Yu Clan nobles wouldn't be worried, as long as the safety of their lives and properties could be ensured.

The problem was, this really wasn't a normal family conflict. Yemo Tian...Who knew what he would do?

Hundreds of messengers sent over by landlords lived outside Liang Zhu City were surrounded by large groups of Yu Clan nobles. With hoarse voices, they repeated what they saw over and over again. Yes, they saw an unknown number of power elders and deputy elders be injured badly, and Yemo Tian's destructive weapon crazily damage the city. They also saw the fire rising from the city, and countless luxurious palaces collapsing in the fire. They heard countless warriors roar, and saw heavily armored human warriors darting through the streets and alleys in Liang

Zhu City.

One had to admit that smart and capable ones did exist among Yu Clan nobles. These messengers also brought the news confirmed by their masters through unknown channels — The human warriors currently rampaging in Liang Zhu City used to be slaves in Tusk Basin and Dark Mountain Mine, and the other tens of important mines belonging to Yu Dynasty. Some people armed these human slaves, brought them into Liang Zhu City, and started the rebellion.

Hearing this, countless Yu Clan commanders and family leaders began crying and screaming. They clearly knew how much those human slaves suffered in the mines. Dark mine tunnels, piles of corpses, scrawny human slaves...One could easily imagine what those human slaves would do after they were armed and sent into Liang Zhu City!

With a serious look, Polo Jia came to Emperor Shun as the representative of the twelve non-humankind emperors.

He bowed deeply to Emperor Shun, Si Wen Ming, Ji Hao, and the others, and said with a deep voice, "It's embarrassing, but we have to admit that something uncontrollable has happened. We are willing to form an alliance with the humankind on the foundation of equality, to face the coming enemies together. In return, we hope that you can send your elite forces to help us take back Liang Zhu City."

Breathing deeply, Polo Jia looked at Emperor Shun, his face blushed as he continued with a lower voice, "Your Majesty, we also hope that you can go to Liang Zhu City to persuade the human warriors there to not break the oath of the alliance between you and us."

Emperor Shun looked at Polo Jia expressionlessly. Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming glanced at each other, then both of them grinned.

'Arrogant Yu Clan beings, look at you now!'

Coughing slightly, Ji Hao said in a bland tone, "An alliance on the foundation of equality?Good...But, our Emperor Shun is such a noble being..."

Ji Hao spread his palm towards Polo Jia, basically saying 'Why would Emperor Shun help you restrain the human warriors in Liang Zhu City for nothing?'

Chapter 1454: A Secret Agreement

"This is really not bad!"

Standing on the city of great calamity which belonged to the Red Sun, Ji Hao was curiously stroking a golden statue.

According to Yi Di, who witnessed the power of a city of great calamity, these golden statues standing on the wall of each city of great calamity could easily shatter the earth hundreds of miles in radius, and kill over one-thousand spirit turtles, which had amazing defensive powers, with one strike.

Ji Hao gently stroked the golden statue. With his sensitive fingers, he sensed the fine grains on its surface, that ordinary people could not see. His spirit power was drilling into the statue like water flows. Ji Hao wanted to figure out the structure of this golden statue. It would be even better if he could draw a plan for this kind of a statue.

Thanks to Great Liberty, Ji Hao gained all Polo Do's memories. As a sage from the Flow Moon, Polo Do memorized almost all records and books kept in Yu Dynasty. From his memories, Ji Hao had learned a lot.

Magic formations, spell symbols, drugs, puppets, large-scale warships, flying forts... Ji Hao leaned nearly everything. But sadly, the cities of great calamity were purchased from Pan Yu world by nobles from Yu Dynasty with high prices. They bought the cities of great calamity, but didn't have their structural drawings. Therefore, Ji Hao had no way to find out how these cities were designed and built.

Inch by inch, Ji Hao sent his spirit power into the golden statue, carefully discovering its secret.

The cities of great calamity dispelled the clouds in the sky as they flew back to Liang Zhu City at their highest speed, against a strong

wind. The cities were filled with non-humankind warriors. On the ground, countless non-humankind warriors had also been marching back to the north as fast as possible. They were gasping loudly for air.

On behalf of the twelve families in power, Polo Jia made a serious request to Emperor Shun and asked the humankind to help the non-humankind defend against the rebellion.

Ji Hao immediately extorted them. He said that Emperor Shun was a noble being, while Emperor Shennong and Emperor Xuanyuan were venerated, legendary beings. Therefore, without enough benefits, the human emperors would never help the non-humankind to restrain the human warriors in Liang Zhu City, who had now been rampantly damaging the city.

After a series of bargaining, the three cities of great calamity were given to the humankind, coming under Si Wen Ming's direct control.

Ji Hao and the others hopped onto a city of great calamity and headed to Liang Zhu City along with the non-humankind army.

"Indeed a treasure...As I always believed, extortion is how you get rich." The structure of the three-hundred-meters-tall golden statue was extremely complicated. Countless hair-thin energy channels existed inside it, connected by billions of complicated, multi helical structured spells. Therefore, Ji Hao needed to concentrate all his attention to trigger these spell symbols with unknown functions.

A heavy cough could be heard. With a sulky face, Piji Nu walked out from behind a decorative golden flowerpot.

"Marquis Yao!" Maybe because the non-humankind had now been making requests to the humankind, Piji Nu was much politer to Ji Hao.

"Aha, Emperor Piji Nu, what a surprise to see you here! The weather is nice, isn't it?" Stroking the golden statue with both

hands, Ji Hao talked some nonsense.

Piji Nu's eye corners twitched.

When the troop took off from Chi Ban Mountain, the weather was indeed warm and sunny. But, it was already midnight now, and the sky was covered in thick dark clouds. Bolts of thunder sizzled and flashed in the dark clouds, as a heavy rain seemed to fall right away.

'The weather is nice?'

Piji Nu gave a brilliant grin and responded, "The weather is nice indeed...I have the best fruit wine here. Would you like some? The wine was made by my great-grandfather, with ten-thousand-year-old red berries as the main material. It is top-grade, very good for your soul cultivation."

"Just say what you want to say!" Ji Hao said straightforwardly, "I'm busy at cracking the structure of your city of great calamity, so I have no time to waste on you."

Piji Nu's face twitched slightly. Giving an embarrassed smile, he said, "Aha, alright, I'll just say it out...You know, as the Emperor of the Piji Family, I do have a high income each year. But, my personal income is not completely disposable. Back in Pan Yu world, I still have a large family to support."

"Un-huh, go on." Ji Hao put his face almost against the golden statue, whereupon he opened his erect eye and released a clear beam of light to the surface of the statue. A few spell symbols sparkled on the statue, while a feet-wide area turned translucent, exposing the spell symbols in an extra complicatedly structured magic formation inside it.

Seeing Ji Hao brazenly stealing the results of the wisdom from Pan Yu world masters, Piji Nu had an anger rising from his heart. But soon, he restrained the anger. With an almost-sweet smile, Piji Nu said to Ji Hao, "So, I saved for many years, and even pledged

with my future income to make a sum of money. With that money, I purchased..."

"Your spirit beast, right?" Ji Hao finally turned around and threw a glance at Piji Nu.

"Yes, my sky dominator!" Seeing Ji Hao finally paying attention to him, Piji nu hurriedly gave the warmest grin and continued, "I hope you can understand. Without it, I am weakened by at least seventy percent. I can't live without it!"

Ji Hao's fingers finally left the golden statue. He straightened his waist, held his hands behind his body, and looked at Piji Nu from head to toe.

"What do I get?" After ten whole minutes, Ji Hao began talking, "Why would I give the sky dominator back to you for nothing? You see, you offered us three cities of great calamity, so Emperor Shun agreed to persuade the human forces in your city to give up. Three cities of great calamity!"

Ji Hao showed Piji Nu three fingers to emphasize the great value of the three cities of great calamity.

Piji Nu's expression changed slightly as he said with a low voice, "I am willing to pay any price to redeem the sky dominator, but..."

"But, you don't have money at the moment, right?" Shaking his head, Ji Hao also lowered his voice and said, "Alright, I don't need you to redeem your spirit beast with money. I, Marquis Yao Ji Hao, am never a greedy person!"

Piji Nu was shocked by Ji Hao's shamelessness — He extorted three cities of great calamity from the twelve families in power, and yet, he claimed that he was never a greedy person!

However, the three cities of great calamity were public properties of the humankind now...In a certain way, Ji Hao was truly not greedy.

Breathing deeply, Piji Nu lowered his voice and said, "Alright,

please tell me, what do you want? I have to make this clear though, the sky dominator is indeed very important to me, but you shouldn't push this too far."

"How would I?" Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and looked at Piji Nu from up to down, then said, "Let's be friends!"

Smiling brightly, Ji Hao reached a hand out towards Piji Nu, and said, "Everyone needs friends, right?"

Piji Nu stared at Ji Hao in shock. A while later, he abruptly grabbed Ji Hao's hand and said, "Are you asking me to sell information about Yu Dynasty? I have to tell you that my dignity will not allow me to sell you any information about my Piji Family!"

"That'll be enough... I only need to know about the other eleven families!" Ji Hao smiled even brighter.

Chapter 1455: Liang Zhi in Chaos

In a secret room of the city of great calamity, Ji Hao and Piji Nu sat facing each other, with a small square table between them.

Placed straight on the table were two ink brush pens, ink stones, and two dragon skin scrolls. The cold sweat had been oozing out of Piji Nu's forehead while he looked at the two scrolls in trepidation, not knowing what to do.

The dragon skin scrolls glistened with a dim light. Characters were written on the scrolls with a vividly red ink, stating that Piji Nu was willing to ally with Ji Hao to redeem the sky dominator, and provide him with important formation regarding the other eleven families in power.

Ji Hao even 'nicely' gave a clear indication of the fact that some information provided by Piji Nu is related to the lifeblood of the eleven families in power. This information was specifically written on the scrolls. Any leakage of information would undoubtedly turn the other eleven families in power into Piji Nu's sworn enemies. Then, Piji Nu would be hunted all his life as a traitor of the entire Yu Dynasty.

After all, this important information included the secrets of 'warrior spirits' from the A Family of High Moon, the weaknesses of the 'soul reincarnation magic' created by the Poto Family of Sunset Moon, the weak periods caused by the life-force overdraft magic of the Xiu Family from the Living Moon, and so on.

For his sky dominator, Piji Nu sold all secrets of the other eleven families in power to Ji Hao without reserve. In return, the agreement between Ji Hao and him also indicated that Ji Hao would try his best to help Piji Ju gain an even greater power and higher position.

Ji Hao bit his fingertip and shed a drop of blood, drawing a sun-shaped red spell symbol in the air. Afterward, he sent a strand of

spirit power into the spell symbols, imprinting it deeply on the two dragon skin scrolls in duplicate.

The fist-sized spell symbol glowed brightly on the two scrolls, emitting a great heat.

Ji Hao pushed the two scrolls to Piji Nu, gently knocked his fingers on them, and said, "Come on, Emperor Piji Nu, it's your turn...You've already done these things, so don't regret it! You didn't betray your family, did you? So, you're still a virtuous being."

Piji Nu's mouth corner twitched. He raised his head suddenly, staring straight at Ji Hao, "Do you know what I want now? I really want to change my mind, then tear you into pieces with my very own hands. I want to mix your corpse and your soul with a special magic, drag you outside, and feed you to maggots!"

Through gritted teeth, Piji Nu continued through gritted teeth with a twisted voice, "Indeed, I didn't betray my family, but I betrayed my kind...Poto Family's soul reincarnation magic is the biggest reason why we can conquer so many worlds. Because of this secret magic, our elders, who have reached the end of their lives, can remain living as souls. When the opportunity comes, they will again have healthy and strong physical bodies!"

Taking another deep breath, Piji Nu slowly stood up with a vicious look on his face, as he strugglingly reached his hand to Ji Hao and said, "I should really tear you into pieces. I shouldn't have sold you this information...My spirit beast, my sky dominator... But, my people...Do you know that the Poto Family's reincarnation magic isn't the best, but...it's so important!"

Ji Hao smiled, stood up abruptly, and threw a heavy slap on Piji Nu's face.

Piji Nu saw nothing but shreds of shadows flashing across his eyes. He failed to see the motion curve of Ji Hao's hand before it landed on his face and threw him violently to the ground.

"Wake up, Piji Nu! You've already done it! Make it simple and quick, don't hesitate like a girl!" Ji Hao said impatiently, "Wanna kill me and silence me? Are you capable of that?"

Shaking the two scrolls loudly, Ji Hao sneered at Piji Nu's shocked face and said, "You don't get to turn against me. Working with me is your only way out! Otherwise, I will now tell everybody about what you have done. I guarantee you that our human army will help the other eleven families to wipe your Piji Family entirely out!"

Piji Nu's facial expressions changed quickly. Rubbing his swelling face, he gritted his teeth and mumbled, "Your strength..."

Ji Hao again put the two scrolls before his face and said while looking at him coldly and evilly, "My strength is beyond your imagination. Cut the crap, and leave your soul seal now. What are you hesitating for? Do you want your sky dominator back or not?"

Piji Nu was still hesitating. Looking at him, Ji Hao sighed impatiently and continued, "Alright, alright, listen to me, dear Emperor Piji Nu. You will be benefited anyway, won't you? Read our agreement, what does it say? I will help you to become the supreme ruler of Yu Dynasty! That will be way better than sharing the power with other people!"

Piji Nu hesitated for another short while, then looked at Ji Hao with dazzling eyes as he asked, "You won't break your promise, will you? You won't kick down the ladder after you're done with me, right?"

Ji Hao lunged Pan Gu Dragon Mark straight out, seeming to pierce the sword into Piji Nu's heart.

Piji Nu grabbed over the two scrolls, bit his fingertip broken, and left his soul seal on both scrolls. Breathed heavily, he put one scroll into his sleeve with a dark face, then threw another scroll to Ji Hao's face, and yelled, "Give my sky dominator back, now!"

Ji Hao smilingly gave the sky dominator back to him.

Piji Nu incanted a spell and let out a sharp stream of blood towards the sky dominator. Followed by a deep roar, the nine-headed and eighteen-winged sky dominator slowly rose from behind Piji Lo.

'Dong, dong, dong.'

The door of the secret room was banged by someone. Piji Nu remained silent for a while, then opened the door. Piji Tian and Piji Di stood outside the door, nodding together to Piji Nu and said, "We have arrived at Liang Zhu City. The Nether Moon has already sent their ghost army into the city!"

Before he finished, a thunderous boom could be heard from the outside.

Just now, the Nether Moon raised an enormous zombie army by the South Gate of Liang Zhu City. Once the army was gathered, one-hundred divine towers that were thousands of meters tall on the city wall dazzled. Tens of thousands of thunderbolts descended from the wall and accurately struck into the core area of the zombie army.

A dark mushroom cloud rolled up hundreds of miles high. Circles of black and red fiery light mixed with dazzling lightning bolts spread in all directions.

On the ground, the Fan Family people from the Nether Moon, who had been directing the zombie army, were swirled away by the impact waves. They cried in pain while the fire and lightning bolts swept across their bodies. Tens of thousands of Fan Family people were burned into ashes within a blink of an eye.

Ji Hao and the others hurriedly landed onto the wall of the city of great calamity.

Yu Clan nobles looked down at Liang Zhu City. In panic, they found that Liang Zhu City was entirely covered under a

tremendous dark screen. Through the translucent dark screen, they saw the fire burning everywhere. By now, only a handful of buildings in the city were left undamaged.

Great explosive sounds could be heard from every corner of the city without an end. In the city, people were running desperately.

The enormous city was a scene of Chaos, as if the world was ending.

Chapter 1456: Secret Discussion

Nine cities of great calamity floated in the air, three-hundred miles above Liang Zhu City.

On the ground, non-humankind warriors gathered like ants, shouting and yelling restlessly. From the dark, boundless arrays, the sparkles of communication treasures could be seen from time to time. The light sparkled like stars in the night sky. Clearly, non-humankind commanders had been trying their bests to contact each other.

Every once in a while, tens to hundreds of non-humankind slaves would burst into howls and rush to Liang Zhu City from every direction. But, no matter which direction they approached the city from, thunderbolts, dagger-sharp blades, raging fires, and poisonous gases would roll down from the city wall and shred these poor slaves.

Within a couple of hours, before any result was delivered from the discussion run by the twelve non-humankind emperors, tens of thousands of non-humankind slaves died on their way scouting.

The three cities of great calamity which now belonged to the humankind were quietly floating in the air, cautiously keeping a distance away from the main non-humankind force.

All non-humankind beings were kicked out of the three metal cities. At the moment, no other people but large groups of Maguspriests were busy in the three cities.

Led by Candle Dragon Gui, Magi Palace Magi carefully searched every corner of the three cities of great calamity. They set a layer of magic seals to isolate the three cities from the outside world, taking strict precautions against the non-humankind, in case they controlled the three cities remotely through an unknown method.

Elite human warriors came into the city, walking around as they

tried to control all kinds of unfamiliar weapons in the city. Occasionally, they would laugh happily when they discovered a new interesting weapon.

In one city of great calamity, Emperor Shun, Emperor Shennong, Emperor Xuanyuan, Si Wen Ming, Ji Hao, and some other human ministers, added with the representatives from the dragon-kind, phoenix-kind, and the other non-human forces, gathered in a room. While watching Liang Zhu City and the surrounding areas through a crystal mirror, they had been running a fairly intense discussion regarding how this great opportunity should be used.

It was indeed a great opportunity.

Among all present on the scene, including Emperor Shun and Si Wen Ming, less than a handful of people knew that Ji Hao had already kidnapped a large number of Yu Clan nobles from Liang Zhu City. As for the others, including the representatives from the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind, they all believed that Liang Zhu City had simply fallen into a rebellion. They thought Yemo Tian was the one who activated the final defense system of the city.

"It's an inner conflict between non-humankind monsters. I think, we don't have to keep our words." Ao Hao smashed his foot against the long table placed in the middle of the room while spouting, "We should strike at an unexpected moment and stab them from the back. Kill all male non-humankind beings, then leave all soft non-humankind girls to me! I'll screw them all to death!"

Laughing wildly, Ao Hao pointed at Emperor Shun and yelled, "Don't hesitate, break the agreement! In the worst case, Emperor Shun will suffer a counterattack for breaking the oath...You humankind have such a giant population. How bad can the death of one or two emperors be? Hahaha, Emperor Shun is giving up the throne anyway. If he has to die, let him!"

Ji Hao was with an awfully dark face, and so was Si Wen Ming's. Emperor Shun's eye corners twitched slightly.

Emperor Shun was a good-tempered, well-educated person, but even he wanted to pull out his sword and hack this silly dragon to death. Stupid dragons, what else did they have in their heads except for killing and women? What else could they possibly think about?

Coughing loudly, without giving anyone else a chance to talk, Ao Hao carelessly raised his arms and continued laughing, "Of course, stabbing someone from the back is one of our specialties! Don't you worry! When we're about to kill them all, we, the brave dragon warriors will definitely be at the front. Of all the treasures in Liang Zhu City, crystals, and jade, we want sixty...no, seventy...no, eighty percent!"

Picking up a giant teacup and pouring some thick tea into his mouth, Ao Hao puffed out his chest and carried on, "Eighty percent of the treasures and all girls, how's that? Your Master Ao Ritian is the fairest man! Hahaha!"

His wild laughter echoed in the room. Proudly, he cupped his hands to all representatives, even casting sheep's eyes at a middle-aged-looking beautiful phoenix lady.

Emperor Shun breathed deeply and said in a bland tone, "People, as for what's going to happen next, we need to consider carefully."

With a pair of bright, sharp eyes, Emperor Shun glanced at every representative on the scene and continued with his deep and strong voice, "Do we honestly help the non-humankind to calm the unrest in their city, or seize the opportunity to harm the non-humankind as badly as we can? This relates to the future of our humankind. We have to be careful and cautious."

"People, please think about the overall situation here. If we choose to harm to non-humankind, as they said, we may need to face the powerful Yu Clan being who is coming to our world by ourselves. On the other hand, how many warriors might we lose if we choose to strike at the non-humankind today?"

"If we do not take the chance to harm, and even exterminate them, and if they choose to follow that powerful Yu Clan being, what would happen? Them and us, together, we may be able to defeat the powerful being. But, what if they turn their weapons around and give us a heavy strike afterward?"

"They may even attack us suddenly during the war against the powerful Yu Clan being. How should we deal with that?"

Pointing at the crystal mirror floating in the midair, Emperor Shun continued, "Look, Liang Zhu City is right here, in disorder. Non-humankind beings are in panic, without knowing what to do. This is their weakest, most disordered, and powerless moment, ever since they invaded our world."

"Today, any decision we make might affect the future of our kind. We have to be more cautious...People, please ponder upon this..." Glancing at Ao Hao, Emperor Shun added coldly, "...with your brains!"

Emperor Shun barely used mean words against anyone all his life, but Ao Hao's speech just now did make him feel uncomfortable. Emperor Shun couldn't help but taunt Ao Hao for his brainlessness.

Ao Hao didn't get Emperor Shun's point at all. He laughed loudly to the others in the room and said, "He's right, use your brains. Alright, everyone, tell us about your good ideas...But in my opinion, my plan has no risk at all!"

Clicking his tongue and shaking his large head, Ao Hao raised his head, lost in his own imagination as he murmured, "Ah, those Yu Clan girls, their skins are glowing white and so tender! It's like some juice will ooze out when you squeeze them ...Ah, their slim limbs just make me drool."

The room fell into stillness. Except for the group of dragons, all the others were lost in their thoughts.

Liang Zhu City was in disorder. This was the best opportunity ever to eliminate the non-humankind. The problem was, how should everyone seize the opportunity?

Chapter 1457: Escape Alone

Dispute, endless dispute...

Ji Hao sat calmly in the room as he closed his eyes, resting. In his spiritual space, the embryo of Dao sat with crossed legs and a faint smile on its face. Quietly, it had been absorbing the pure soul power releasing from the five-colored cauldron.

No matter what decision Emperor Shun and the others made, Ji Hao had the confidence to proceed or step back freely. After all, he had so many non-humankind captives in his hands. He had already seized the weakness of the non-humankind.

Spirit power transformed into a giant invisible web and covered the air, allowing Ji Hao to watch the whole area from the sky.

Finally, smart people made their moves. Thousands of strong Jia Clan warriors trod on metal plates and carefully approached Liang Zhu City. Slightly further than a hundred miles away from the city, they paused in the air and lined up straight, each taking a deep breath and then shouting out loud in chorus.

"Yemo Tian, it's not too late to stop! Give up now! Emperor Yemo Luoye has promised that your position in the family will remain."

"All members of the Glorious Domination, you have committed serious crimes. Under the order of the twelve emperors, anyone who unseals the city and surrenders will be forgiven for his past misdeeds. If you refuse to come to your senses and insist on rebelling, all your powers will be taken away. Once our force breaks into the city, the best result for you would be life imprisonment."

"Yemo Tian, open the gate and surrender now! What are you waiting for?"

"All members of the twelve families in power, open the gate now and surrender. Don't mislead yourself!"

Full Moon masters had been casting a secret magic behind these Jia Clan warriors to amplify their voices. Their thunderous voices echoed across Liang Zhu City, shaking the clouds in the sky.

Through the transparent dark screen, one could see large groups of heavily armored warriors walking onto the city wall. They were waving their hands and saying something. But blocked by the ten-miles-thick screen, no one knew what had they been saying. However, people with good eyesight would discover the weird expressions on their faces.

Instinctively, a few Jia Clan warriors treading on metal plates made a few steps closer to the city. One of them shouted loudly, "Louder! What're you saying? Oi? Why are you waving your arms?"

The looks on those people' faces turned weirder and weirder. They waved their arms even faster. They seemed to be shouting as well, but no sound could be heard from the city through the thick screen.

Ji Hao smiled. He activated the defense system and blocked all sounds before he left Liang Zhu City. The translucent, ten-miles-thick screen only allowed people to hazily see each other's moves through it, but it was impossible for people in the city to contact the ones on the outside.

All of a sudden, a series of thunder burst out. The few Jia Clan warriors were too impatient, that they accidentally crossed the line marking the distance of one-hundred-miles away from the city. Hundreds of water-tank-sized thunder bombs fell from the sky and struck violently on them. The bombs went off. Surely, the few Jia Clan warriors were blown up with no part of their bodies remaining. Hundreds of the other Jia Clan warriors were also killed by the bombs. With a series of curses, the group of Jia Clan warriors, who were lined up in the air and had been shouting towards the city, hurriedly turned around and controlled their metal plates to fly away as fast as possible.

Half an hour later, a group of Yu Clan nobles rose into the air, holding all strange kinds of contact treasures, casting their own special magic. Light streams flew to Liang Zhu City along with gusts of breezes and waves of power vibrations. They all tried their own ways to send messages to the city.

Nevertheless, for the safety of Liang Zhu City, non-humankind beings spent years to build this final defense system, with no spare efforts. It was perfect. Normally, it delivered no special effect when it wasn't activated. But now, it was fully activated. Liang Zhu City was impregnable at the moment, that not even a word could be sent into the city.

Fire sparkles rose from the dark screen above the city, as the messages sent over by these Yu Clan nobles were shredded by the defense system. Following another series of angry curses, this group of Yu Clan noble returned to their city of great calamity frustratedly.

The time was passing by. More and more fires burned in the city, setting ablaze the few surviving buildings, with dense smoke coiling in the air.

The Highest Conference Hall area was strangely covered in splendid glows and warm mist streams. Strong natural power streams formed thousands of differently sized and colored swirls, spinning swiftly while emitting dazzling lights.

Suddenly, tens of enormous fiery light spheres shot upwards from the Highest Conference Hall. A tens of thousands of meters long stream of light rose straight into the sky like an arrow, then violently bumped into the dark screen above the city.

The dark screen quaked intensely. Surrounding the city, countless human beings exclaimed.

In the middle of that stream of light was a hundreds of meters tall, dark, man-shaped figure. Behind it, twenty-four differently shaped wings were spread, releasing thunderbolts, fires, gales and

all kinds of energy waves, wrapping the dark man-shaped figure and making it spin swiftly. Foot by foot, the figure drilled into the screen.

"How is that possible?" A Xiu Clan old man stood on a metal plate, controllably leaning towards the city as he yelled, "The defense of Liang Zhu City is unbreakable! What weapon is that? How can he...How can he..."

The ten-miles-thick dark screen quaked violently as the gigantic dark figure had already drilled halfway through.

Through the translucent screen, people with good eyesight could already see Yemo Tian floating in the crystal cockpit between the eyebrows of the destructive weapon. He was covered in blood, with deep wounds all over his skin. Blood was surging out of the wounds in large streams.

Everyone knew about this kind of 'weapon' would understand that Yemo Tian was injured by the counterforce from the weapon, because he overstrained to control the high-grade weapon. Clearly, he had fallen unconscious, and by now, the destructive weapon was acting under its own will!

Following behind the destructive weapon was a cyan dragon, a white tiger, a rosefinch, and a black turtle. The four holy creatures rose into the air and transformed into four torrents of energy, chasing after the weapon. The four energy torrents struck on the dark screen without making any noise. The four differently colored strong energy waves spread speedily in all directions on the dark screen, dimming everything they touched.

Boom! Covered in a faint layer of golden light, the destructive weapon rushed out of Liang Zhu City. It was shaking intensely. The violent vibration woke Yemo Tian up. He weakly opened his eyes and confusedly glanced around, but afterward, he burst into a wild laughter. "Haha! I'm out! I'm out safely! Hahaha, dragon, tiger, lion, mammoth, Dishi Jin, Piji Wuyue, Polo Yu, Trai...

Traitors, you wait and see!"

The destructive weapon soared up. Without sincerity, Yemo Tian continued, "My brothers, you hang on in there. I will come back with more people and save you! Ah, I swear, if you die, I will certainly take revenge for you!"

Without taking another glance back, Yemo Tian fled in a flurry. The destructive weapon moved as fast as a bolt of lighting, such that the twelve emperors didn't manage to stop it at all.

Chapter 1458: Break the Weapon With the Sword

Ji Hao suddenly wanted to roar with laughter.

Yemo Tian fled alone and left all members of the Glorious Domination in the city. He ran away alone shamelessly.

As he had left, those playboys from the Glorious Domination and their loyal followers would suffer. Currently, the city was filled with believers of the four men with a dragon, a tiger, a lion, and a mammoth. The eyes of those human warriors had all been burning red by the fire of anger. God knew how crazily they would torture the non-humankind beings left in Liang Zhu City.

Picking up a cup of tea, Ji Hao's hand was even shaking slightly, as he had been trying so hard to keep himself from bursting into a wild, hysterical laughter.

Clearly, the group of playboys from the Glorious Domination weren't the poorest ones. The ones with the worst luck should be the four men under Priest Hua and Priest Mu's guidance, right? They worked so hard, developed so many non-humankind disciples, and finally broke into Liang Zhu City. However, Ji Hao stepped in at the last moment. By now, all disciples of the four lotus altars were locked in the city by the final defense system.

Perhaps, with powerful defensive treasures or talismans given by Priest Hua and Priest Mu, the four men could escape from Liang Zhu City. But, would they dare to? Would they dare to leave so many disciples in the city and escape?

They weren't like Yemo Tian, who was supported by powerful people. Therefore, he was allowed to do all kinds of irresponsible things. But, the four men could not do the same. So many of their disciples were in the city now. If they ever dared to leave them in the city to die, even as disciples under the direct guidance of Priest

Hua and Priest Mu, they would have to face serious consequences!

Taking a large gulp of the tea, Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and folded his legs, leisurely shaking his foot. At the moment, Liang Zhu City must be in utter chaos, right? The four men must be roaring angrily. How should they save themselves from the difficult situation? Deep down, Ji Hao was truly looking forward to the drama!

The one staying in the city of great calamity was Ji Hao himself. His seventy-two clones had scattered around Liang Zhu City long ago. When Yemo Tian fled in helter-skelter with the destructive weapon, he ran into a clone of Ji Hao.

Without hesitation, the clone gave a bright shout and released nine bolts of Yu Yu divine thunder in a row. Sharp thunderbolts left hundreds of miles long light beams in the sky, accurately striking on the crystal cockpit between the weapon's eyebrows. The thunderbolts disintegrated, tearing the crystal cockpit violently while causing ear-piercing noises.

The weapon quaked intensely. Its flying speed was slowed down sharply. Inside the crystal cockpit, Yemo Tian took a deep breath. After pouring six bottles of top-grade healing drugs into his mouth, the wounds on his body began shrinking slowly. He raised his head and looked at the one who stopped him through a thick layer of crystal.

"Marquis Yao, Ji Hao? Why are you here?" Yemo Tian was confused. He looked at Ji Hao and asked. This airspace belonged to Liang Zhu City, and no human marquis was supposed to show up in here.

"I always wanted to try fighting your destructive weapon. People say that the true path to victory is to find your opponent's weakness. In the future, I may fight against your real father, and I suppose his people have enough destructive weapons, don't they?" Ji Hao's clone slowly raised its hands, and Pan Gu Dragon Mark

emerged in his hand quietly.

The clone gripped the sword hilt with both his hands. The sword sensed Ji Hao's strong intent of fighting, shaking slightly itself in response. Silhouettes of a pair of dragons appeared on both edges of the sword. The faintly audible dragon roars echoed through the air, dispelling the clouds and creating a giant blue circle in the cloudy sky.

Yemo Tian burst into laughter. He even lied down and rolled in the cockpit, as if he had heard the most hilarious joke in the world.

"You, Marquis Yao Ji Hao, a barbarian, an ignorant, stupid, uneducated, unevolved creature, how dare you say something like that? You fight against my father? You fight against my great, supreme father? Do you even hear yourself?" Yemo Tian laughed so hard that he even squeezed tears out of his eye sockets. The crystal cockpit was filled with a light-purple liquid. His clear teardrops floated in the purple liquid while glistening.

"You have no idea how strong my father is! You have no way to find out the massive difference between the true nobles from Pan Yu world and the descendants of those impoverished families." Yemo Tian proudly raised his head and started telling Ji Hao's clone what Ji Hao wanted to know the most.

"You know what? The light of the three suns and nine moons cannot reach Pan Gu world. Therefore, the descendants of those impoverished families who were born in this world have never truly showered under the light of the three suns and nine moons. If one compared the real nobles in Pan Yu world to the dragons soaring in the sky, the impoverished family people born in Pan Gu world are like rats living underground, lowly, and not even worth mentioning!"

"You can't understand the difference between them. The real Yu Clan nobles, who have the glow of the three suns and nine moons reaching every corner of their bodies, are so great, so respectable.

Simply speaking, a Sun and Moon stage being from Pan Yu world is ten, a hundred, even a thousand times stronger than a same level being here in Pan Gu world! And that's all because they understand the natural laws way more thoroughly, and have much better control of their powers."

"Any knight under my father's command can easily flatten the entire Liang Zhu City!" Through the thick layer of crystal, Yemo Tian pointed at Ji Hao's clone and shouted, "Those useless impoverished people, they spent so many years, yet still failed to conquer you lowly barbarians. But when my father arrives, he will send out a random army, which will destroy your civilization in a couple of years!"

Proudly holding his head high, Yemo Tian sneered and continued, "Of course, destroying your civilization won't take much time. Instead, traveling would be the most time-consuming thing! Pan Gu world is way too huge. How many years will it take for my father's army to travel around the world and uproot your civilization?"

Ji Hao's clone raised its eyebrows and said, "Are they really so strong? The powers of the three suns and nine moons, are they truly so magical?"

Yemo Tian proudly looked at the clone and responded, "Without seeing Pan Yu world with your own eyes, you can never know how great it is."

Yemo Tian's injuries had recovered completely. He suddenly clenched his fists, widely opened his three eyes, and growled at Ji Hao. From the back of the destructive weapon, the wings released raging fires and dazzling thunderbolts, which vibrated the surrounding space in a thousand miles of radius. The space collapsed towards the weapon like flowing water.

A dark light condensed into a long sword in each hand of the destructive weapon. Yemo Tian roared hoarsely while the weapon

swung all eight swords down at Ji Hao's head.

Ji Hao's body was covered in a clear light. He moved swiftly, and magically flashed through the twisted space, showing up behind the destructive weapon. Pan Gu Dragon Sword released a thousands of meters long beam of light and hacked violently on the back of the weapon's neck.

Crack! Bolts of electricity burst from the neck of the destructive weapon. In the air, layers of thin and hexagon defensive screens emerged. The dark defensive screens vibrated intensely, causing thunderous explosive sounds.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark penetrated two hundred and forty thousand layers of extremely thin dark screens and pierced into the nape of the weapon.

Fire sparkles rose while Pan Gu Dragon Mark sank deeply into the weapon.

Chapter 1459: Destruction and Thunder Trial

In the room, people were still wrangling, as Ji Hao slightly clenched his fingers.

The teacup held in his hand was crafted by a Xiu Clan master, but at the moment, five finger marks were left on it, with the loops and whorls on each finger clearly visible.

Ji Hao closed his eyes, concentrated on controlling the clone facing Yemo Tian. All the other seventy-one clones of his had stopped moving. Through the connection between all clones, the rest seventy-one clones had been sending their powers to the one with Pan Gu Dragon Mark.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark sank deeper and deeper into the nape of the destructive weapon, bit by bit. Fire sparkles were generated from all over the weapon's hundreds of meters tall body. Following a faintly audible explosive noise, the nape of the weapon suddenly shone with a dazzling light. Through the blinding light, one could see countless overlapping spell symbols inside the weapon, fighting against Pan Gu Dragon Mark.

Ever Since Ji Hao attained Pan Gu Dragon Mark, he had never encountered such a difficult opponent. He felt like trying to cut the skin of an old pig, which was covered in resin and sand, with a rusty knife. He had to put forth all his strength to push Pan Gu Dragon Mark forward slowly.

But of course, the clone wasn't as strong as himself. If it were Ji Hao controlling Pan Gu Dragon Mark himself, it might be a lot easier.

Following a sizzling noise, twisting light beams shone from the wound on the destructive weapon's nape, coiling on Pan Gu Dragon Mark. The entire destructive weapon was trembling. Much

similar to the eruption of a volcano, an immense counterforce burst from the weapon, violently striking on the sword.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark had already sunken into the destructive weapon for three-feet and six-inches. Waves of destructive power flooded into the weapon and transformed into dragon-shaped shades, entangling the spell symbol system inside the weapon.

Ji Hao had a strange feeling, that Pan Gu Dragon Sword didn't pierce into a man-shaped lifeless weapon. Instead, it seemed to have invaded into a small world.

The non-humankind beings from Pan Yu world indeed had an advanced civilization that current human beings could not understand. The hundreds of meters tall destructive weapon was built as a small independent world by them, possessing an unimaginable power.

Inexhaustible power transformed into blinding light and raging fire, erupting from the destructive weapon. If Pan Gu Dragon Mark were an average-level pre-world spirit weapon, it might have been melted completely by the energy spurted out of the destructive weapon already.

The destructive weapon was indeed a crowning achievement of the non-humankind civilization!

Scorching hot light beams coiled up across the Pan Gu Dragon Sword and soon struck on Ji Hao's clone. The clone's skin was shattered immediately, exposing its translucent body, which was generated from pure natural powers. The light beams flashed on its body like countless sharp blades, cutting it and leaving bone-deep, giant slashes.

The seventy-two clones combined their powers. Sitting straight in the room in the city of great calamity, Ji Hao again clenched his fingers. The exquisite teacup was crushed in his hand, quietly turning into a strand of smoke and dissipating. The other seventy-one clones disappeared simultaneously, while all their powers

were sent to the clone facing Yemo Tian, then being injected into Pan Gu Dragon Mark.

Along with a sonorous dragon roar, a blinding torrent of light was released from Pan Gu Dragon Mark. A series of dazzling light exploded from the nape of the destructive weapon, and following a deafening series of booms, Ji Hao's clone created a giant hole on the nape of the destructive weapon.

The neck of the weapon was halfway opened. From its broken neck, dense smoke puffed out, while raging fire burned. Streams of sticky, lava-like liquid, which was condensed from pure energy, gushed ceaselessly out of the weapon, similar to the blood of a living creature.

The liquid emitted a blinding dark light, pouring to the ground like a heavy rain.

The forest down below suffered a catastrophic disaster. A bean-sized drop of liquid fell on the ground and quaked slightly, then went off immediately. The dark light and scorching heat became overwhelming, as destructive waves of energy swept across the forest with a radius of hundreds of miles, incinerating everything in the area.

Countless bean-sized drops of liquid fell from the sky, splashing on the ground.

Black mushroom clouds burst open one after another. The ten-thousand-miles around the spot was shrouded in the dark light and fire. The ground disappeared layer by layer, and within a second, a tremendous hole appeared on the ground, thousand-miles deep and ten-thousand miles wide.

Crack!

An enormous black swirling cloud emerged above the heads of Ji Hao and the destructive weapon. Raging-dragon-like thunderbolts sizzled swiftly in the cloud, causing a dreadful rumbling noise.

Following the first series of thunder, a big half of the body of Ji Hao's clone fell apart. Even Ji Hao himself, who sat in the room in a city of great calamity, was affected as well. His internal organs were vibrated, as if someone had thrown a hammer strike at his belly. Meanwhile, he sensed a buzzing noise inside his ears.

It was the power of the world.

The destructive weapon's 'blood' caused severe damages and threat to Pan Gu world. Down below, both the time and space in the forest area had been twisted in a destructive way. Within the area, the natural system was on the verge of collapse. Immediately, Pan Gu world made the most direct reaction. The thunder trial descended. After eighty-one sky-shaking claps of thunder, hundred-miles-thick thunderbolts descended from the sky.

Once the hundred-miles-thick thunderbolts left the swirling cloud, they began compressing. By the time the thunderbolts flashed across the air and struck on the head of the destructive weapon, they had already shrunk by thousands of times and became barely visible. Following an earth-splitting boom, beams of fiery light were emitted from the weapon. With trembling limbs, the destructive weapon fell straight to the ground from the sky.

Ji Hao's clone raised Pan Gu Dragon Mark. The thunderbolts didn't land on Ji Hao's clone, probably because the thunder trial sensed the Pan Gu Dragon Mark's power. Hence, the thunderbolt aimed at the clone also struck mercilessly on the destructive weapon's head.

In the crystal cockpit, Yemo Tian vomited blood and shrieked with a dry voice, his eyes filled with fear and despair.

How great was the power of a world? Thunderbolts landed one after another. The destructive weapon's neck was halfway broken by Ji Hao, and at the moment, it was struggling in midair, wielding its eight dark light swords while trying to defend itself. Along with the world-shaking thunders, the light swords were dimmed and

shattered one after another. The thunderbolts struck on the destructive weapon again and again, bringing it down from the air and pressing it deep underground.

Ji Hao's clone stood in the midair, looking down at the ground. It saw countless cracks on the surface of the destructive weapon, but the weapon remained whole still.

What numbed Ji Hao's scalp was that the badly wounded neck of the weapon had been healing. The destructive weapon was absorbing natural powers to generate new tissues and heal itself.

What a terrifying weapon!

Without Pan Gu Dragon Mark, Ji Hao wouldn't be able to damage this giant thing at all!

But how many weapons in Pan Gu world were at the same level as Pan Gu Dragon Mark?

How many destructive weapons and other same-level pieces would be brought to this world by Yemo Tian's father?

Chapter 1460: Meeting Chi You Again

'Destroy it.'

In the noisy room, Ji Hao stood up, silently transformed into a stream of light, and disappeared into the air.

Ao Hao was halfway drunk. He turned around and yelled mumblingly, "Ji Ritian, where are you going? Haha, drink! Oi, Yemo Luoye, do you like that chick or not?"

The golden bridge was fully activated. At the current stage, Ji Hao's moving speed had reached an extreme degree with the golden bridge. Within a second, he had already flown far away from Liang Zhu City and came to the side of his clone, taking over Pan Gu Dragon Mark. The clone turned into a strand of mist and dissipated. Ji Hao stood under the rumbling swirling thundercloud. Suddenly, a golden halo emerged behind his head.

The halo was thick and bright, releasing dense streams of purple mist as it formed enormous, splendid clouds behind Ji Hao. Once the golden halo and the purple clouds emerged, the thundercloud in the air immediately drifted away from Ji Hao, as if it didn't want to harm even a hair of Ji Hao.

The halo was generated from his natural reward; it was a gift from the world. In all these years, Ji Hao had killed countless non-humankind beings, and during the flood, he saved numerous human beings and living creatures in Pan Gu world. The world rewarded him for all that he had done. Surrounded by in the golden light and the purple clouds, Ji Hao had immeasurable amounts of natural powers gathering towards him under his will.

Unlike the destructive weapon, which forcibly absorbed the natural powers, the natural powers in Pan Gu world had been merging into Ji Hao's body on their own at the moment, without causing him any uncomfortable feeling. Torrents of natural power surged into Ji Hao's body through the halo, easily being turned

into his strength.

Clang!

Pan Gu Dragon Mark was strengthened by Ji Hao's inexhaustible power, and a thousand-miles-long sword light dazzled from the sword edge. Wherever the sword light reached, the clouds were slashed, and even the sky seemed to be cut open.

The thunder trial descended fast, and disappeared even faster. Within the span of three breaths, the thunder trial was already gone. High up in the air, the swirling thundercloud faded abruptly as well.

A giant hole was left on the earth. The destructive weapon lied in the hole spread-eagled. Black smoke was puffing up from its entire body, while electric lights lingered dazzlingly on its surface. It was covered in cracks, letting out fire flakes.

Along with a series of cracking noise, the destructive weapon slowly floated up into the sky.

Inside the crystal cockpit, Yemo Tian had fallen unconscious again. He looked like a doll that ended up in the hands of a violent boy. His entire body was twisted, and all his bones were crushed. Sharp broken bones pierced out of his skin, making him look very scary.

The thunder trial had merely caused the destructive weapon middling damage, but the lingering thunder trial power drilled into the weapon and dealt Yemo Tian an extensive strike. At the moment, not to mention controlling the weapon and continuing the battle, as long as Ji Hao gave the destructive weapon a heavy blow, Yemo Tian would be crushed by the counterforce from the weapon.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark buzzed shrilly while Ji Hao fixed his eyes on the squirming, healing wound on the nape of the destructive weapon.

A crowning achievement of the non-humankind civilization... The manufacturing technology of this kind of destructive weapon had indeed reached the peak of artificial weaponry. If Yemo Tian were slightly stronger, if he could take a greater counterforce from the weapon, he would be able to sweep across Pan Gu world, because only a few living beings in this world could pose an actual threat to him.

"The fewer, the better!" Ji Hao looked at Yemo Tian and murmured. Pan Gu Dragon Mark gave a high-pitched buzz and fiercely lunged down to the crystal cockpit.

A strong gust of wind blew over, along with which, a giant axe swung towards Ji Hao's ribs. Ji Hao sensed a sharp intent of killing aggressively invading his spiritual space, even when the axe was still miles away from his body. If he were an ordinary human being, this especially strong, highly concentrated intent of killing would be powerful enough to destroy his soul.

Ji Hao snorted coldly and continued swinging down Pan Gu Dragon Mark. In the meanwhile, he crooked his left fingers, reaching to the giant axe while causing shrill swishing noise.

Thud!

A man suddenly lunged out of the air and bumped against the destructive weapon with his shoulder. The weapon, which was slowly floating up, drifted sideways for about a hundred meters after being bumped by that man.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark's edge brushed across the weapon's head.

Along with a shrill howl, the man who bumped away the destructive weapon and saved Yemo Tian was cut into two by Pan Gu Dragon Mark. Even his soul was destroyed.

"Jiu!" The man attempting to hack Ji Hao with a giant axe growled. The intent of killing released from the axe grew even stronger.

Clang!

Ji Hao accurately gripped the edge of the axe with his left hand. The blood-red axe dazzled as the muscular man holding the axe tried his best to push it and to cut off Ji Hao's hand. However, the axe remained motionless.

"Chi You?" Ji Hao looked at the man and said, "Long time no see! You don't seem to have improved. You're exactly the same as before, back in Pan Xi world!"

Wearing a heavy armor and gripping the hilt of the axe, Chi You stared at Ji Hao with a twisted face.

Back in Pan Xi world, Chi You was confident of easily chopping Ji Hao away in a face-to-face battle. But now, a few years after what happened in Pan Xi world, Ji Hao took a full strike from him with a single arm!

The potential of human beings was indeed immeasurable. In the history of human beings, many managed to become peak-level powerful beings within a century, such as Emperor Xuanyuan, Shennong, Suiren, and the other former emperors. Becoming backbones of the humankind only cost these legendary emperors tens of years. However, Ji Hao improved way too fast, even faster than those ancient human emperors!

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao...You freak...How can you hurt Lord Yemo Tian?"

Hundred soft, tall, and sturdy figures swished out from the air, holding heavy shields and blades as they surrounded the destructive weapon. Some of them even hopped onto the weapon's head, knocking the crystal cockpit and calling Yemo Tian's name.

"I do want to hurt him. What can you do?" Ji Hao looked at Chi You as he sensed the waves of energy releasing from his axe. Abruptly, Ji Hao bared his teeth and grinned.

Ji Hao turned around his hand. His palm suddenly became

translucent as it released wisps of Chaos power. All of a sudden, Ji Hao's five fingers sank deeply into the thick edge of the axe.

Clang!

Chi You's giant axe was snapped by Ji Hao.

"My!" Chi You popped out his eyes in shock. His axe was a naturally crafted holy weapon, processed by Xiu Clan masters with secret strengthening magic for years. But, without even casting a magic, and with a bare hand and pure physical strength, Ji Hao snapped it!

The axe could even cut the body of a Supreme Magus! But, why was it as fragile as a piece of wood in Ji Hao's hand?

How strong was Ji Hao? What level had he achieved? Chi You was never afraid of anyone in his life, but at this very moment, his legs suddenly softened.

Without giving him any chance, Ji Hao bent his waist and bumped into Chi You's arms. Held in Ji Hao's right hand, Pan Gu Dragon Mark pierced deeply into Chi You's chest.

With one sword move, Ji Hao killed Chi You, the current leader of the Chi You Army, which was a strong force of Yu Dynasty.

Chapter 1461: The Scouts are Here

In the Chaos, Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu were on patrol around Pan Gu world with their disciples, killing all Chaos monsters which were attracted by the strong energy waves releasing from Pan Gu world.

Another priest quietly sat on a hassock. He was surrounded by coiling warm mist, seeming to be relaxed and leisurely. His eyes sparkled with a dim light as he glanced around from time to time.

Occasionally, he would suddenly lock his eyes in one direction, then raise his hand and point there. Following this mysterious priest's moves, one of Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu would certainly fly over with his disciples and slaughter all Chaos creations coming from that way.

Over ten-thousand hyena-shaped Chaos creatures raised dense thunderclouds and barked thunderously, marching to Pan Gu world. The tails of each hyena were actually nine colorful poisonous snakes. Running past stars, these creatures widely opened their jaws and easily tore apart every enormous star with their sharp teeth.

All stars flushed ceaselessly by Chaos tide waves were extremely tough, such that not even a pre-world spirit weapon could leave a mark on a Chaos star. Nevertheless, these hyenas chewed the stars so easily. Clearly, their sharp teeth were exceptionally dangerous.

Po released his spirit power as he saw these crazy monsters from a long distance away. He noticed the sharp teeth in their mouths, and the smooth and thick Chaos stripes on their teeth. Those were natural destructive spell symbols that had the power to crush everything tangible or intangible.

Using these teeth as materials, a super powerful pre-world-level magic treasure could definitely be created. But, sensing the fierce power of these hyenas, plus their giant number, Po hurriedly

bowed to Yu Yu and said, "Shifu, good treasures are coming!"

Yu Yu glanced at the group of hyena and laughed, "Hah, good treasures indeed! These are mix-blood descendants of 'Chaos devouring beasts' and 'extreme negative snakes with nine turns'. Their teeth are just average, but their stomachs can create space, perfect materials to generate 'paradises'!"

Wielding his broad sleeve, Yu Yu chased after these hyenas with giant steps while continuing, "Po, when this is over, you make ten-thousand 'paradises' as soon as possible. I'm not a good fortune teller, but I do know that we will have a lot of disciples in the future. We need to prepare more 'paradises' to accommodate your future young brothers and sisters!"

Po chuckled as he hurriedly followed behind Yu Yu with the other disciples.

The sword formation was built, as four-colored sword light tore apart the space and shattered the Chaos. Within the dazzling, interweaving sword lights, fierce Chaos monsters howled and fell one after another.

The priest sitting on the hassock smiled faintly. Since Yu Yu had made his move, these monsters wouldn't have a chance to break into Pan Gu world anymore. He turned to another direction.

Followed by a sword light, a stream of blood rose. Gui Ling folded her hands and released a Yu Yu divine thunder, blowing the blood into a strand of ash. The ash rolled up, drifting to Pan Gu world along with a Chaos tide wave.

The ash was drawn to Pan Gu world. The Chaos tide wave collapsed and turned into natural powers, being absorbed by the world. Most of the ash merged into the world as well, being absorbed and digested by the world. However, the finest grain of ash suddenly paused in the air, from which, extremely dim wisps of golden light were emitted. The golden light expanded slowly and became a palm-long golden shuttle. Even Yu Yu didn't notice

this.

The shuttle was thickly covered in complicated, gorgeous embossments. Following a sizzling noise, the shuttle cracked the space, merged into the air, and swished across the sky, flying a million miles within a single second. The next moment, it bounced out of the space and began absorbing natural powers in thin streams. After the span of a breath, the shuttle again merged into the air, and this time, it zipped over a hundred million miles away instantly.

Within a couple of hours, the shuttle drilled into the starry void from above the sky of Pan Gu world, whereupon, it swiftly flew to Midland. Approaching Midland, the shuttle had already expanded to tens of meters long. The complicated embossments on its surface emitted a dazzling glow, which looked really splendid.

A group of wild starry sky spirit turtles trod on the start lights, leisurely gliding above the clouds of Midland. These turtles opened their jaws widely, gnawing some rare herbs floating in the clouds. The fresh, sweet, and juicy herbs were rich in natural powers. The turtles were satisfied by the delicious herbs, happily shaking their heads and snorting comfortably.

The golden shuttle suddenly swished across these turtles. A cold, emotionless wave of soul power swept across their enormous bodies.

A blood-red sword light flashed across the golden shuttle. Along with a series of howls, about ten spirit turtles paused. Within a blink of an eye, they turned into a puff of lifeless ash in the blood-red sword light.

Sparkling with a golden light, the swiftly flying golden shuttle stopped abruptly, floating near one side of a towering mountain by the southwest of Liang Zhu City.

Along with a puffing noise, the shell of the golden shuttle bloomed like flowers, exposing its dark-golden, crystalline inner

body. Dark golden stripes were visible inside the inner body, glistening dimly while releasing waves of strong energy, gently vibrating the surrounding space with a radius of three-hundred-meters.

On the inner body of the shuttle, a door opened. Twelve Yu Clan men with golden armors flew out.

As the last Yu Clan man waved his hand, the golden shuttle quickly shrank into a tiny grain of sand and merged into his palm.

"This Pan Gu world is indeed extraordinary." Said one Yu Clan man while taking a deep breath with fascination. With a deep voice, he continued, "Wild, primitive, natural, fresh... You can sense a thriving life-force even from the air. I'm in love with this place."

"Indeed, I'm so tired of the lifelessness of Pan Yu world already" Another Yu Clan man gave a cold smile and said, "Rotten and old... Even though we have been giving it strong life-force with the resources we plundered from other worlds, how can artificial things compare with a natural life power like this?"

"We're here, so the world is ours!" The Yu Clan man who walked out the last spread his arms towards Pan Gu world, seeming to embrace the whole world as he said, "But before that, we must accomplish our mission...Lord Yemo Tian, not a hair of his can be harmed. Only by relying on him can we reasonably and legally occupy this world!"

"Yemo? What a lowly family name of a low-grade noble..." The one who talked the first scornfully shook his head and said, "But... He's our master's son after all."

The twelve Yu Clan men stopped talking. Together, they turned their eyes to where the destructive weapon was.

Chapter 1462: Sun and Moon Knights

"Big Brother!"

The Chi You warriors growled deeply. No sadness or fear could be sensed from their voices, nothing but the desire of fighting. They were a group of emotionless killing machines, who had nothing but the fighting instincts remaining in their minds. Chi You's death seemed to unseal these insane warriors, releasing their craziest will of fighting.

Wrapped in a black and red fire which was generated from their fierce intent of killing and boiling blood, except for the few who continued trying to wake Yemo Tian up, all Chi You warriors dropped down their shields. They held their blades with both their hands and marched towards Ji Hao like a mad rhino.

Without dodging and defending, they swung their blades directly down at Ji Hao's head in the simplest and wildest way.

As sacred as martyrs, as passionate and obsessed as the devils from hell, these Chi You warriors burned their lives and souls to make their strongest strikes on Ji Hao.

Ji Hao raised his left hand and caught a blade coming down at his head. He twisted his wrist, snapped the blade, then directly lunged Pan Gu Dragon Mark forward, which was held in his right hand. With an irresistible force, Pan Gu Dragon Sword shattered the Chi You warrior's armor and penetrated his chest.

As he grabbed and lunged, one died; grabbed again, lunged again, another one died...

Within a second, Ji Hao repeated this series of move hundreds of times. With doubts and to their shock, hundreds of strong Chi You warriors were cut into pieces by Pan Gu Dragon Mark.

Simply and repeatedly, Ji Hao killed them all, as easily as crushing eggs with a mountain. Suddenly, he understood what the

mysterious man said about the 'Dao of strength'. Indeed, when pure physical strength was great to a certain level, one could defeat any enemy by simply crushing him.

However, even Saint Pan Gu failed to reach the peak of the 'Dao of strength', didn't he? Due to that reason, he fell eventually under the attacks from hundreds of millions of Chaos monsters.

Therefore, physical strength was indeed important, but skills and varieties could not be neglected. For example, Priest Hua's Dao of evolvement provided Ji Hao with the secret magic that was infinite in variety. How much convenience did that bring him? Besides, because of the great Dao of evolvement, Ji Hao's battle effectiveness was directly enhanced.

The last Chi You warrior blocking Ji Hao's way died. Coiling on Ji Hao's waist, the pair of fire dragons roared happily, while Mr. Crow cawed towards the sky, standing on Ji Hao's head the whole time. Flakes of fire burned on his feathers, even blurring his body.

Treading on a fiery cloud, Ji Hao approached the destructive weapon step by step.The best choice was to capture it. If not, Ji Hao needed to destroy it completely. As for Yemo Tian, killing was the last thing Ji Hao wanted to do, as he should ideally be taken captive.

It was possible for his father to cherish the affection between a father and a son, right? Under some difficult situations, maybe Ji Hao could threaten that 'Blood Crown' with Yemo Tian's life?

The last few Chi You warriors shielded the destructive weapon behind them against Ji Hao. They dropped their blades and gripped large and thick shields with both their hands. Witnessing Ji Hao slaughtering the other Chi You warriors, they now understood that they couldn't rival Ji Hao. At the moment, they weren't thinking about killing Ji Hao. Instead, they strove for protecting the destructive weapon with their strongest defense, until Yemo Tian woke up.

Once Yemo Tian woke up and escaped with the destructive weapon, their mission would be accomplished!

"Lord Yemo Tian, wake up now!" A Chi You army gripped his large shield and bumped against Ji Hao. Meanwhile, he growled in a hoarse voice. A buffalo embossment on the surface of the square-shaped shield released a large cloud of smoke, while the shield bumping into Ji Hao like a small hill.

Ji Hao conveniently threw a punch at the shield.

Following a thunderous bang, countless spell symbols collapsed inside the one-foot-thick metal shield. The shield cast from a special alloy and added with a secret magic was vibrated violently into pieces, which were even tinier than sand grains. Both arms of the Chi You warrior were crushed, as he was sent flying backward while vomiting blood.

"Lord Yemo Tian, wake up, run!" Another Chi You warrior bumped into Ji Hao while holding the same large shield. His body was burning, a blood-red fire erupting from every single pore of his. He knew that he couldn't possibly stop Ji Hao, but this warrior tried his best to burn his body and soul for a slim chance. He released all his life-force for this very moment.

This was a low-Divine-Magus-level warrior. But at this moment, he boosted his power up to the level of peak-Divine-Magus.

This warrior burned out his skin and flesh in a moment, being left with a bloody skeleton, wrapped in the sticky blood-red flame while rushing towards Ji Hao.

Ji Hao raised the Pan Gu Dragon Mark and swung the sword down along with a dragon roar, cutting this crazily burning Chi You warrior and his shield into pieces.

"Enough, piss off!" Darting towards the destructive weapon with large steps, Ji Hao shouted.

The bodies of the remaining three Chi You warriors blazed

simultaneously with a blood-red fire, burning their lives. As they dropped their shields, the fire began gathering to their chests from their whole bodies. They spread their arms while rushing towards Ji Hao. Apparently, they were attempting to detonate their own bodies and die together with Ji Hao.

Ji Hao snorted coldly. As a clear light flashed across his forehead, he dodged the embracement of the three Chi You warriors and came straight onto the destructive weapon.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The three warriors failed to control the wanton powers inside their bodies and exploded. A dazzling fiery light spread in all directions. The destructive weapon wasn't under anyone's control at the moment, and even it was pushed to tens of miles away by the explosion waves.

Ji Hao stood outside the crystal cockpit of the destructive weapon as he raised Pan Gu Dragon Mark and frowned, looking at the crystal cockpit, which was an integral whole. If he broke it violently, would Yemo Tian be harmed? After all, Ji Hao wanted to capture Yemo Tian alive, and didn't want to accidentally chop off his head. However, it would certainly require Ji Hao to put forth all his strength to break the destructive weapon. In order to damage the destructive weapon, Ji Hao had to use his whole strength, but by doing that, Yemo Tian was very likely to be accidentally injured.

"Oi, barbarian, if I were you, I would put down that good-looking long sword, then kneel on the ground and kowtow to me. Cry and beg to pledge your loyalty to me, beg to be a slave of mine, then hold my boots with both hands and clean them with your tongue." A cold voice could be heard from a distance away, "If I were you, I will never try to harm Lord Yemo Tian. You hurt a hair of his, and all your families will die for your mistake."

The air surrounding Ji Hao's body froze all of a sudden. Followed

by a series of cracking noise, a strange power twisted the air and turned it into a nine-meters squared, gray, transparent, hexahedral cage that locked Ji Hao inside. Faintly visibly electric lights had been flowing rapidly inside the cage.

What a magical move! Most importantly, before Ji Hao could notice any move the enemies made, he was already stuck by this strange magic.

Turning around, Ji Hao saw twelve Yu Clan young men, wearing golden armors.

The moment he saw them, Ji Hao knew that they weren't from any of the twelve families in power of Yu Dynasty.

"You are?" Ji Hao pointed at the sky.

"We are Sun and Moon knights from the Holy Realm of Pan Yu world. Don't take us as those lowly things." A Yu Clan young man smiled warmly at Ji Hao and responded, "Barbarian, you can dedicate that sword to me now."

Chapter 1463: First Fight Against The Sun and Moon Knights

The Holy Realm of Pan Yu world...

Ji Hao had heard about this place. He heard that Dishi Cha, whose sons were killed by him, took a trial of Sun and Moon and become a Sun and Moon powerful being in the Holy Realm. Perhaps, the Holy Ream was similar to the Magi Palace in the human society.

As for Sun and Moon Knights, Pan Yu world people saw the three suns and nine moons as supreme beings, as their origin and the sources of their powers. Therefore, these people with a title of 'Sun and Moon' should be true elites. Besides, judging from their attitude towards Yu Clan nobles here in Pan Gu world, they surely had exceptional family backgrounds.

Taking the humankind as an example, to a human being, a good family background meant more cultivation resources and a wider range of knowledge. Princes from large human families were good examples; while their peers were still cultivating themselves severely for breaking through to the level of Senior Magus, they mostly would have become Divine Magi already.

Ji Hao stroked the edge of Pan Gu Dragon Sword with one finger and generated a shrill buzz, dispelling the clouds gathering around him. Ji Hao looked at the Yu Clan young man grinningly, shaking his head as he responded, "I worked hard for this treasure. How can I give it to you without a reason? Besides, I don't like what you said."

Wielding the sword, he created an arc beam of light while maintaining the grinning face as he continued, "I prefer to penetrate your head with it, instead of dedicating it to you."

The twelve Sun and Moon Knights didn't get angry. They

laughed out loud together. They laughed scornfully, teasingly, and carelessly, as if they were twelve dragons soaring in the sky that were challenged by a wild dog.

"I knew that in a wild world like this, barbarians would challenge us."

"It's always the same. Some barbarians are stupid enough to believe that they can resist our power. But, what happened in the end?"

"It's just that some lucky barbarians do have lots of good things. Look at this one, this sword is a supreme treasure in this world, rare and precious, isn't it? Haha, how many pre-world pieces can be left from the creation of a large world in total?"

"It's mine. You, don't even try to snatch it." A Sun and Moon knight trod on the air as he steadily walked towards Ji Hao step by step. While approaching, he relaxedly smiled at his friends and said, "When I get this sword, drinks are on me."

The other knights reluctantly glanced at the longsword in Ji Hao's hand and began talking. They made all kinds of requests to the one who claimed that the sword was his. Buying drinks couldn't match Pan Gu Dragon Mark's value at all. Except for that, they also asked for the most beautiful Yu Clan girls to play with. They planned to live a cheerful life with those girls for three months!

"Three months? Don't you worry that you might die of exhaustion?" Standing in the air less than a mile away from Ji Hao, the knight who took the fight laughed, "Alright, give me a second to take out this barbarian. It will take about...Three moves?"

Breathing deeply, the knight's long hair fluttered in the air without being blown by any wind, like water plants floating in a tide wave, rising slowly.

"Barbarian, you aren't qualified to know my name, because you

are about to die. But, I just want to ask you, what's the name of this sword? It's truly a good piece!"

Ji Hao raised Pan Gu Dragon Sword, then grinned at him and said, "I too think that a dead being has no need to know the name of my sword."

From the back, the other Sun and Moon Knights burst into laughter together. An especially good-looking knight yelled, "Captain, you seemed to be despised. No more three moves? Finish him with one move! Otherwise, we will certainly tell everyone about your glorious experience here when we get back! You... are despised by a barbarian."

The knight laughed again. He narrowed his eyes and glanced Ji Hao from head to toe, then moved suddenly.

Before he made a move, nothing seemed special about him, but once he moved, it felt like the outburst of a thunderbolt. A clear 'pop' could be heard from the air while hundreds of shreds of afterimages created by that knight emerged around Ji Hao's body. Fierce gusts of wind blew towards all vital body parts of Ji Hao almost simultaneously. Fingers, palms, fists, elbows, shoulders, kneel, lower legs, foot...Every part of this knight's body had turned into sharp weapons, fiercely lunging towards Ji Hao.

Meanwhile, the hexahedral air cage which had Ji Hao locked in began collapsing inwards, strapping Ji Hao tightly.

Ji Hao was surprised. These Sun and Moon knights were indeed unlike those Yu Clan nobles who had been enjoying affluence all their lives. In every fight against human beings, the nobles from Yu Dynasty would stay in the rear, commanding their slave warriors and non-humankind slaves to fight the life-risking battles. Yu Clan nobles who would fight in person were extremely rare. Normally, casting a few large-scale magic from the rear could be seen as their greatest contribution.

This Sun and Moon knight was also a Yu Clan man, but he was

even stronger than the strongest Jia Clan deputy elder Ji Hao had seen. Every move he made was so natural and smooth that Ji Hao couldn't discover any weakness of his moves with his physical eyes. Every time he launched a new move, at least ten fiercer moves would be prepared by it.

His combat skills were effective and extremely mature. The knight's every single move would shatter the space and leave a clear dark space crack around Ji Hao.

"Die!" The knight widely opened his three eyes and emitted wisps of red light. His pretty face twisted a little bit. He seemed to be thrilled by the prospect of killing, which he believed was about to happen.

"Break!" Ji Hao shouted loudly and clearly, then swung Pan Gu Dragon Mark with his right hand. The air cage cracked ear-piercingly as it was cut open by Ji Hao. Pan Gu Dragon Mark buzzed and released beams of sword light, floating around Ji Hao and aiming at the Sun and Moon knight's fingers, fists, palms, elbows...

At this moment, Ji Hao seemed to become a giant hedgehog. The sword light beams of Pan Gu Dragon Mark were his thorns, pointing at the enemy. As long as the enemy dared to land his strikes, his body would firstly bump into Pan Gu Dragon Mark.

"Damned thing!" As a silhouette flashed across the air along with a 'whooshing' sound, the knight took two circles around Ji Hao at lightning speed and stopped attacking. He already perceived that Pan Gu Dragon Mark was a great treasure. How could he dare to bump against its edge with his own body?

A golden light flashed, as an eight-feet-long golden spear appeared in the knight's hand. This exquisite spear was embossed with a boa-like strange creature, slimmer and prettier than an actual boa. When the knight wielded the spear, Ji Hao felt that thousands of boa-like creatures had pounced on him, roaring and

attempting to tear his body with their teeth.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark created thousands of beams of sword light, defending Ji Hao accurately against every shred of afterimage left by the spear.

Metal clangs could be heard, as the sword and the spear clashed against each other. After eighteen clangs, Ji Hao finally found an opportunity. Pan Gu Dragon Mark dazzled with a frosty light and swept across the golden spear, cutting it into two.

"Damnit! Take a punch! Can you not use your sword?" The knight growled in anger. Emitting a blood-red light, his right fist smashed into Ji Hao's chest like a hill.

Ji Hao laughed out loud, clenched his left fist, and punched against the knight's fist.

Followed by a muffled thud, their fists bumped against each other. Ji Hao slightly trembled, while the knight staggered backward for three to five steps.

Chapter 1464: True Strong Enemy

"Barbarian, so strong!" The Sun and Moon knight looked at Ji Hao in surprise.

The time seemed to slow down by tens of thousands of times at this moment. The knight's right hand was shaking slightly, while his skin slowly split up, exposing his red flesh and muscles. Skin pieces were flying all over the sky.

Following the puffing noise, the knight's red muscles and flesh split as well. His hand bones were crystalline and glistening like the best ruby, completely transparent. Countless golden spell symbols were flowing in the bones while sparkling.

Along with a loud series of popping noise, the knight's hand bones cracked. Clear spider-web-like cracks started appearing on the bones, extending upward. Soon, his forearm bones, elbow, and shoulder blade shattered. Blood splashed, with jade-white skin pieces flying in the air like broken porcelain.

Enduring the pain, the knight scrambled a few more steps backward and kept himself away from Ji Hao.

A dim blood-red light sparkled in his erect eye as he stared at Ji Hao and said while frowning, "Barbarian, you have a very great strength! I've been to three-hundred and seventy-two worlds which were conquered by our kind. Among all barbarians I've seen, you have the greatest physical strength."

Ji Hao's left hand was trembling slightly. Because of an indescribable pain, he nearly lost his eyesight temporarily.

He had a much greater strength as the knight had. Just now, Ji Hao gave the enemy a heavy strike with his physical strength through the punch. The knight's splitting arm was more than enough to prove the result of Ji Hao's strength. However, in the same way, an extremely weird force had struck into Ji Hao's hand

from the knight' fist.

It was cruel, violent, fierce, twisted. If it had a color, it should be red. The red power was like a swirl formed by countless sharp daggers, roaring inside Ji Hao's body and spinning swiftly, crazily damaging his body. The skin of Ji Hao's hand wasn't even red, but under the skin, his blood, muscles, bones, meridians, veins were all being crushed and destroyed at a scary rate.

The noise coming out of Ji Hao's fist sounded like popping corns. Within a couple of breaths, the evil red power swirl reached Ji Hao's shoulder blade. His shoulder hollowed weirdly, as all bones in that area were crushed, and muscles shredded and minced.

His heart drummed, sending waves of scorching hot Chaos blood to his left shoulder. Ji Hao boosted up his spirit blood power as much as he could to flush the evil red power, which had invaded into his body. Silently, a brutal war began inside his body.

The evil red power was all about violence and killing. It ran rampant inside Ji Hao's body like a well-trained army. Ji Hao 's spirit blood power was strong and overwhelming, striking on the army, slashing away the enemies' muscles, and slowly crushing their bodies.

This might sound long, but in fact, in all happened within a second. The evil red power sent into Ji Hao's body by the knight was forcibly crushed and devoured. Ji Hao flicked his left arm, letting his broken shoulder blade regrow. Along with a series of creaking sounds, from his shoulder to his fist, all broken bones, muscles, meridians, and veins of his had regrown.

Ji Hao spat out a mouthful of sticky, black blood, then raised his red arm. It was again a strong arm with healthy blood flow, even improved after the destruction and reconstruction.

"Red Sun?" Ji Hao looked at the knight.

Ever since Ji Hao attained a basic-level Pan Gu body, he had

fought a lot of powerful enemies, but not even prehistorical creatures like Kun Peng, Xiang Liu and Wuzhi Qi managed to cause him such a severe injury. This Sun and Moon knight was incredibly strong indeed.

"Barbarian, you're very strong. So, you are qualified to know my name." The knight said in a deep voice, with his three eyes sparkling with a fierce, blood-red light, "You're right, I am a child of the Red Sun. My name is Red Lei."

Proudly puffing out his chest, Red Lei swung his right arm. A blood-red light erupted from his body and wrapped up his splitting right arm. His body began to heal itself as well, although not as fast as Ji Hao. But, within the span of a breath, his right arm had recovered completely.

"In Pan Yu world, only real high-grade nobles can use the names of the suns and moons they believe in as their family names." Red Lei chuckled, glancing at the destructive weapon behind Ji Hao as he said, "As for Yemo, Polo, Dishi...These family names belong to some poor low-grade nobles."

"Does it mean that only twelve high-grade noble family names exist in Pan Yu world?" Ji Hao looked at him and asked curiously.

"Yes! The twelve families of ours are the noblest, purest nobles. But of course, we do have branches, and they developed many many families. But, that isn't important." Red Lei narrowed his eyes and looked at Ji Hao, "You're not an old nerd from the Flow Family, and won't study the long history of Yu Clan families. So, you don't need to understand these things."

"What you do need to know is that the Red Family is one of the noblest twelve families in Pan Yu world. Red Family people are the purest descendants of the great and supreme Red Sun. And I, Red Lei, am the youngest Sun and Moon knight of my generation. I am the glory of the Red Sun!" Red Lei bragged about himself, then twisted his neck and continued, "Barbarian, you are qualified to

taste the real power of the Red Sun."

Ji Hao sent Pan Gu Dragon Mark back into his body and looked at Red Lei seriously as he responded, "I won't bully you with my weapon anymore. I'd like to see the real Red Sun power."

Piji Nu was the Red Sun Emperor. Ji Hao had fought quite a number of strong warriors from the Piji Family. However, none of them had the Red Sun power as great as Red Lei. Red Lei's Red Sun power was actually able to drill into Ji Hao's body and injure him seriously.

If one compared the Red Sun power of Piji Nu and his people to an intermittently flowing stream, Chi Li's Red Sun power would be like an ocean, deep, boundless, and unstoppable. Was this the difference between a high-grade noble from Pan Yu world and the poor, lowly ones who were born in Pan Gu world?

Ji Hao took off the Taiji cloak too. He bared his upper body, his swelling muscles, then clenched his fists as he approached Red Lei with large steps. This was a truly strong enemy. Ji Hao intended to find out exactly how powerful these Sun and Moon knights were.

Red Lei smirked as he dragged off his golden armor and the luxurious tight shirt beneath it with both hands. He too bared his body, wearing nothing more than a tight short, showing his perfectly shaped, muscular body.

Clenching both fists, Red Lei took a deep breath.

His body looked like a glowing-red crystal, emitting a dazzling red light which seemed translucent. His long hair fluttered in the air and turned into blinding light beams, gradually expanding to hundreds of meters long.

Ji Hao burst into a resonant roar as he dashed to Red Lei and punched at his chest. Without dodging, Red Lei confidently threw a punch to Ji Hao's chest as well.

Two muffled thuds were generated. Ji Hao punctured Red Lei's

chest with his fist, while Red Lei's glowing-red, searing-iron-like fist sank into Ji Hao's body as well.

Both of them howled in pain, vomited blood, and drew back with giant steps.

TL Note – The Red Family (originally Chi Family) derives its name from the Red Sun, as Chi means Red. Hence, the name of the family members have Red in it, referring to their relationship with the Red Sun.

Chapter 1465: Maul Shayi Heavily

The endless passion to slaughter, and the ceaseless desire for violence existed in the deepest area of his soul, providing him with the most original, instinctive will of fighting.

Chi Lei's fist broke Ji Hao's skin and muscles, but was stopped by a rib. His fist glowed with a dazzling red light, releasing violent waves of red sun power that surged into Ji Hao's body. It detonated a magical power that had been hiding inside Ji Hao's body, and was never noticed by him.

Slaughter, crazily slaughtering all living beings; violence, the most direct violence, to conquer everything.

The violence and the desire of slaughtering were like the evil fires created by sky devils, which set Ji Hao's instincts ablaze, buried deep in his soul. His body glowed suddenly. Red light and fire flakes erupted from every pore of his, looking the same as the red light emitting from Chi Lei's body.

Ji Hao's eyes turned red. His will of killing and violence started growing like wild grass, spreading rapidly in his heart and attempting to cover his mind, turning him into a beast with the sole purpose of slaughtering and damaging.

Once the Red Sun power occupied Ji Hao's mind, his soul, spirit blood, bones, and muscles would all be ignited. He would be assimilated by the Red Sun power, becoming a tiny 'Red Sun', a shadow of the Red Sun in Pan Yu world, projected in Pan Gu world!

He would become a part of Chi Lei's power, or be devoured and digested by him, or be controlled by him as a puppet of his. More likely, Chi Lei would let Ji Hao's body and soul be incinerated directly, letting him disappear, then happily take over all his legacy! Pan Gu Dragon Mark, Pan Gu bell, Taiji Creation cauldron, Taiji Universe mirror, Taiji cloak...Ji Hao had a lot of great treasures.

"Damned barbarian..." While vomiting blood, Chi Lei stared straight at Ji Hao, whose chest was halfway punctured by his fist. "Your fist is...so heavy! Ah, how can a freak like you exist in this world? Even the creator of this world had fallen. No such high-grade power should remain existing!"

Ji Hao's body was burning and changing strangely. However, Ji Hao moved way faster than Chi Lei, with a much greater strength. Before Chi Lei's fist sank into his chest, his fist had already penetrated the former's body.

Chi Lei's fist sank into Ji Hao's body halfway, while Ji Hao's fist penetrated Chi Lei's chest. The bloody fist of Ji Hao broke Chi Lei's spine and came out from his back.

A wisp of Chaos power rose from Ji Hao's arm. The edge of Chi Lei's wound was as smooth as a mirror. The body parts touched by Ji Hao's fist were all evaporated by the Chaos power, with nothing being left. Corroded by the Chaos power, the giant wound in Chi Lei's chest was still expanding.

"Damn you, barbaric...monster!" Both Chi Lei and Ji Hao bumbled backward. While complaining, Chi Lei vomited blood and drew back quickly. He was too arrogant. He believed that he could easily end Ji Hao's life, but he never thought that he would be a monster-like being. With one single punch, he was almost killed by Ji Hao.

"Wow!" The facial expressions of the other eleven Sun and Moon knights who had been watching the fight changed suddenly. They rushed up immediately and shielded Chi Lei. The carelessness and scorn in their eyes were gone. Looking at Ji Hao, they were now extra serious and vigilant.

Unlike the worlds they had conquered, Pan Gu world could not be underestimated. Clearly, quite a number of freaks existed among the barbarians in this world! Right in front of him, Ji Hao was one typical freak, as he had actually injured Chi Lei severely

with one single punch, that too while Chi Lei was in the 'Red Sun' state!

Unbelievable! In the 'Red Sun' state, Chi Lei was no longer a creature with a fleshy body. Instead, half of his body had become pure, highly compressed Red Sun Power. In other words, half of Chi Lei's body was pure energy, and no ordinary weapon or magic was supposed to damage it.

Nevertheless, Ji Hao created a human-head-sized hole in Chi Lei's energy body with a punch.

What was even more confusing was that in the 'Red Sun state', Chi Lei's body should have a great self-healing ability. The human-head-sized wound should have healed itself once Ji Hao pulled out his fist. But on the contrary, the wound was actually expanding instead of healing!

"Monster!" Another knight's eyes suddenly turned dark, as waves of dark ripples spread out of his body. Within a second, he transformed into a twisted, dark shred of a shadow.

Slightly shaking, the shadow knight flashed across the air and instantly moved behind Ji Hao, weirdly stretching his arms. His pair of arms became feet long dark swords, lunging towards the back of Ji Hao's head and heart without making the slightest noise.

"I am Dim Cloud, a child of the Dim Sun!" While attacking, the shadow knight murmured, "You are a truly powerful being. You must be a hero among barbarians, right? So, you are qualified to know my name. You can die calling my name!"

Dong! The pair of dark shadow sword landed heavily on the Pan Gu bell. Dim Cloud lunged the swords with an extra great strength, and a tremor went through the Pan Gu bell, before a resounding bell ring was generated. White sound waves swept in all directions, turning everything it touched back into Chaos, disordering all natural powers.

Dim Cloud screamed as he was swirled into the sound waves. His shadow-like body struggled desperately in the disordered natural powers, even seeming to be assimilated by the natural powers.

"Such a supreme treasure! Damn it! Barbarian, you have too many treasures!" Dim Cloud shrieked while casting his greedy eyes on the bell. Chi Lei wanted Pan Gu Dragon Mark, then the Pan Gu bell should belong to Dim Cloud, right?

While struggling, Dim Cloud reached his hands towards the Pan Gu bell. He even forgot that his life was under threat.

A dark silhouette suddenly flashed out of Ji Hao's shadow. Creating a blood-red beam of sword light, Yemo Shayi pierced his sword towards Dim Cloud while saying, "Proud high-grade noble, let me, a lowly old slave, take away your life!"

Yemo Shayi laughed wildly when the dark-red sword reached to Dim Cloud's chest.

Dim Cloud moved slightly. In the next moment, Dim Cloud's shadow-like body suddenly appeared behind Yemo Shayi. Dim Sun's power included space and shadow. Dim Cloud controlled the shadow and space way better than Yemo Shayi could imagine!

After all, Yemo Shayi was a Sun and Moon being promoted in Pan Gu world. He knew way too less about the true Sun and Moon powerful beings from Pan Yu world.

Countless sharp shadows silently penetrated the space. Yemo Shayi trembled intensely as the shadows penetrated his body over and over again. Blood splashed like a rain. Within a blink of an eye, Yemo Shayo's body was penetrated by the shadows thousands of times, and was left covered in holes.

With his body glowing with a blood-red light, Ji Hao gave a resonant roar and bumped against the Pan Gu bell with his head. Afterward, he grabbed Yemo Shayi and activated the golden bridge. As the dim golden light flashed, both Yemo Shay and Ji

Hao disappeared.

The Pan Gu bell rang even more sonorously this time. Rolling sound waves drowned Dim Cloud, as collapsing space wrapped up his dark shadow-like body. Dim Cloud screamed shrilly in fear.

Chapter 1466: A Chance for a Breakthrough

A clear light stream tore apart the space. Before a cliff covered in green vines and towering pine trees, Ji Hao staggered out of the space. Gasping for air, he walked a few steps, locked his left fingers together, and slapped on the cliff. The cliff quaked slightly and split up, creating a hundreds of meters deep cave.

Ji Hao conveniently threw a series of tiny flags, which were coiling in clouds and mist. The foot-long flags fluttered in the air without being blown by a wind. Swaying quickly for a short while, all tiny flags surrounded by clouds merged into the air.

As fast as he could, Ji Hao set up nine connected defensive formations, then wielded his broad sleeves and released three-thousand and six-hundred half-dragon warriors. Each half-dragon warrior was wrapped in a blood-red mist, and was completely mute.

These half-dragon warriors were made from the corpses of Jia Clan warriors with the essence power of the blood pool. They had no feelings or intelligence, and they acted on Ji Hao's orders only. Ji Hao spread his spirit power and left a series of information in the brain of each half-dragon warrior. After that, these extra strong, scary-looking warriors immediately merged into the defensive formations.

The area became empty again, as if nothing had happened at all.

A gust of wind blew across and rustled the pine trees. Pine needles drifted down profusely, touching Ji Hao's defensive formations and generating a sizzling noise. As thin thunderbolts coiled on the pine needles, all pine needles that touched the formation exploded into colorful strands of smoke, merging into the formation.

Carrying Yemo Shayi, who was covered in blood and at his last gasp, Ji Hao walked into the cave he opened up just now with big

steps.

Putting Yemo Shayi down on a rock, Ji Hao put a few life-saving pills into his mouth, then stripped him and covered his body with a thick layer of ointment, which was produced by the Magi Palace based on a secret formula.

Looking at Yemo Shayi, who was unconscious, Ji Hao couldn't help but sigh.

When he brought Yemo Shayi under his control, Ji Hao thought that he was indeed a Sun and Moon powerful being with an stunningly great power, especially his fierce assassinating skills, that made him a great helper. Back then, Ji Hao thought that Yao Mountain territory finally had a mentionable high-grade fighter.

However, facing the true non-humankind elites from Pan Yu world, things were different. Yemo Shayi and Dim Cloud never even started a formal fight. Dim Cloud was stuck in the disordered space created by the Pan Gu bell, and Yemo Shayi seized the opportunity, launched a surprise attack. But in the end, he was injured severely by Dim Cloud's counterattack.

Was there really such a big difference between the Sun and Moon knights from Pan Yu world and Sun and Moon stage beings promoted here in Pan Gu world?

All these seemed to be related to the natural power sources of Pan Yu world.

Glancing at Yemo Shayi, Ji Hao's heart sank. Yemo Shayi was wounded by Dim Cloud so easily. Based on this fact, one could easily imagine that those power elders and deputy elders from Yu Dynasty couldn't possibly rival Dim Cloud and the other Sun and Moon knights either.

No wonder those Yu Dynasty people came to the humankind so shamelessly and sought for cooperation. After all, they clearly knew that they wouldn't be able to fight against these high-grade

nobles from Pan Yu world alone.

Hearing Yemo Shayi's stabilized breath, Ji Hao sat down and crossed his legs.

A red light burned inside his body ragingly. Every bone, every muscle, every meridian, and every cell of his body had been burned glowing red by the fire. Ji Hao could barely restrain the impulse in his heart now. He wanted to kill, to channel his violence, to throw away all intellect, and allow his wild nature to erupt, turning himself into a beast of slaughtering!

The Red Sun power sent into his body by Chi Lei was like the evilest curse. While damaging his body, it had also been wearing out his ability thinking rationally, which could be counted as the foundation of an intelligent creature. He sensed an unbearable pain from every corner of his body; he felt that every cell of his body was being ground by the Red Sun power like beans in a millstone.

However, compared to the pain suffered by his soul, the physical pain was nothing.

The desire of slaughtering and violence overwhelmed his brain, wave by wave. Shrill voices echoed through his spiritual space, screaming 'kill, kill'. The sticky red fire roared up in his spiritual space, forming giant, destructive waves, and striking on Ji Hao's embryo of Dao.

Ji Hao's embryo of Dao sat in the air with its legs crossed, flushed by torrents of Red Sun power. The Red Sun power intended to take away its wit and turn it into a beast, with no other purpose than slaughtering and damaging.

The Red Sun power was tremendous. Ji Hao felt like a lonely soul standing in a boundless wilderness, with the sky collapsing and smashing on his body. He had to support the sky with his own strength, because if he failed, he would immediately be assimilated by the Red Sun.

He couldn't bear to imagine the consequences.

A sticky red liquid had been oozing out of his skin. Ji Hao's face twisted, and even his long hair turned glowing red.

He breathed long and deep. With every breath, he drained the air in the cave. Strong gusts of wind had been sending fresh air in. From the surface of the embryo of Dao, layers of Chaos power spread, defending it against the Red Sun power.

The mysterious man showed up. Looking at the endless Red Sun power in Ji Hao's spiritual space, he frowned and said, "Back then, those non-humankind beings never had such a power. The Red Sun power inside you is ten-thousand times purer and stronger than the Red Sun power I used to know, even much more destructive. Hm...I really want to pay a visit to Pan Yu world and see the three suns and nine moons. What are those?"

Ji Hao was about to be devoured by the Red Sun power, and thus, had no strength left to answer the mysterious man's question.

In Pan Gu world, Ji Hao was the very first being to face the 'true Red Sun power'. Because of a slight carelessness, Ji Hao had suffered seriously this time.

Puff! A strand of smoke rose from the embryo of Dao. Ji Hao bared his teeth in pain, almost screaming out loud. The Red Sun power was way too strong and aggressive, that his embryo of Dao had already started to be damaged by it.

"This can't go on. Ji Hao, this is also your opportunity!" The mysterious man shouted, "Take out the Pan Jia sun, devour it and melt it to become a true Supreme Magus. Use the Pan Jia sun to absorb this Red Sun power. Perhaps, you will be surprised!"

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows. Hearing the mysterious man, he activated the Taiji creation cauldron without a hesitation.

He roared resonantly. Following his voice, the cauldron expanded and reached tens of meters in height within a blink of an

eye. Ji Hao leaped into the cauldron, standing right in front of the Pan Jia sun. The cauldron had an independent space inside, in which, Ji Hao spread his arms and embraced the Pan Jia sun, which had a diameter of over a hundred million miles, and was shining with a blinding red light.

The cauldron quaked slightly, as a strong force pushed the Pan Jia sun slowly towards Ji Hao.

Ji Hao concentrated his spirit power into a nearly tangible beam of light, drilling deep into the core of the Pan Jia sun. Before long, Ji Hao touched the Pan Jia sun's spirit, which was in a deep sleep.

Chapter 1467: A Man Shaped Sun

"Come on, come on, come on!"

Ji Hao growled hoarsely. The embryo of Dao emitted a bright light, while sharp wisps of highly concentrated spirit power pierced into the Pan Jia sun.

All of a sudden, the Pan Jia sun's sealed spirit woke up. From the core of the sun, a scorching hot, ocean-like wave of soul power burst, like a hundred million volcanos erupting together. The tremendous soul power wave flooded into Ji Hao's spiritual space.

Faintly, Ji Hao saw a dragon-like creature sleeping in the core of the Pan Jia sun. The creature had ninety-nine fiery wings on its back. The soul power released from the creature's brain was way stronger than Ji Hao's.

Pan Jia world was created by Pan Jia; it was a world of water.

Maybe because Pan Jia wasn't powerful enough, she failed to cast away all other types of natural energy from her world. In Pan Jia world, the water power was at an absolute advantage, but it wasn't the only type of natural power there.

Therefore, the Pan Jia sun was generated. Nourished by the natural reward power for creating a world, shared from Pan Jia, an especially strong creature was created in the Pan Jia sun. If everything happened based on the natural arrangements, this enormous pre-world creature should have broken its shell long ago and become the 'East Emperor Taiyi' in Pan Jia world.

Nevertheless, the water power in Pan Jia world was way too strong. The Pan Jia sun was suppressed by the water power to an extreme level, and so was this pre-world creature in it. It was suppressed for countless years, to the extent that it fell into a nearly eternal deep sleep, before it even matured.

However, today, Ji Hao intended to absorb the Pan Jia sun

completely, and to become a Supreme Magus with the power of the Pan Jia sun. He had to replace Pan Jia sun's spirit, and control the Pan Jia sun with his own mind. Sensing the unfriendly intent from Ji Hao's spirit power, the pre-world creature in the sun, which had been sleeping for countless years, suddenly woke up and fought back instinctively.

The boiling hot soul power waves flooded Ji Hao. The blinding red light immediately swallowed Ji Hao's body, which was the power from a sun. The Pan Jia sun was naturally weak, thousands of times weaker than the Pan Gu sun. But still, it was a natural sun, and contained an almost inexhaustible sun power.

The Red Sun power inside Ji Hao's body was annihilated almost instantly. The twisted, evil Red Sun power was turned into waves of ripples in the air, being devoured by the Pan Jia sun. After that, the red light emitted from the Pan Jia sun changed strangely. A fierce redness was added to the sunlight.

The red light illuminated the entire spiritual space, as world-shaking roars came from the Pan Jia sun. The scarily enormous creatures with ninety-nine pairs of fiery wings strenuously opened the countless eyes on its giant head and released beams of red light. They tore apart the space and locked on Ji Hao's embryo of Dao, which sat in the middle of his spiritual space.

The creature roared again. It was thrilled. Ji Hao sensed its happiness from its soul power waves. The creature felt the immeasurable power of creation from Ji Hao's embryo of Dao, the magical power. This enormous pre-world creature screamed, telling Ji Hao that it was so eager to swallow Ji Hao's embryo of Dao. Its voice could only be heard with one's soul.

Ji Hao's embryo of Dao was generated from his soul mixed with his power of great Dao. If the creature swallowed the embryo of Dao, Ji Hao would be gone, both his body and his soul. Hearing the creature, Ji Hao smiled. His embryo of Dao slowly stood up, with the Pan Gu bell floating above its head, and the Pan Gu Dragon

Mark held in its hands. Shielded by the Taiji universe mirror, the embryo of Dao walked towards the core of the Pan Jia sun, against the torrents of soul power.

A crevice split open on the Pan Jia sun. The sun created a broad way, allowing the embryo of Dao in.

The thousands of miles long, unimaginably enormous creature barely raised its head, gasping heavily for air as he slowly opened its mouthpart. It wasn't yet mature. Its brain hadn't developed, and it was no smarter than a three-year-old human kid. Sensing Ji Hao's embryo of Dao, it instinctively wanted to 'eat' it.

"Old man, lend me a hand!" Ji Hao looked at this creature seriously. He dared not to be even a little bit careless.

The mysterious man stood up slowly as well. As he crooked his finger, the five-colored cauldron in Ji Hao's lower belly buzzed and flew up. Holding the cauldron with both hands, the mysterious man said, "Ready? Hmm, this thing is far weaker than the East Emperor Taiyi."

Laughing aloud, the mysterious man gripped a foot of the cauldron with one hand and swung it forward. He used the cauldron as a weapon to smash the creature. Ji Hao raised his head and saw the mysterious man make the combination of the five moves.

The colors of the cauldron had constantly been changing, blurring Ji Hao's eyesight. In his eyes, the cauldron no longer looked like a cauldron. Instead, held in the mysterious man's hand, it was a giant axe, strong enough to open up a new world. Along with a destructive power, the axe landed on the creature's head.

The creature wailed as it was hacked into two, from the head to the tail. Its soul was crushed, while its body collapsed rumblingly and became red-crystal-like spheres of original soul power, being absorbed entirely by the cauldron.

The mysterious man's body faded, almost turning turned transparent. He murmured weakly, "When the cauldron digests that thing, I get half of its power."

Breathing desperately for air, the mysterious man sat back down in Ji Hao's spiritual space, looking especially weak. The bright blue light emitted from his eyes dimmed rapidly, and at last, it was barely visible.

Ji Hao looked at him and responded hurriedly, "You can have it all. Just rest. I'll get you when I absorb the Pan Jia sun!"

Bursting into a loud shout, Ji Hao's embryo of Dao split up as it generated a cracking noise. A faint, man-shaped silhouette flew out of it and immediately disappeared into the sun's core.

The Pan Jia sun shrank speedily, eventually becoming a ball of red light as it merged into Ji Hao's chest.

The hot power flowed into his entire body. Ji Hao's body was on fire, and the raging fire was released from every fine hair of his, making him look like a fireball that was meters in diameter, quietly floating in the cave.

Seventy-two hours later, Ji Hao slowly walked out of the cave.

Outside, the sunlight was warm. Ji Hao reached out his hand and flicked his finger. Following his move, a wisp of sunlight emerged before his face, shaking slightly like a string of a harp. He smiled and caught this wisp of sunlight with his hand. The light flashed through the air, along with which, Ji Hao suddenly appeared high up in the sky, thousands of miles away from the ground. He did that without the golden bridge, purely with the sunlight which could be found in almost every corner of this world.

Breathing deeply, Ji Hao spread his arms, roaring towards the sky.

The sky was suddenly brightened up. Under the Pan Gu sun, which existed forever, a whole new sun emerged. Compared to the

golden Pan Gu sun, this new sun was slightly dimmer, but its red light shone upon the whole world with a terrifying heat.

"Die!"

Ji Hao gave a resonant growl. Showering under the light of the sun transformed from him, in the forest with a radius of eight-million miles, all three-hundred and seventy-eight-million, ninety-hundred and thirty-two-thousand, four-hundred and fifty-two wild wolves were simultaneously penetrated, each by an extremely thin beam of red light.

Puff! All wild wolves were incinerated within a blink of an eye, turned into fireballs and burning out, without leaving even a grain of ash.

A man-shaped sun was shining upon the world, which could burn everything touched by its light.

Chapter 1468: Joyful

Power, great power... Tremendous, hundreds of times stronger than Ji Hao's previous power.

The power of a natural sun had perfectly merged with Ji Hao's body and soul. With his mind, he could now control all the power of the Pan Jia Sun.

The coverage of the sunlight was Ji Hao's attack range.

Based on Ji Hao's current physical power and spirit power, the coverage of the light of Pan Jia sun was currently a round-shaped zone, with a radius of eight-million miles. Within this area, Ji Hao was able to attack any object. Unless the Pan Jia sun died, this kind of attack could continue forever.

But killing a sun?

Ji Hao smiled. Even a weak sun from Pan Jia world wasn't so easy to be killed.

The golden light of the Pan Gu sun surrounded Ji Hao. From the golden sunshine, Ji Hao sensed a warm intimacy. The Pan Gu sun thought that Ji Hao was another natural sun. Therefore, it was generally willing to share Ji Hao a part of its power.

Ji Hao's current attack range with the power of the Pan Jia sun only had the radius of eight-million miles, but with the help of the light of the Pan Gu sun, he was able to scan across a ten-times larger area with his spirit power.

What touched Ji Hao even more was that from the light of the Pan Gu sun, a hint of the power of the great, supreme Dao, which belonged to the Pan Gu sun itself, had been merging into his body, absorbed by his body and the Pan Jia sun. The Pan Jia sun was a weak sun, but on absorbing the power of Dao from the Pan Gu sun, it had been improving slowly. With abundant time, one day, Ji Hao's Pan Jia sun might grow as strong as the Pan Gu sun.

By then, how powerful would Ji Hao be? Ji Hao didn't dare to even imagine that.

"The Dao of Supreme Magi, this is." Ji Hao floated in the air. His skin was covered in a three-inches-thick layer of golden fire that looked like melted glass, flicking slowly. "The body of a Divine Magus can endure the original power of a natural star...The only difficulty is that human Magi never cultivate their souls, but only cultivate their bodies. For this reason, controlling the core of a star and replacing the spirit of the star is way too hard for a human Magus."

"The humankind must develop a special cultivation method, especially for cultivating souls and improving the spirit powers." Ji Hao frowned, "Perhaps, I know how to do it."

Experienced the whole breakthrough from a Divine Magus to a Supreme Magus, Ji Hao accurately grasped the key. Lacking soul power and strong spirit power was the reason why countless capable human beings failed to become true Supreme Magi.

Human Magi only cultivated their physical bodies, but never paid much attention to their souls. The souls of a strong Magus would be passively strengthened because of the nourishment provided by this Magus' thriving spirit blood.

As an inaccurate example, if one compared the power of the souls of ordinary human beings to 'one', Senior Magi's souls could reach 'two' to 'three', while Magus Kings could go up to 'ten' at most. Even for the Divine-level powerful ones, their souls could barely reach 'one hundred'. However, for cultivators like Priest Hua and Priest Mu' disciples and the disciples of Yu Yu, Priest Qing Wei, and Priest Dachi, as long as they achieved a certain level in their Qi cultivation, their souls would be at least one hundred times stronger than ordinary human beings, even if a Senior Magus could be ten times stronger than them physically.

If the humankind had an advanced soul cultivation method to

match the nearly unbreakable bodies of Divine Magi, sooner or later, all natural stars in the sky would be occupied by powerful human beings.

If one-hundred-million Supreme Magi could exist among human beings, the humankind would be way more powerful, even better than the ancient heaven back in its golden age.

After all, back in the ancient heaven, the number of star kings, who were born naturally in stars, was never beyond one-hundred-thousand. But how many natural stars existed in this world?

But of course, Ji Hao could not spread the Daoist scriptures he learned from Yu Yu, because that would violate the rules of his sect. Nevertheless, Ji Hao's Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words could also allow a human being to cultivate his or her soul efficiently. If human Magi could all learn it, based on the incomparably strong physical bodies and almost inexhaustible spirit blood of Divine Magi, before long, their souls would grow strong enough to occupy natural stars.

Growling deeply, Ji Hao took down the defensive formations outside the cave and carried up Yemo Shayi, who was still unconscious. In the golden sunshine, Ji Hao transformed into a pure beam of light and flashed across the air. Ji Hao used the light of the Pan Gu sun as a bow and turned himself into an arrow, easily shooting himself out.

One-million-miles took him no more than a moment. Within a twinkle of an eye, Ji Hao arrived in the suburbs of Liang Zhu City.

This time, he didn't use the golden bridge's power, yet his current flying speed was three times faster than his highest speed with the golden bridge back when the Pan Jia sun hadn't merged with him. Which meant, if he controlled the golden bridge with his current power...Ji Hao grinned. Raising his head, he looked at the sky. 'Not even Priest Hua and Priest Mu can easily stop me now, can they?' Ji Hao thought.

After all, Ji Hao had become a Supreme Magus by merging with a natural sun, with the original star power, which was a hundred, a thousand, even ten-thousand times stronger than that of any natural star!

The merger happened not long ago. By now, the power of the Pan Jia sun had filled up Ji Hao's body, but he could not yet control it freely. Wrapped in a melting-glass-like layer of flame, Ji Hao walked into the city of great calamity with big steps. All warriors who saw him instinctively lowered their heads. Everyone who saw Ji Hao felt that, instead of a living human being, a ragingly burning sun, which was powerful enough to destroy the whole world, had walked past.

"How are things going?" Ji Hao walked into the meeting room. Everyone in the room stopped talking immediately and stared at Ji Hao, stunned.

When he left, he was still a Divine Magus. But three days later, when he returned, his sense of power had suddenly changed, turning incredibly strong and prehistorical, which didn't seem to belong to a human being at all. A mighty power of Dao had been spreading from his body. He was now more powerful than anyone on the scene.

At the moment, even the senses of power of Emperor Xuanyuan, Emperor Shennong, and Candle Jiuyin, who was a legendary ancient creature, were weaker than that of Ji Hao.

"Oh my, Marquis Yao Ritian...You...you..." Holding a large wine pot, Ao Hao looked at Ji Hao, awfully shocked. "This... you... that... Did you swallow the sun?"

Ji Hao slowly nodded, sitting down beside Si Wen Ming.

Puff! The alloy armchair was momentarily turned into a strand of smoke the moment it touched the golden flame wrapping Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao spread his hands helplessly and stood back up, looking troubled. "Hm, fortunately, I became a Supreme Magus with the sun from Pan Jia world. How's the situation in Liang Zhu City?"

Emperor Shun seemed to be wild with joy. He laughed out loud, clapped his hands, and said, "The situation in Liang Zhu City? Those non-humankind beings are having a trouble! Haha, bring us booze! Everyone, let's congratulate Marquis Yao!"

The thunderous laughter bursting from the meeting room almost sent the roof flying up.

As for Liang Zhu City and those non-humankind beings, who would even care?

Chapter 1469: Demand An Exorbitant Price

Ji Hao was very embarrassed.

Even Emperor Shennong and Emperor Xuanyua had drunk quite a large amount of wine. At the moment, they were excitedly slapping empty wine pots and passionately singing a song. But, Ji Hao didn't manage to taste a single wine drop.

The temperature of the fire wrapping around his body was way too high, which would evaporate the wine far before it was poured into Ji Hao's mouth. Before he gained a perfect control of his suddenly soared power, he wouldn't be able to drink any booze or water. More helplessly, he didn't even have the luck to enjoy grilled meat, steaming meat, fruits, vegetables, rice cakes, sweet potato cakes, and all other types of foods either. Same as the wine, being touched by his fingers, all foods would turn into wisps of smoke immediately.

Temporarily, Ji Hao couldn't taste any ordinary food. However, held in his hands, top-grade fire crystals would melt into a lava-like, scorching hot liquid. Ji Hao tried a sip of the liquid, and felt like he was drinking a light wine as the pleasant sensation went through his whole body.

Did this mean he couldn't even touch ordinary foods and drinks, but could only eat crystals?

"Hahaha, surprised? This is actually normal." Emperor Xuanyuan came to Ji Hao, slapped heavily on his shoulder, and said, "Back then, when I just made the breakthrough, any ordinary food touched by me would turn into earth clods. I could only eat earth crystals. I ate one whole block every bite."

"You will get used to this, or, things will go back to normal after you have fully controlled the star power inside you." Emperor Xuanyuan looked at Ji Hao with a weird expression and continued, "But, back then, I spent one-hundred and thirty-seven years to gain

full control of the natural star power inside me. You kid, a sun... haha!"

Emperor Xuanyuan seemed to be a bit drunken. He slapped hard on Ji Hao's shoulder with one hand, holding his belly with the other hand and laughing loudly.

Muffled footsteps could be heard as Piji Ju broke in with a group of guards, wearing a heavy armor. Seeing the human leaders in the meeting room happily drinking and laughing, Piji Nu's mouth corners twitched, his eyes showing anger.

"People, we're allies now. Our Liang Zhu City is in a difficult situation. How can you still have the mood to drink and have such fun?" Piji Nu spluttered. His families were all in Liang Zhu City!

At the moment, Liang Zhu City was sealed off by the final defense system, such that no one was allowed in or out. Through the translucent screen, people on the cities of calamity could see the fires inside the city, and the air suffused by black smoke. The scene in the city made the hearts of the twelve emperors burn with anxiety, and yet, human leaders were actually drinking and enjoying themselves!

"Red Sun Emperor, you can't blame us for that." Carrying a large wine pot, Emperor Xuanyuan walked to Piji Nu bumblingly. He wiped his hand, which was covered with wine, on Piji Nu's luxurious golden armor, then said, "You designed the defense system yourselves. The defense is too strong, and we can't go in. We can do nothing even if we want to help you."

Piji Nu angrily stomped his foot against the ground and said, "That's the exact reason why we asked Emperor Shun and you to order the human warriors in the city to shut down the defense system and open the gate!"

Emperor Shun spread his hands, gave Piji Nu a helpless face, and said, "Emperor Piji Nu, we've tried in these couple of days. No voice can be heard through the screen. They can't hear us, and we can't

hear them either. Indeed, a great number of human warriors are in the town, but we can't restrain them."

Emperor Shun sighed and continued blandly, "Besides, many of the human warriors in the city have been enslaved by you for many years, right? They may have forgotten the alliance of human clans and the human emperor already. Why would they follow our order?"

"Anyhow...You have to figure this out!" Piji Nu was being unreasonable, "We can't lose Liang Zhu City. Our people can't be harmed either. Otherwise, all our agreements will be canceled! You are human emperors, the kings of human beings. You have to restrain the human warriors in the city. If you can't, what's the meaning of our alliance?"

Emperor Shun remained silent. He truly didn't know what to do to unreasonable people like this.

Ji Hao coughed, smiled to Piji Nu, and said, "Red Sun Emperor, we didn't ally for Liang Zhu City...We allied to face the incoming powerful Yu Clan being together!"

With a sulky face, Piji Nu didn't respond. He had a secret agreement with Ji Hao, who controlled his life. Therefore, he could yell at anyone but Ji Hao.

"Let's drop the topic about Liang Zhu City for now. I am curious about the social status of the twelve families in power here, back in Pan Yu world." Narrowing his eyes, Ji Hao smilingly looked at Piji Nu.

Piji Nu paused quite obviously for a moment. Suspiciously looking at Ji Hao, he hesitated for a while and said cautiously, "In Pan Yu world, our homeworld, our twelve families are surely extremely noble. In fact, if, if we didn't lose the portal leading to our hometown, we wouldn't be needing your help to resist that powerful being."

Piji Nu tried to act calmly, while Ji Hao yelled out loudly, as if he were surprised, "Eh? How is it possible? Are you saying that you're not afraid of that powerful being? Hmm, days ago, when Yemo Tian escaped, I actually chased up to kill him, but I was then stopped."

Piji Nu gave a faint smile, slightly shaking his head as he said, "The destructive weapon, a top-grade one, Marquis Yao Ji Hao... I'm not underestimating you, but killing Yemo Tian truly won't be that easy."

"Red Lei, Dim Cloud..." Ji Hao looked at Piji Nu and said, "Twelve Yu Clan people, they said they came from the Red Family, Dim Family, Dark Family..."

When Ji Hao said the names of Red Lei and Dim Cloud, Piji Nu's face was already pale as paper, and when he heard Red Family, Dim Family, and Dark Family, Piji Nu instinctively took a few steps backward.

Ji Hao carried on, "They said that they're here to protect Yemo Tian, under orders...They also said that a group of poor low-grade nobles doesn't deserve to occupy Pan Gu world. That's why I'm curious, hehe!"

As Ji Hao chuckled, large drops of cold sweat oozed out of Piji Nu's forehead.

"Their scouts are, are already here?" Piji Nu's lips also paled. "Ha, yeah, surely... That powerful being has treasures like 'space shuttles', shuttling through the Chaos tracelessly and invisibly. It's reasonable for him to send a scouting troop ahead of the main force."

"They, are they here to protect Yemo Tian only?" Piji Nu stared at Ji Hao and asked, "You should have killed them!"

"I couldn't!" Ji Hao said carelessly, "It was already not easy for me to fall back unscathed. They nearly killed Yemo Shayi, so what

could I do?"

Piji Nu remained silent, with his eyes rolling quickly in the sockets.

"I just want to tell you that their scouts are already here, and their main force may arrive at any moment!" Slapping the table beside him, Ji Hao said firmly. The table was burned into a puff of ash as Ji Hao continued, "Therefore, if we fix your Liang Zhu problem, how much are you prepared to pay?"

Before Piji Nu said a word, Ji Hao continued confirmedly, "We're allies, so, three more cities of great calamity, plus some small things will do."

Chapter 1470: Break the City with One Strike

Ceding three more cities of great calamity, the twelve emperors agreed.

Sharing all the book collections and texts with the humankind, the twelve emperors agreed.

Releasing all human slaves, the twelve emperors agreed.

...

Because of the arrival of Red Lei, Dim Cloud, and the other Sun and Moon knights, the leaders of Yu Dynasty panicked. They didn't even know what to do. The twelve emperors and the twenty-four power elders accepted all of Ji Hao's exorbitant demands.

The cities of great calamity, divine towers, flying forts, battle puppets, and other lifeless things were nothing to be mentioned. Ji Hao forced Piji Nu and the other Yu Dynasty leaders to agree to share their books and texts, technical drawings, magic formations, spell symbols, and all other forms of knowledge with the humankind, which was the greatest harvest of the alliance of human clans this time.

With all the knowledge and techniques possessed by Yu Dynasty, the human civilization would again take a large step forward overall.

On this day, Ji Hao approached Liang Zhu City all by himself and stopped a hundred miles and a hundred meters away from the city. Through the translucent dark screen, Ji Hao saw large groups of heavily armored warriors on the city wall pointing their fingers at him.

Soon, priests wearing long robes showed up. Their bodies were entirely coiled in clear airstreams, and each of them had a hazy lotus spinning between their eyebrows. Clearly, they recognized Ji

Hao and stared at him in an unfriendly way, seeming to be cursing him angrily.

But, the thick and strong defensive screen of the city silenced all sounds. Ji Hao had no way to find out what had they been shouting.

As Ji Hao slightly narrowed his eyes, as the three-inches-thick, melting-glass-like layer of flame wrapped around his body suddenly swelled to meters tall, blazing quietly and beautifully. It seemed to be totally harmless. Only the ones with the best eyesight could discover the man-shaped space hole around Ji Hao. Circling the edge of the fire was a thin, dark space crack, as the fire on his body even burned out the surrounding space.

Six cities of great calamity gathered together. Countless Ji Clan warriors trod on metal plates, floating in the midair, armed to the teeth. They gripped their weapons while breathing out steaming hot air. Clearly, they were ready to fight.

Quite a few Jia Clan warriors had been trembling uncontrollably with bloodshot eyes. They were driven crazy. Their families were in the city, their wives, parents, children. But God knew what the rebels did to Liang Zhu City. They wanted to slaughter, to take revenge...Those rebels in the city...

According to an additional agreement between the humankind and the non-humankind, except for human warriors, these non-humankind warriors are allowed to kill all rebels in the city. All human warriors had to be handed over to the alliance of human clans.

Time past bit by bit as rosy clouds emerged in the eastern sky. Wisps of sunlight were flowing in the sky, being reflected by the clouds in the east as they illuminated a big half of Midland.

The fire on Ji Hao's body burned even more ragingly. He sensed the warmth of the Pan Gu sun. Slowly, he absorbed the power of the Pan Gu sun, as his body gradually brightened up. Within the

span of a few breaths, he was already too bright to be looked at directly.

Scorching, tremendous, mighty...Ji Hao spread his arms while floating in the air. Thumb-sized beams of light erupted from his body and fell on the defense screen of Liang Zhi City like a storm.

A buzzing noise could be heard without an end as the ten-miles-thick dark screen quaked intensely. The twelve emperors tried everything with no spare efforts, still failed to shake even an inch of this dark screen. But now, Ji Hao stirred up waves of ripples on it.

Every thumb-thick beam of light created a miles wide swirl on the screen. The dark screen was shaking, causing a deafening rumbling noise that sounded like a tsunami. Divine towers rose from the city. Light streams flowed between all divine towers, and soon, all the lights gathered on the tallest tower.

Sizzle! A miles thick beam of light was released from the city, aimed accurately at Ji Hao.

Ji Hao reached out his left hand, with the Pan Gu bell floating before his palm. The three-feet-tall Pan Gu bell released a dense cloud of Chaos power, which then condensed into a ten-miles-tall strong wall, blocking the enormous light stream.

The strongest strike launched by the defense system of Liang Zhi City was swallowed by Ji Hao so easily. Without making any extra efforts, Ji Hao took a strike that was fierce enough to evaporate a Sun and Moon powerful being.

Surely, the Pan Gu bell helped, but this was still more than enough to prove that Ji Hao was now a different being. He could already release the supreme power of the Pan Gu bell.

"This!" Watching this, Dishi Yanluo exclaimed, "This kid! He, he blocked it?"

"He is displaying his strength! He is showing off his power to us!"

Yanmo Sha yelled angrily, "He's making a show of his power...How old is this kid? How can he be a Sun and Moon powerful being? He is even more powerful than any power elder!"

"Under the circumstances, the stronger he is, the better for us." With a weird smile, Piji Nu looked at the others and said, "Isn't that right? If we want to fight against that great lord, we have to have stronger helpers."

The group of emperors glanced at each other and nodded with complicated facial expressions.

Gradually, all light beams released by Ji Hao towards Liang Zhu City merged together. At last, the storm of dazzling light tore apart the space and caused a series of sizzling noise as they converged on Ji Hao's palm. They then transformed into a stream of golden light that was meters wide, and descended.

The golden light stream descended from Ji Hao's palm penetrated the defensive screen of the city, similar to a glowing-red iron stick piercing into a thick layer of ice. Strong fires and dense smokes were raised from the dark screen, as the light stream sank deeper and deeper in.

The golden light stream broke into the city, as divine towers collapsed one after another in fire.

The ground of Liang Zhi City split up. The enormous defensive formations buried underground was shattered suddenly, letting fires flakes up. The buildings which remained standing in the city collapsed in succession, turning into nothingness in the fire.

The fires wrapped dense smoke as they erupted from underground. The defense system of Liang Zhu City had been falling apart. The destruction of every part of the great defensive formation eased the golden light stream's way into the city.

The dark screen turned thinner and thinner. Finally, people on the outside could see what was happening in the city.

They saw over a hundred large-scale, well-prepared teleporting formations in the central area of the city. Countless people gathered in the formations, at least tens of millions of them. Among those people, many were wearing luxurious clothes, locked by chains and spell symbols. Apparently, they were taken captive.

"Oh heaven, what are they doing?" shouted the twelve emperors.

Followed by a thunderous bang, the defense system was broken by Ji Hao's golden light stream, and the dark screen that covered the city was gone without a trace.

The teleporting formations in the city were activated immediately. As a blinding light flashed across the air, all people in the formations disappeared.

Large groups of warriors started rushed into teleporting formations and were sent away.

Piji Nu and the other emperors screamed, ordering their people to march into the city.

Chapter 1471: A Sleepless Night

Late at night...

Liang Zhu City burst into mournful cries as wisps of dark smoke rose into the sky. The air was suffused by a smell of burnt food, and the ground was covered in mud. The non-humankind army marched into the city and cast a magic to put out the fire. The fire was killed by the water descending from the city, but the city was also turned into a mess.

Buildings were burned into ashes, then soaked in water, forming a two-feet-thick layer of mud. Yu Clan nobles forgot their morbid fear of getting dirty, strugglingly running in the mud and calling the names of their families. In many areas, Yu Clan nobles kneeled by the ruins of their mansions, wailing heartbreakingly.

Corpses were burned twisted, scattered all over the city. Exquisite jewelry could be found everywhere on the ground. Apparently, those were all precious things belonging to Yu Clan nobles.

Except for corpses, the Yu Clan nobles who returned from Chi Ban Mountain did not find anyone from their children, lovers, illegitimate sons and daughters, and their other families. They kneeled on the ground and cried, sounding like the screaming birds on a frosty winter night. People who heard their cries in the distance even had goosebumps raised on their skin.

Ji Hao took away a batch of Yu Clan nobles with the highest social status ahead of everyone else. Afterward, the dragon man, lion man, tiger man, and mammoth man came into the city, and easily kidnapped a large batch of mid-grade Yu Clan nobles as well. Some non-humankind beings in the city were slaughtered by those crazy human slaves, who had nothing but hatred filled in their hearts. By now, very few survivors existed in the city. The Yu Clan nobles had been indulging in the wanton persecution of human

beings for countless years, and now, they finally tasted the pain after their families were ripped apart.

There were still a handful of lucky ones. Their families hid in secret rooms and luckily survived the search of Ji Hao's people and the four men, the massacre of rebels, and the big fire, managing to see the non-humankind army march into the city.

These lucky people, who survived through a series of dangers, tremblingly walked out of their shelters and cried, shouting the names of their families who left the city with the army before with hoarse voices. Non-humankind commanders in heavy armors rushed over to them, crying and laughing. They hugged each other with faces covered in tears. They burst into laughter, then began wailing, then laughed again, as if they had all gone insane.

The even shriller cries in the city were from the poor members of the Glorious Domination.

Ji Hao didn't kill those people, and neither did the four men harm them on purpose. The Glorious Domination had great equipment and considerably strong warriors. They messed around in the city for a few days, and by now, a large batch of their people were still in the city. If they were captured by Ji Hao or the four, they wouldn't be so miserable. After all, in the worst case, they would become captives, and obviously, Ji Hao and the four men wouldn't abuse their captives. But these poor Glorious Domination members fell into the hands of the twelve emperors in power.

They were stripped, kneeling in the flattened central area of Liang Zhu City, surrounded by large groups of heavily armored warriors who were all in a towering rage. These warriors stared at them with dagger-sharp eyes.

Some nobles from large families growled in fury, holding all kinds of torture devices as they made their moves on these poor boys in public.

Lashed with a whip woven from the skin of poisonous dragons,

ripping off their skins and muscles, knocking them with a three-edged iron stick and breaking their bones; whipping their butts with a club thickly covered in thorns, smashing their muscles and bones with one strike...All weird types of tools were put to use. Thousands of core members of the Glorious Domination had been howling, shrieking, and struggling in the thick mud, ceaselessly begging the torturers for mercy.

The torturers, the fathers, grandfathers, great-grandfathers, and great-great-grandfathers of these Glorious Domination members... Everyone had a cold, merciless expression while beating them cruelly.

The twelve emperors floated in the sky as they looked at this area. Their faces were twisted like the most hideous ghosts. They gazed down fiercely, as if they would swallow these poor Glorious Domination members at any moment.

For all the twelve families in power, except for the few distant relatives who hid in secret rooms or desolated corners and survived luckily, the real core members had all disappeared, such as Piji Nu's wives and children, Dishi Yanluo's illegitimate sons, Yanmo Sha's most beloved daughters, Yemo Luoye's few uncles and their families... Everyone disappeared!

Disappeared! Gone missing! Without a trace!

If they were simply captured by someone, things would still be controllable. After all, Yu Clan had the tradition of paying the ransom money. At all costs, they could eventually save their families!

But, if those people weren't taken captive, if they died in the fire...

Thinking of this, the torturers beat even harder. They truly wanted to beat these scums of their families to death. They beat as hard as they could, the harder the better! If they beat hard enough, they might still live, but if they showed a slight mercy, the twelve

infuriated emperors would behead these scums and make all their families suffer with one single order!

The core members of the Glorious Domination from large families had been tortured, while their followers, including low-grade Yu Clan nobles, Jia Clan warriors, and Xiu Clan people, were pressed down to the ground row by row. Jia Clan executors bared their upper bodies and mercilessly wielded their heavy axes, chopping off their heads, one after another.

The puffing noise never stopped. Within two hours, at least one-hundred-thousand subordinate members of the Glorious Domination were executed.

The scent of blood rose straight into the sky as heads piled up into a tower. Xiu Clan people from the Nether Moon were holding dark crystal balls, gathered in the execution ground, casting a secret magic and drawing the souls of these executed people into the crystal ball.

Endless cruel torments were expecting them. When their spirits were worn out, their souls would be planted in zombies and puppets to serve. Unless their souls perished on battlefields, this torment would never end.

While a great purge was happening among non-humankind beings, Yu Mu and Feng Xing marched again into Liang Zhu City with a formidable army, days after they left.

According to the additional agreements signed by Ji Hao and the twelve emperors, as a compensation to Ji Hao for breaking the defense system of Liang Zhu City, forty percent of all valuable things in the city now belonged to the alliance of human clans, thirty percent belonged to Yao Mountain territory, and the non-humankind could keep the rest thirty percent!

Shaosi, Man Man, and a large group of slaves who were good at calculation all came to Liang Zhu City. They would supervise all non-humankind nobles to open their large or small treasuries, and

register all their properties. After that, according to the agreement, Yao Mountain people would bring away their part.

Liang Zhu City was having a sleepless night.

None-humankind beings were busy, pallid and sad, while human beings were busy, energetic and happy.

In a human warrior camp, Emperor Shun, Emperor Xuanyuan, and Emperor Shennong showed up themselves and comforted the human slave warriors who didn't manage to follow behind the four men and leave. The thunderous cheers of these warriors could be heard from far, far away in the dark night.

Chapter 1472: Pan Gu Mother Land

When Liang Zhu City was like a pot of boiling soup, the northern side of Midland was especially peaceful and quiet.

This was the northernmost area of Midland, far away from Pu Ban City and Liang Zhu City. A small number of people from a few special families lived in this area. Because the natural powers in this area were extra active, disastrous calamities happened frequently, and this area was inhospitable to human beings. Therefore, even the most hard-working non-humankind patrol didn't want to waste their time in this area.

A thousand miles tall mountain range, which extended from the east to the west for an immeasurably long distance, quietly towered up in the northernmost side of this area. During the flood, the water descended from the sky, pouring down along this mountain range southward. The soaring mountain range gave the flood a terrifying power. As a result, wherever the flood swept across, all forests were destroyed.

The flood was gone, and the thriving life-force of Pan Gu world had been helming the trauma left by the flood. On this long and extending mountain range, the rich soil was already covered in a vividly green layer of grass and moss, but the destroyed forest wouldn't grow back so easily.

Over a hundred Longbo Country people carried giant baskets, walking on the mountain range with heavy steps. Among them, the strongest few were about one-hundred and fifty miles tall. Their heads were even above the clouds, and their breaths had been causing whirling airstreams. The shortest few among them were children, but even they were taller than twenty miles. Their tender faces were filled with childishness while they giggled happily, lightheartedly taking out 'saplings' from their baskets and carefully planting them on the mountainside.

Those were actually hundreds of meters tall, thousands of years old ancient trees. But to these Longbo Country people, those were 'saplings' indeed.

They held their saplings carefully, created deep holes on the mountainside with their fingers, then slowly planted them in the holes. Longbo Country Maguspriests stood aside, casting a spell loudly, with their bodies coiled in a dense green mist. Strong green power condensed into giant spell symbols and descended from the sky, landing heavily on the saplings.

The saplings began shaking intensely. Nourished by the earth power and green power, they started growing speedily. Before long, the hundreds of meters tall saplings reached thousands of meters in height, with luxuriant foliage, and fruits clung to the branches.

Longbo Country people laughed while looking at these fast-growing 'saplings' with satisfaction.

As long as these trees yielded their fruits, they would mature and then fall off, or be brought away by birds or beasts. In a few years, the forest in this mountain range would thrive again. With the fertile forest, large groups of animals would gather in this area. By then, people living in this area would be able to earn their living.

A Longbo Country warrior had his stomach grumbled. He complained as he untied a thousands of meters long whale corpse from around his waist. This Longbo Country warrior was about one-hundred and twenty-mile stall. In his eyes, this whale, which might be an enormous being to ordinary people, was just a small fish.

He opened his mouth and chewed the whale. Soon, he swallowed it entirely. Rubbing his belly, this Longbo Country warrior suddenly burst into a raging growl towards the sky, "Gong Gong, damn you! You raised the flood and destroyed our forest! Meat! Our meat! We can't even eat our fill!"

The group of Longbo Country people all began cursing Gong Gong.

Without the forest and the groups of animals, it was truly not easy for these giants to fill their bellies. Fortunately, the human emperor in Pu Ban hadn't forgotten them. Under the emperor's order, Maguspreists from the Magi Palace brought them large amounts of whale meat, shark meat, and giant octopus meat! However, all aquatic foods tasted fishy, so Longbo Country people could eat some of it once in a while. But, how could they live on just fishes?

Meat, they loved eating fleshy wild beasts, swallowing them with the hot and fresh blood. Meat was Longbo Country people's favorite! Could fishes even be counted as meat?

They poked their fingers into the ground, created deep holes, then planted the 'saplings' in them. Afterward, Maguspriests cast the spell to make the trees grow. Soon, a new area of greenery was added to the mountainside. Over a hundred Longbo Country people moved forward slowly in a straight line, leaving large areas of greenery behind.

At daybreak, the leader of this troop suddenly gave a thunderous growl.

All Longbo Country people stopped and looked at their leader confusedly. This one-hundred and fifty miles tall warrior growled rumblingly, leaped up to thousands of miles high, and dashed to the top of the mountain range.

Treading on the mountaintop, this warrior widely opened his eyes as he looked at the northern sky alarmedly.

Dense watery clouds were boundless and endless, covering the sky and rolling over. The dark watery clouds pressed down, as if the sky had collapsed. Along with countless bolts of thunder, the clouds seemed to bump against Midland.

The Longbo Country warrior leader roared out loud and closed his eyes tightly. A while later, he opened his eyes and released two blood-red beams of light from those eyes. Through the dark watery clouds, he saw a vast continent wrapped in watery clouds, approaching Midland slowly.

In the southernmost side of this continent was a boundless sea with raging waves. On the sea, countless enormous beasts had been pushing the waves, roaring towards the sky in fear.

"This, this...Is this the Northern Wasteland that I heard from my great-grandfather's stories? That great water... Is that the North Sea?" The warrior leader was trembling intensely. "My great-grandfather said he went to Northern Wasteland for a hunting trip when he was young, and it took him whole five years to get to there! My great-grandfather was a fast runner, but even he spent five years to cross the void...Such a long distance... Northern Wasteland...Northern Wasteland!" He even screamed.

Suddenly, the warrior leader dashed down the mountain while yelling, "Run! It's gonna crash into Midland! Great ancestor souls, bless us! Northern Wasteland is gonna crash into Midland!"

The group of Longbo Country people dropped the baskets on their backs and began running south rumblingly.

They leaped high and far like birds flying in the sky. With one single step, they could cover hundreds of miles. Within merely ten minutes, they rushed over ten-thousand miles away. Behind them, birds were darting and beasts were rushing wildly. All living creatures had been fleeing southward desperately, roaring in despair.

From the east, south, west, and north, four continents, which were as enormous as Midland, were wrapped in boundless dense rolling watery clouds, and had been approaching. Because of their tremendous sizes, the continents seemed to be flying slowly, but in fact, they flew tens of thousands of miles per second.

What was even more astonishing was that the four fleetingly flying continents didn't shatter Midland. Instead, because of an indescribable magical power, the moment the four continents and Midland touched each other, they merged into one perfectly, without any impact or vibration, as if the five continents had always been a whole.

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man, who had been resting, suddenly opened his eyes and sighed with excitement, murmuring, "Pan Gu Motherland, finally...is formed...Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao kid...You have indeed made boundless beneficence to this world!"

Chapter 1473: Natural Reward Descends Again

In Liang Zhu City, Ji Hao floated in the air, about ten-thousand-meters above the ground. The melting-glass-like fire on his body glowed brightly, illuminating the area tens of miles in radius.

Hundreds of large-scale teleporting magic formations had been sparkling. Large groups of warrior carried large boxes, which were made from gold, silver, jade, and other precious materials, filled with top-grade magic crystals with all natures, thousands of years old magic herbs and spirit plants, and other treasures, ceaselessly into the teleporting formations. The boxes were piled into hills.

Every time a teleporting formation blinked, countless boxes filled with precious treasures would be sent to the territory of human beings.

The non-humankind beings had been plundering Pan Gu world's resources for countless years. They built numerous secret treasuries under Liang Zhu City and inside mountains. Earlier, Ji Hao and his people had swept across the mansions of all large non-humankind families. But back then, the time was too limited, and he only had the time to bring away his non-humankind captives, without a chance to search through all treasuries.

The four men and their disciples stayed in the city for days. However, they only took away some easily found things. Before they could unseal the important treasuries hidden in secret locations, Ji Hao broke the city. Therefore, ninety-nine percent of all treasures in Liang Zhu City were still in good keep. Forty-percent of these treasures now belonged to the alliance of human clans, and thirty-percent belonged to Ji Hao.

In an opened fire jade box, a few fist-sized, ragingly burning red fruits were exposed in the air. Seeing these fruits, Ji Hao's eyes shone. As he crooked his finger, three fruits flew out of the box.

These were fire elf fruits, growing deep in lava. Nourished by earth meridian essence fire power, this kind of plant would sprout in three thousand years, then mature and yield fruits in ten-thousand years. The amount of essence fire power contained in one fruit equaled to a high-level Divine Magus' full power.

Ji Hao threw a fruit to Mr. Crow, who cawed happily and caught the fruit with his beak. He was in no rush to eat it. Instead, he kept poking it with his claws, proudly showing his treasure off to the surrounding warriors.

The pair of fire dragons coiled on Ji Hao's arms were much more impatient than Mr. Crow. Once Ji Hao put two fruits on his palms, they hurriedly swallowed them, then began twisting their bodies excitedly on Ji Hao's arms, letting out strong fire flakes from time to time.

Si Wen Ming walked over with large steps, laughed delightfully, and said, "Ji Hao, Emperor Shun said that the Magi Palace would be first in the line for the treasures we're shipping back. Hah, we found a good deal of great materials, enough for us to forge a batch of top-grade magic treasures."

"There was a batch of books and texts. I've already let my people ship those back ahead of the other treasures. I dare not put those in the Magi Palace. I told Huaxu Lie and Lie Mountain Kang to secretly send the books and texts to a secret place in the Magi Palace, to keep them safe." Si Wen Ming put his mouth near Ji Hao's ear, lowered his voice, and continued. He was too excited, that even his voice sounded strange.

"Puppet designs, drug formulae, spell symbols, formations, alloy techniques...They are far more knowledgeable than us. As long as we can absorb their knowledge and keep developing based on it, in the future, the non-humankind monsters will no longer be our opponents."

Si Wen Ming's eyes shone brightly with excitement. The books

and texts found in the libraries in Liang Zhu City were the results of the wisdom of Yu Clan, Jia Clan, and Xiu Clan people, accumulated over countless years. As long as the humankind could absorb and digest all the knowledge of the non-humankind and keep on developing, without a doubt, the humankind would become incomparably powerful one day.

Stronger armors, sharper weapons, larger flying forts, more ingenious formations and spell symbols...Within a short period of time, the human civilization would roughly stand on equal footing with the non-humankind.

Based on the large population of the humankind, and the giant number of elite military forces formed by Divine Magi and Magus Kings, once the human civilization caught up with the non-humankind civilization, Pan Gu world would certainly belong to the humankind!

Ji Hao grinned, then bumped his fist against Si Wen Ming's fist heavily.

He narrowed his eyes and pondered for a while, then took out a snow-white, jade-like turtle shell, and carefully handed it to Si Wen Ming.

"Uncle Wen Ming, this is a cultivation method, which can help the cultivators to efficiently improve the souls and spirit power, called Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words. Don't ask where it comes from, and don't ask how I got it either. All in all, this is a 'clean' cultivation method, not related to anyone."

"Choose trustworthy people and teach them this. I've experienced the breakthrough into the level of Supreme Magus, so I now understand that as long as the soul and spirit of a human Divine Magus are strong enough, he or she will be able to replace the spirit of a natural star with his or her own soul seal. I hope that in the coming future, more Supreme Magi can emerge among human beings."

Pointing at the sky, Ji Hao grinned again and continued, "One day, our people may turn the heaven into our territory too."

Si Wen Ming raised his eyebrows and stared at Ji Hao for a long while. He gripped the turtle shell tight with both hands, with blood veins bulging from the backs of his hands. Apparently, he was shocked by the Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words given by Ji Hao.

A cultivation method that could improve the souls and spirits of human cultivators?

Generations of capable human beings had spent countless years of effort to negotiate with the phoenix-kind, but failed to attain even pieces of any soul magic from them. And yet, Ji Hao simply provided one just like this?

Si Wen Ming didn't even know what to say. If this cultivation method provided by Ji Hao truly had the effect to rapidly improve human cultivators' souls and spirit, not to mention any other possible result, his father, Si Xi, could be saved. As long as Si Wen Ming found Si Xi and told him to learn this cultivation method, allowing him to quickly improve his souls and spirit till he was able to control the natural star that he merged with, Si Xi would be able to absorb the star immediately and become a true Supreme Magus!

In a certain way, this cultivation method Ji Hao provided would not only bring the humankind a brighter future, it would also save Si Xi's life!

Clenching his right fist, Si Wen Ming gently punched on Ji Hao's chest, then smiled and said, "Are you interested in being the leader of the Magi Palace? I want to make some changes to the Magi Palace, to give it a better structure and allow it more space to raise talents. I want to turn it into the source of the true wits of human beings, and a gathering place for the most powerful Magi."

"I need a reliable, strong, wise, and open-minded person, who is

willing to contribute to the humankind, to help me." Si Wen Ming looked at Ji Hao smilingly and said, "It now appears that you're the only eligible person."

The leader of the Magi Palace? Ji Hao smiled and responded, "Yeah, in fact, I have many ideas too. I'd like to try them in the Magi Palace."

The two of them glanced at each other and grinned. Abruptly, Ji Hao heard the mysterious man murmuring something about 'boundless beneficence'. What boundless beneficence? And 'Pan Gu Motherland', what Pan Gu Motherland?

All of a sudden, the ground under their feet quaked slightly, and next, two tremendous purple-golden swirling clouds emerged in the sky.

Immeasurably great natural reward power descended from the sky, looking like two enormous waterfalls as they surged into Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming's bodies. In other areas of Liang Zhu City, relatively smaller swirling clouds emerged too, and streams of natural reward power began flowing into the bodies of stunned people.

Ji Hao quivered, then he closed his eyes and immersed in the magical feeling.

Chapter 1474: Gaze At the World

"Back when Pan Gu created the world, he wanted to create an intact motherland, with the five natural elements, and Yin and Yang supporting each other, with balanced natural laws, flawless, perfect."

"However, hundreds of millions of Chaos monsters attacked, and Pan Gu fell before the motherland was completed. The powers of the five natural elements split up and generated five continents, the Midland, Eastern Wasteland, Southern Wasteland, Western Wasteland, and Northern Wasteland, with different natures."

"Eastern Wasteland is covered in forests, Southern Wasteland has the most volcanos, Western Wasteland is rich in mineral resources, Northern Wasteland has a sea, and Midland has the most fertile soil. It is the most nourishing continent, most suitable for human beings to live and develop on. Therefore, it became the base of the humankind."

"All Streams to the Final Land, this great formation drew the inexhaustible water power from the twelve water worlds. The four wastelands were brought to the Midland like boats drifting on the water. The five continents merged, and formed the motherland!"

"From now on, the Yin and Yang, and the five basic natural elements will circulate in Pan Gu Motherland, and the motherland will become an unprecedentedly rich and fertile land. Dragons, phoenixes, human beings, all species generated from Pan Gu's body will become the invariable owners of Pan Gu world."

The mysterious man laughed thunderously, shaking Ji Hao's spiritual space. Meanwhile, nourished by the endless natural reward power, his body and embryo of Dao both felt to be 'swelling', even to be 'full to bursting'; the feeling was seriously weird. The natural rewards descending on him this time were way too much, that Ji Hao's eyeballs even bulged out.

After all, even Saint Pan Gu failed to achieve what they had done this time. One could say that by bringing the five continents back together, they completed the great Dao of nature of Pan Gu world, making Pan Gu world 'perfect'.

The world sensed it, and was thrilled because of the completion of the great Dao of nature, so it wouldn't be stingy with the reward. Tremendous natural reward power descended, beyond anyone's imagination.

Back then, Emperor Xuanyuan led human beings and fought against the non-humankind. Because of him, human beings struggled to survive, and the human civilization was saved. But, even he didn't attain as much natural reward power as Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming, the key person of the flood-control mission, did today.

The entire All Streams to the Final Land great formation was designed by Si Wen Ming. Si Wen Ming led his people and built the formation bit by bit himself. Therefore, over fifty-percent of all natural reward power went to Si Wen Ming. The vast natural reward power, the purple-golden light, wrapped Si Wen Ming up, that his body even seemed to melt in the splendid light.

Standing right beside Si Wen Ming, Ji Hao opened his erect eye and looked at him. Within the dazzling light, Ji Hao clearly saw that a thorough change had been happening to Si Wen Ming, from the body to the soul. Every cell of Si Wen Ming's body was filled up with the natural reward power, becoming golden, shining, and coiling in a purple mist. His body now had a pearl-like luster, as bright as stars and as beautiful as rosy clouds.

Magical natural marks coiled and settled inside Si Wen Ming's body, rapidly turning his body into a sacred body of natural reward, that no evil or disaster could harm. With this new body, in Pan Gu world in the future, no magic, curse, formation, and other attacks based on the natural powers in this world could do any harm to Si Wen Ming. In this world, no toxin, natural or artificial,

could hurt him either.

In the future, wherever Si Wen Ming stayed, the weather in this area would be great, and the harvests would be bumper. Wherever Si Wen Ming went, people in that area would live a thriving life.

Every word Si Wen Ming said would deliver the power of the great Dao of nature; the wind, the rain, the thunder, the snow, the world would follow his words.

His soul was also filled to the brim by the natural rewards power, shining with a golden light and surrounded by a purple mist. Same as his sacred body of natural reward, his soul was also immune to all magic and curses in Pan Gu world.

The torrent of natural reward power had also been surging into Ji Hao's body ceaselessly.

Ji Hao felt his body was slightly hot. Streams of Chaos power slowly spread from his body. Except for slightly improving his physical strength, the natural reward power given by Pan Gu world didn't change his body too much. However, his embryo of Dao widely opened its mouth and wolfed the natural reward power, as if it had been starving for years.

Ji Hao felt that his vision was brightened up, and suddenly, he clearly saw the entire Pan Gu world. He was like a fish which had been living confusedly in a dark water tank, but all of a sudden, the tank turned transparent, and a bright light shone in, allowing the fish to clearly see everything in the surroundings.

Pan Gu world revealed all its secrets to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao raised his head and saw countless giant stars floating in the sky, slowly orbiting without any change. He saw the complicated, immense great Dao of nature of Pan Gu world, and the slightest change happening at every moment under the vast system of the great Dao of nature.

The four seasons, the plants growing, the wind, frost, snow, dew,

the life, the death...

He saw the starry void above the sky. Clearly, he saw billions of natural stars, and countless cultivators stuck in those 'transparent' stars, dead, dying, or crazily growling, or closing their eyes and focusing on cultivation.

Ji Hao even found Si Xi at the first glance. Si Xi was trapped in an enormous dark-yellow star. A dense yellow mist had been corroding his body. He closed his eyes, with no expression change happening on his square face. He sat there ever so silently.

Ji Hao also saw the Netherworld, the eighteen parts of the hell. He saw the struggling souls in the blood pool, the fire ocean, the blade mountain, and the sword forest; he heard their screams. He even saw Netherworld Priest squatting by the blood pool, laughing and punching a deputy elder back into the pool over and over again.

"Eh?" Netherworld Priest snorted and raised his head. As a bright light flashed across his eyes, he laughed out loud and nodded to Ji Hao, who had been looking at him across an immeasurable distance. He then waved his hands and let the space be suffused with the thick Netherworld mist. Afterward, Ji Hao could not see anything in the Netherworld anymore.

"Hah!" Ji Hao chuckled. Netherworld Priest discovered him. He was a prehistorical powerful being indeed.

Turning around, Ji Hao suddenly saw Priest Hua and Priest Mu, sitting with crossed legs in the westernmost area of this world, in a place with a splendid glow.

Ji Hao hurriedly stopped looking, but still, Priest Hua and Priest Mu discovered him simultaneously. They weren't as nice as Netherworld Priest. Without a hesitation, they launched a sharp beam of light towards Ji Hao.

Buzz! The natural reward power wrapped around Ji Hao's body

quaked slightly. Priest Hua and Priest Mu' dazzling beam of light flashed across the space, yet failed to cause any harm to Ji Hao. At the moment, Ji Hao was accepting the reward from the world, and the entire Pan Gu world was his strongest shield. How could Priest Hua and Priest Mu ever hurt him now?

Ji Hao looked around and saw everything in this world. The shadows of every part of the great Dao of Pan Gu world were left in his embryo of Dao. As his embryo of Dao kept absorbing the natural rewards power, these shadows grew clearer and clearer. Ji Hao understood the natural powers deeper and deeper, and could control them better and better, thus growing more and more powerful.

Chapter 1475: Reforge the Treasures

Si Wen Ming was an 'ordinary' human being. Therefore, the world rewarded him with a sacred body of nature reward, and an unbreakable soul.

Ji Hao was a 'cultivator of Dao'. Therefore, the world gave him an opportunity to penetrate all secrets of the universe, and revealed the entire great Dao of nature before his eyes, letting him learn and memorize and them.

By now, the understanding about the world gained by Ji Hao within a moment was as deep as the result of a hundred years of severe cultivation based on his normal efficiency.

Normally, he needed to pursue the profound mystery of the world with great efforts to cultivate himself. But now, what he had been pursuing drilled straight into his embryo of Dao and left clear traces in it.

Even though Ji Hao could not yet understand the meaning of the traces left by the great Dao of nature, he had 'recorded' them in his embryo of Dao at least. In the future, he would be able to look back and face the great Dao of nature straight at any moment he wanted. The other cultivators pursued the great Dao in a hard way, like children fumbling in a small dark room, while Ji Hao sat in a broad room ablaze with lights, under the guidance of a tutor named 'nature'.

The difference between Ji Hao and ordinary Qi cultivators was as great as the distance between the heaven and the earth.

The melting-glass-like fire burning on Ji Hao's body turned clearer and clearer, more and more crystalline. It glowed softer and softer, seeming to be more and more harmless. However, Ji Hao clearly knew that this understanding about the great Dao of sun of Pan Gu world had already reached an extreme level, and at the moment, the temperature of the fire burning on his body

surface was three times higher than before, when he first merged with the Pan Jia sun.

Mr. Crow and the pair of fire dragons stuck close to Ji Hao. They had followed Ji Hao all these years. Today, they all attained a decent amount of natural reward power. Mr. Crow's feathers were more and more beautiful, while his sense of power turned more and more sacred. The scales of the pair of fire dragons grew stronger and stronger, while a steadily enhancing prehistorical sense of power was released from their bodies.

Abruptly, Mr. Crow and the pair of fire dragons roared together towards the sky. Their voices were resonant, ripping the space surrounding Ji Hao. The visible ripple spread out, wave by wave.

Mr. Crow and the pair of fire dragons lowered their heads. With worry but determinedly, they each took a small bite of the melting-glass-like fire from Ji Hao and swallowed it. Their bodies immediately blazed up. Their own spirit fire started to be replaced by the essence sun fire from Ji Hao, as their bodies and souls began evolving with the help of the natural reward power.

"Smart!" Ji Hao smiled and started sending a stream of fire into the body of each of the three creatures endlessly. At the moment, his heart of Dao was strong and clear, nearly merged with the great Dao of nature itself, which allowed him to control the fire perfectly. While strengthening Mr. Crow and the pair of fire dragons, help them improving to a perfect state. Ji Hao had also been carefully keeping their bodies and souls on the verge of collapse. It was painful, unbearably painful, but could bring them the greatest benefit.

"And, I am now going to..." Ji Hao raised his head, his eyes dazzling with a golden light. Through the sky, he saw countless slowly orbiting stars.

"The great Dao is extremely austere. The Pan Gu bell is enough to defend, while Pan Gu Dragon Mark is enough to attack. As for the

other things, I have the sun power in my control, my body is a stove... Concocting magic pills, forging magic treasures, creating formations and talismans, what can't I do?"

Narrowing his eyes, Ji Hao calculated for a while. With the help of the immeasurable natural reward power, Ji Hao's thinking ability had reached an extreme degree. Soon, he finished the calculation. As he pointed his finger out, the Taiji cloak, Taiji creation cauldron, and Taiji universe mirror flew out of his body.

The natural reward power descending from the sky split into two streams, one landing on the Taiji creation cauldron and the Taiji cloak, and the other on the Taiji universe mirror. Ji Hao let out a mouthful of golden flame which melted the three supreme treasures into a sphere of golden and shiny liquid, amidst the splendid lights of the natural reward. The Pan Gu bell and Pan Gu Dragon Mark flew out of his body. The bell swallowed the cauldron and the cloak. Right afterward, layers of patterns of sun and moon, stars, mountains, and rivers flashed across the bell. Next, the figure of a giant quietly emerged inside it.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark swallowed the mirror. Afterward, a bright, flickering light was added to the sword, making it look even sharper than before.

"Little guy, are you willing to give up the incoming natural reward power?" In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man abruptly asked.

"What if I am?" Ji Hao instantly threw the question back. He knew that this old man would never say useless words, and once he talked, good things would happen.

"If you are, make requirements to Pan Gu world with the incoming natural rewards for you! Didn't you extort those non-humankind beings with a high proficiency?"

The mysterious man chuckled and said, "Pan Gu had fallen, but many pieces of his body didn't become living creatures. Pan Gu

fought against hundreds of millions of Chaos monsters, and pieces of his body were chopped or sliced off by those Chaos monsters, scattered in this world, hidden by the great Dao of nature."

"Make a deal with Pan Gu world with all the incoming natural rewards for you, and let it give you the remains of Pan Gu's body to forge your sword." The mysterious man murmured.

"The Pan Gu bell is made from nearly the entire spine of Pan Gu, while your sword...Two front teeth? It's a bit embarrassing. If the others knew the truth, the name of your sword would be changed into 'Pan Gu front teeth sword'. I would be so ashamed if the other people knew."

Ji Hao wanted to laugh. 'Pan Gu front teeth sword'? It wasn't a bad name! And why would you be ashamed?' thought Ji Hao.

But he couldn't truly say this. Hurriedly, he asked, "How should I communicate with Pan Gu world?"

The mysterious man clicked his tongue, reached out his hands, and quickly drew a strangely shaped spell symbol that seemed to contain all shapes in the world, in the spiritual space. "Use this Pan Gu spell seal and infuse it with all your following natural rewards power."

Ji Hao reached out a hand too and drew the same spell symbol before his face. Under his will, the natural reward power descending from the sky all poured into the spell symbol. As Pan Gu world quaked slightly, Ji Hao sensed a muddled spirit.

Ji Hao narrated his requirement to the spirit with the simplest language.

In the next moment, the natural reward power descending from the sky suddenly sped up, soon being absorbed by the spell symbols. In the meanwhile, wisps of light began sparkling magically around Ji Hao's body. Within the dim light, different shaped pieces began emerging that looked like rotten wood, rusty

iron, and coarse rocks at the first glance. All these pieces flew into Pan Gu Dragon Mark.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark vibrated intensely, as Ji Hao sensed its wild joy.

Swallowing hundreds of thousands of pieces, a thorough change happened to the sword.

Through Ji Hao's eyes, the mysterious man looked at the reforged Pan Gu Dragon Mark and murmured, "You have the Pan Gu bell, so call this Pan Gu Sword then...What a shame! Why don't you like using an axe? I always felt that hacking the enemies with an axe is the best!"

Chapter 1476: Slaughtering, Challenging

In the mansion of a Xiu Clan landlord outside Liang Zhu City, the corpses of hundreds of non-humankind nobles, servants, and slaves lied on the ground in straight lines. The owner of the mansion was a young Xiu Clan man. His head was chopped off and put on an iron stick, which stood on the tallest roof of the castle in the mansion.

Red Lei stood by the iron stick covered in blood and crossed his arms over his chest, coldly looking at the towering wall of Liang Zhu City.

"I like killing people at dawn. Useless troubadours always say that dawn is the most beautiful moment for living beings to wake up. But I, like to stop their lowly lives the moment they wake up!"

Slapping his chest with his right hand, Red Lei could still feel the unbearable pain caused by the heavy punch from Ji Hao, which punctured his chest that day, and the tremendous terror that descended when his life was under threat. With a sulky face, he said through gritted teeth, "Today, I will kill more. Before our great master arrives, they won't live one day in peace!"

Tens of divine commanders wearing Qilin scale armors and holding long spears floated behind Red Lei, treading on blazing metal rings. Their eyes were lusterless, but looking at those eyes, one could know that they were struggling from time to time. Dim wisps of light wove into strange spell symbols in their eyes. Every time when the expression of struggle rose in their eyes, the dim spell symbol in each of their eyes would dazzle and suppress their wills.

Red Lei turned around. In surprise and praise, he looked at these strong, high-Divine-Magus-level warrior commanders from the heaven and said, "Extraordinary creatures! Perhaps, the quality of this Pan Gu world is much higher than our master expected."

"This kind of supreme organ of authority generated naturally by the world to rule the world and balance the circulating of natural powers...Heaven? Among all worlds we have conquered, only the great world Pan Lin had a similar organ, but we ruined it before it matured."

"But, the heaven in Pan Gu world is so intact, so mature, and has the power to produce new divine gods and warriors to replenish itself. So amazing! By controlling this heaven, we can almost control this world."

"Dishi Cha, that low-grade poor noble, did he use the treasure given by our master on the Divine Origin Pool in the heaven? A wise choice though! Look at these people, strong warriors generated from pure energies, who can freely control the powers of the basic natural elements in this world, with no fear of death, and are brave and skillful... How perfect!"

"But now, they are my slaves. Haha, the warriors who are supposed to maintain the balanced circulation of natural powers of this world have become the slaves of ours, the invaders! Great Master, your wisdom is so amazing!"

Red Lei laughed loudly and turned around, looking at the wall of Liang Zhu City as he said coldly, "Go, kill everyone you see outside the city, every last one of them. Yu Clan people, Jia Clan people, Xiu Clan people, and their servants, slaves, or barbarians in this world, kill them all, but don't make any noise!"

Tens of divine commanders kneeled on one knee, bowed to Red Lei submissively and said 'yes'.

Their golden Qilin scale armors glowed with a faint golden light, making their skin seem slightly dark. An indescribable aura of killing surrounded them. At the moment, these divine commanders looked like devils from hell.

They split up into groups of five, based on their different natures. From the forest around the mansion, large groups of divine

warriors in flood-dragon scale armors rose into the sky, following behind these commanders.

These divine warriors were elites from the Divine Origin Pool, each one of them as strong as a high-level Magus King. They followed behind their commanders expressionlessly, scattering in all directions.

Hundreds of thousands of non-humankind landlords lived around Liang Zhu City. They each had one or a few towns as their territories, with a large number of non-humankind beings living there. Pan Gu world was rich and fertile. In this world, these non-humankind beings had lived a wonderful country life for countless years.

Ji Hao, the Glorious Domination, and the four men swept across the city for a couple of times in a row, but unlike those high-grade nobles in the city, who suffered traumas, these landlords living outside the city didn't lose anything.

But with this dawn, these non-humankind landlords, who had been enjoying their peaceful, leisurely lives, started the darkest day in their lives.

Led by tens of divine commanders, hundreds of thousands of divine warriors swept across their territories like merciless gods of death.

The blade lights and sword shadows sliced broken the cool breezes blowing at dawn; the scent of blood spread speedily along the wind. Red Lei had given his order to kill. Wherever these divine warriors and commanders reached, countless non-humankind landlords, their families, servants, slaves, and even pets were all slaughtered.

In order to threaten the humankind with a strong military force, the twelve emperors in power had brought away all the military strength from these landlords' territories. Their territories were never so empty, with no power left to defend against these divine

warriors and commanders.

"The scent of death and fresh blood, the perfect combination of violence and slaughter... I like it." Red Lei transformed into a red stream of light, approaching Liang Zhu City. "This is such a rich world! You low-grade poor things should never enjoy it. This world belongs to us, and us only! You low-grade poor nobles, you aren't even qualified to be our slaves!"

Red Lei broke into the city, walking quietly and quickly on a street, easily killing every non-humankind warrior he saw.

Through the street, he walked to the large light streams generated by the descending natural reward power. "Natural reward? Or, the grace of the world? Ah, ah, some people in here must have down something that pleased the original spirit of this world, or the great Dao. That's why so much natural grace is descending!" With an evil grin, Red Lei murmured to himself.

"If I make the heads of those lucky people into a book, it would be quite nice." Red Lei giggled as he moved quickly through streets and alleys like a ghost. Everyone who saw him died in his hands.

Gradually, Red Lei came to the nearest few streams of natural rewards light. A couple of strong human marquises and earls stood under the light streams, laughing loudly. While enjoying the pleasant sensation brought by the natural reward power, they were congratulating each other.

During the flood-control mission, these marquises and earls led a batch of their people cleared water channels and carved the spell symbols in quite a few important parts of the great formation. The motherland wouldn't be formed if it weren't for them.

The world was fair and selfless. They made their contribution, hence earned rewards from nature.

Narrowing his eyes, Red Lei watched these human beings showering under the golden light and the purple mist. He gave a

twisted smile and pulled out an oddly shaped, sawtoothed longsword.

Chapter 1477: Gathering the Light, Launching a Strike

"Killing the barbarians awarded by the world, under the witness of the world's spirit! This is a supreme hunting experience! This is conquering and ruling, this is the supreme power, the power that's beyond the will of a world!"

Red Lei wielded the sawtoothed sword as a fierce vibe of violence and killing that belonged especially to Pan Yu world was generated around his body. He looked like a burning red sun as he momentarily flashed across the one-thousand-meters distance between the few marquises, earls, and himself, darting to behind them, less than three-hundred meters away from them.

The dark-red sawtooth sword was swung in the air. While Red Lei approached the few marquises and earls, nearly a thousand elite human warriors on his way were killed, without having a chance to fight back. Those were three Magus kings, thirty-eight Senior Magi, and nine-hundred, forty-three elite warriors. They failed to even see Red Lei's face clearly before their heads were sent up into the sky along with streams of blood.

"Killing, violence, the strongest power in the universe!" Red Lei roared with thrill. His fierce power coiled on his sword while his blood was boiling, his strength soaring. By killing nearly a thousand human beings, he attained a greater Red Sun power. His power was boosted to an extreme level, then broke through and grew three times stronger.

The Red Sun gifted him a greater power. By now, he was three times stronger than his usual peak-state.

The more he killed, the more violently and brutally he killed, the more power Red Lei could attain. This was the essence of the Red Sun, the largest difference between the high-grade nobles from Pan Yu world and low-grade nobles who were born in other

worlds, such as Piji Nu and his people.

Red Lei laughed out wildly, raised his long sword, and aimed at an earl, who was showering under the golden light.

At this very moment, a rosy light illuminated the sky. The Pan Gu sun had risen from the eastern horizon, shining its inexhaustible light on the earth. Everything in the world had a beautiful golden rim.

About a hundred miles away from Red Lei, Ji Hao was looking at the Pan Gu bell and Pan Gu sword floating in front of him in delight.

The Pan Gu bell looked as lusterless as before. Merging with the Taiji cloak and the Taiji creation cauldron, the sense of power released from the Pan Gu bell had grown much stronger than before. On its heavy, simply designed surface, a faintly visible, strange airstream had been flowing.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark, now called the Pan Gu sword, had lost its bright luster. Same as the Pan Gu bell, it was now simply shaped with smooth lines, gray in color, and completely lusterless. No decorative patterns existed on its surface, but somehow, it had a fierce vibe that would shake people' hearts.

Ji Hao gripped the sword, narrowed his eyes, and laughed to the mysterious man inside his spiritual space, "An axe? My Abba may like that style, but I am learning the art of sword. I can't help it. My Shifu taught me Yu Yu's sword art, not Yu Yu's axe art!"

Through Ji Hao's eyes, the mysterious man looked at the Pan Gu sword with pity and said, "This sword is nice, but not as good as the giant axe that opened up the world back then. Little guy, I have you tell you that hacking people with an axe is the best. Axe, that's a weapon for men...Swords, well, a bit sissy!"

Ji Hao felt like vomiting blood. The mysterious man had learned bad things over these years.

'Do you dare to say that to Emperor Xuanyuan? He's a sword master too, alright? With his Xuanyuan sword, how many evil beings did he slaughter? How many heads of non-humankind monsters and evil creatures did he chop off?' Thought Ji Hao.

All of a sudden, Ji Hao's blood boiled. Somehow, the spirit of the world caught his attention. Even though Ji Hao had traded off his natural reward power for Pan Gu's remaining body pieces, his soul still maintained a tight connection with Pan Gu world's spirit.

The light of the Pan Gu sun shone on the entire world. At this moment, the Pan Gu sun became Ji Hao's eye. Everything showering under the sunlight was under Ji Hao's close watch. He saw the few human marquises and earls who were still accepting the natural rewards power, and Red Lei, who swung his sword towards an earl.

Ji Hao smiled, coldly and fiercely. Then, he raised his right hand and conveniently locked his fingers together as he said, "Bro, lend a hand!"

This 'bro' was the Pan Gu sun!

Pan Gu world's spirit woke up. It had been in a deep sleep all this while, but now, it woke up and made a move.

Liang Zhu City was just illuminated by the rising sun, but all of a sudden, it was dark again. The entire area thirty-million miles in radius around the city was darkened. In this area, the light of the Pan Gu sun gathered rapidly under the control of Ji Hao's will, till it was compressed into a hair-thin beam of light!

Sizzle! This extremely thin beam of sunlight flashed across the sky, accurately towards Red Lei.

Red Lei's face twisted. He sensed the greatest fear in his journey of life. He felt that the entire Pan Gu world had become his enemy, and a terrifying power was coming at him through the space.

Driven by his instincts that originated from the Red Sun, Red Lei

raised his sword again and swung forward.

Sizzle! As easily as cutting a piece of tofu, the beam of light, which was compressed from the sunlight in the area with a radius of thirty-million miles, cut the blood-red, dazzling sawtoothed sword in Red Lei's hands into two.

Red Lei shirked hysterically while his armor suddenly fell apart and flew away from his body, merging back together before his body and shielding him. Meanwhile, he opened his mouth and reluctantly let out an exquisite, multi-edged crystal.

The light beam landed on his armor. The armor glowed with layers of light and then shattered. The golden armor turned into a strand of smoke instantaneously and dissipated in the air. Red Lei vomited blood. He flicked his finger and sent the human-head-sized crystal heavily towards the light beam, while flashing across the space and attempting to run.

Puff! The red crystal was penetrated by the golden light beam.

But after all, this crystal was Red Lei's final life-saving treasure. It managed to block the light beam for about one-thousandth of a second. Within this short span of time, Red Lei moved his body away and dodged the golden light beam, which was aimed at the erect eye between his eyebrows. The light beam thus brushed gently across his crotch area.

Without feeling anything, a leg of his was cut off entirely.

Red Lei lowered his head immediately. Looking at his torn leg, he screamed with a dry voice, raising his fleeing speed by thirty percent.

The light of the Pan Gu sun soon filled up the dark area. The warm sunlight also poured on Red Lei's body. Suddenly, a shred of shadow flashed through the air above his head. With the sunlight, which existed in every corner of this world, Ji Hao easily surpassed Red Lei and blocked his way.

Wearing a long shirt made from a coarse cloth that he stole from Si Wen Ming's bag, Ji Hao carried the new Pan Gu sword and smilingly stopped Red Lei, who had one leg of hs cut off.

"Red Lei? Are you still thinking about leaving after you killed so many of our warriors?"

"Easy though. Look at my sword... I reforged it with my natural reward power. Let me stab you one time with my sword. If you survive, I'll let you go!"

Ji Hao gave a large grin. Seeing his grinning face, Red Lei sensed a sharp coldness from deep down his heart.

Chapter 1478: The Sun and Moon Samsara

One leg of Red Lei was cut off. A golden flame lingered on his wound, burning slowly and looking like fluff. Even though Red Lei had boosted up his Red Sun power as much as he could, the fire had still been incinerating his body bit by bit. He could only swallow his saliva with effort.

Compared to Pan Gu Dragon Mark that he saw days ago, the Pan Gu sword now looked simple, without all the sharp glow and luxurious luster of Pan Gu Dragon Mark. At first glance, this heavy, simply shaped, lusterless sword looked like a large stone which was flushed by the water in a stream for countless years. Without an impressive appearance, this sword seemed to look quite 'clean'.

Clean, indeed, extremely clean.

No natural law or natural power seemed to affect this sword. This simple-looking longsword was held in Ji Hao's hand all quietly, giving an aloof feeling.

It was aloof, so it was cold.

It was simple, so it was emotionless.

This was a supreme fierce weapon, and killing was its sole purpose. Back in Pan Yu world, Red Lei had seen countless great weapons held in the hands of those top-grade powerful beings, but including his own spirit weapon, nothing had ever given him such a feeling as Pan Gu sword was giving him right now. Nothing had ever shocked him as much as this sword either.

The nature of the Pan Gu sword was beyond all supreme weapons he had ever seen in his life, including his own spirit weapon.

If the warm and bright natural reward power coiling on the sword didn't neutralize a part of its fierce killing vibe, Red Lei might even suspect this sword would simply fly into the air and

kill every living being in its 'sight'.

Taking a stab from this sword and leaving if he survived? Did Ji Hao see Red Lei as a fool?

Chuckling embarrassedly, Red Lei looked at Ji Hao and frowned as he said in a deep voice, "If you let me go, I will order my people to stop. Otherwise, around Liang Zhu City, the earth will be covered in dead bodies, and blood will flow like rivers."

Letting him go so he could stop killing the people outside Liang Zhu City? Did Red Lei see Ji Hao as a fool?

Ji Hao giggled. Did he have anything to do with the people living around Liang Zhu City? If Red Lei wanted, he could kill as many as he liked. Those were all non-humankind beings anyway.

Slowly raising the Pan Gu sword, Ji Hao incanted Yu Yu's spell of sword. Silently, a beam of sword light shone from the Pan Gu sword, about a hundred meters long and wriggling like a live flood dragon, creating an endless fierce aura of killing.

"Supreme, great Red Moon!" Red Lei prayed murmuringly as he raised his arms high. A backup light-golden armor emerged in the air and wrapped up his body. On the chest plate of the armor, a red sun had been shining, in the middle of which was a slightly opened erect eye, staring at Ji Hao like a living being.

At the moment, Ji Hao's soul was incomparably sensitive. He clearly sensed the connection between Red Lei and an extraordinarily strong, old being in an extremely long distance away.

Ji Hao sensed a pure and tremendous Red Sun power flowing into Red Lei's body through a thin tube between him and the powerful being. Red Lei growled in pain. Next, suppressed by the Red Sun power, the faint golden fire lingering on the wounds of his broken leg died out. Red Lei gasped desperately for air. As the blood splashed, a new leg quickly grew out of the wounds.

"The supreme, great Red Sun gave me the infinite power to destroy weak, ignorant barbarians like you!" Red Lei roared while the Red Sun power flew into his arms. His arms twisted weirdly into a pair of glowing-red, brightly shining longswords.

Wielding the pair of sword arms, Red Lei looked at Ji Hao, and laughed, "The Red Sun power has merged perfectly with my body. Now, my strength, moving speed, and reaction speed are more than five times higher than my usual peak state. Barbarian, do you still think that you have a chance to win? Why don't you just give your sword..."

Greedily glancing at the Pan Gu sword, Red Lei continued, "...to me? It's scary indeed, but in the hands of a stupid barbarian like you, it's not..."

Ji Hao didn't want to listen to Red Lei's arrogant speech. He gave a resonant growl, cast Yu Yu's sword spell, and swung the Pan Gu sword four times in a row in different directions. Four beams of sword light stirred the natural powers and built four walls of light that towered up in the sky and disabled Red Lei from dodging.

Red Lei saw the dazzling sword lights coming at him from all directions, such that he had no way to dodge or flee. In his eyes, Ji Hao's sword moves were simple and ordinary, yet contained a miraculous power of Dao. With the simple sword moves, Ji Hao had actually activated the natural powers and left Red Lei no space to run, forcing him to take the sword attack with his body.

"Barbarian, dedicate your sword spell together with your sword!" Red Lei roared as he swung his pair of blood-red sword arms against the Pan Gu sword, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air.

Puff! Puff! Red Lei screamed in pain. His sword arms, which were nourished by the Red Sun power, and were strong enough to break natural stars, were cut entirely off. Incidentally, the Pan Gu sword had only touched the pair of sword arms slightly.

What frightened him even more was that the Pan Gu sword

naturally released an unstoppable power, which seemed to destroy the whole world. Blown by a gust of wind, the pair of sword arms became two strands of smoke and dissipated. Red Lei howled in a hoarse voice. The Red Sun power reached every part of his body, and his pair of arms grew back quickly.

Ji Hao changed the sword spell. The Pan Gu sword split up into three hazy swords as they hacked to Red Lei from three special directions, which represented the heaven, the earth, and the humankind.

As he changed the sword spell again, a golden stream of sun power, a silver stream of extreme negative power, and a multi-colored, complicated but extremely pure stream of star power were released from the three hazy swords.

The sun, the moon, and the stars were the treasures of the sky. With the powers of the sun, the moon, the stars, and Yu Yu's sword spells, Ji Hao's sword moves became faster and faster, harder and harder to be seen. But, the sword was still landing on Red Lei's head along with a formidable power, like a towering mountain.

Flexible and ever-changing, strong and overwhelming, two different vibes mixed together. Red Lei did no more than casting a glimpse at Ji Hao's sword, but that made him so uncomfortable, he even felt like vomiting blood.

"I can't die in here!" Red Lei shouted in despair.

"Of course, you can't die in here. You're our captain. We wouldn't know how to explain your death to the superiors!" Dim Cloud's voice came from a distance away. Following his voice, eleven strong energy waves rose straight to the sky. "Red Lei, let this bloody barbarian witness our ultimate power! The Sun and Moon Samsara!"

Red Lei gave a twisted smile. He raised his hands and locked his fingers together in a weird way, casting a deep growl.

"Sun and Moon Samsara!"

The powers of the three suns and nine moons could be sensed simultaneously. Suddenly, Ji Hao lost his eyesight. He felt like falling into a dark space, which was filled with a heavy and sticky power. Like a fly in the resin, his movements were slowed awfully down in the dark space.

Chapter 1479: Pan Yu Genesis

The space was all dark, where indescribable, violent forces clashed against each other and brewed, producing terrifying creatures. In the endless darkness, Ji Hao sensed something bad.

If one mixed death with blood, and added enough of rotten corpses, in combination with the ashes of zombies which had died millions of years ago, and covered the whole thing with a golden, shiny paint, then left it in a moist corner to mould for centuries, the smell Ji Hao sensed would be generated.

The smell made Ji Hao sick, as he felt that every cell in his body was polluted. From his body to his embryo of Dao, the unconformable feeling was killing him.

Ji Hao was driven to the edge of collapse. At this moment, the mysterious man snorted coldly and released two beams of blue light from his eyes. The blue light expanded into a warm screen and shielded him.

The screen was as dark and disordered as the space, without directions, without space and time. But contained in the screen, the power released by the mysterious man was as warm as a mother's arms. It comforted Ji Hao and calmed him down, letting him sense a strong power of creation, and a thriving life-force.

The power belonging to the mysterious man, and the one released jointly by Red Lei and the other eleven Sun and Moon knights, were two opposite extremes.

The extreme rottenness and death versus the extreme power of creation...

Ji Hao was shielded in the screen between death and creation. His one foot stepped in hell, the other foot stepped in heaven. He clearly sensed the differences of the two opposite powers, from which, he seized a magical opportunity.

"Phew!" He took a long and deep breath. Around his body in the boundless darkness, a blood-red eye, which had the extreme greed and disorderedness, the needles evilness and violence, and the ceaseless destruction and death, suddenly opened.

A dazzling red light rose and slowly illuminated the surrounding space, allowing Ji Hao to see things.

An immeasurably enormous giant curled up and floated in the darkness. From Ji Hao's angle, the giant's head was hundreds of times larger than the Pan Gu sun.

The giant head was hideous, looking like a granite statue. It was bald. The nose, lips, eyebrows, cheekbones, ears, all lines were simply straight; interwoven fine wrinkles existed on the edge of every line.

Above the nose bone of the giant was a deep, sunken eye socket, occupying half of his forehead. In the eye socket, a giant, blood-red eyeball had been rolling agitatedly, releasing a suffocating sense of destruction.

"Destroy!" The giant abruptly opened his thick lips and bared his sharp teeth. He widely opened his mouth and gave a deep growl from the deepest area of his soul. It was not a mature language, but through the intensive soul power vibration, Ji Hao clearly understood him.

Followed by a creaking noise, the giant's mouth grew even wider. A black and red gust of wind blew out of his mouth, bringing out a strong scent of blood. Wherever the wind swept across, even the darkness was polluted to look like rotten gravy. He opened his mouth large and greedily devoured the mutated darkness. The more he devoured, the brighter his eyes shone with the blood-red light. The power released from his body grew greater and greater, as the coverage of the blood-red light expanded wider and wider, and he became stronger and stronger.

Slowly, the giant stretched his body and gave another

thunderous roar.

He didn't mean anything this time. Instead, he was purely channeling the restless desire of destruction in his heart. But what enraged him was that it was all dark around him, with nothing existing. He wanted to destroy things, but he couldn't find anything to be destroyed.

He opened his erect eye, as widely as he could. A nearly tangible, blood-red light stream was released from that eye, slowly.

The giant laughed with a hissing voice. He reached out his hand and gripped the blood-red light, then slowly pulled it out of his eye. Following a sizzling noise, this blood-red light condensed into an odd weapon, giving an evil feeling. It was a twisted longsword, looking like a poisonous snake. Its edge was full of bumps and hollows, with saw-like teeth. The entire sword was thickly covered in barbs.

Judging merely by the twisted, strange shape of this sword, one could tell how twisted and cruel this giant was.

While laughing, the giant wielded the sword and split up the boundless darkness. Immense space cracks were created, letting in the vast Chaos power, generating the earth, the water, the wind, and the fire. With the boiling natural powers, a new world began to be created.

Mad roars could be heard from the space cracks, from all directions. Countless Chaos monsters discovered a new world which was forming. Driven by the instincts of predators, they crazily marched towards this new world.

They wanted to kill the owner of this world, occupy it, infect its original spirit, and become the new rulers of this world. If they succeeded, this new world would become their sturdiest nest in the boundless Chaos, based on which, they would be able to absorb the Chaos power to strengthen themselves, and evolve ceaselessly.

The giant laughed wildly. He was thrilled. Facing all Chaos monsters from every direction, he actively attacked and started a crazy massacre. His twisted longsword swept across the space and killed countless Chaos monsters. Every Chaos monster he killed became an embossment on his sword.

"Destroy! Destroy! Destroy!" The giant roared. Overwhelming sound waves shattered countless Chaos monsters around him.

The giant's power of destruction affected the Chaos monsters' spirit blood, mixing with the blood shed from the giant's body after he was injured. The mixture brewed in the natural power waves for a long period of time and generated the first generation of living creatures of this world.

The first generation of creatures that crawled out of the natural power waves were single-eyed giants. They roared thunderously and joined the tangled battle. These giants did not only attack all Chaos monsters madly, they also insanely attacked their 'father', the original giant who created them.

The war lasted for countless centuries. From the waves of natural powers, a new generation of creatures walked quietly out. They looked almost exactly the same as human beings, each with one pair of eyes. They were also twisted and cruel, but clearly, they were much smarter and cunning. Instead of joining the war recklessly, they hid in every area of the primitive world and tried to understand the great Dao of nature to control this world.

The third generation of creatures that walked out of the natural power waves were three-eyed Yu Clan people that Ji Hao was familiar with!

As appendages, they survived under the protection of two-eyed people.

Then, the four-eyed Jia Clan people were created, brutal and combative.

At last, the five-eyed Xiu Clan people with high intelligence were born.

Before six-eyed, seven-eyed, and even thousand-eyed species emerged, the single-eyed giant, who created the world fell.

Chapter 1480: One-eyed Primordial Spirit

Through some mysterious kind of connection, Ji Hao watched the creation of Pan Yu world. But, it ended all of a sudden.

The endless darkness coiled on his body, wave after wave, like glue. Except for the power of destruction, all natural powers in the surroundings were dispelled, and all natural laws were blocked. Ji Hao wasn't able to borrow any power from the surrounding environment, and could only depend on his own power.

Deep roars could be heard, following which, wisps of light gradually emerged in the boundless darkness.

In the dark-red, evil light, Ji Hao saw Red Lei, Dim Cloud, and the other Sun and Moon Knights, floating in the midair in a circle. Twelve spheres of light floated above their heads, with the colors of the three suns and nine moons. Behind them, a dense dark mist had been rolling quickly.

Along with a deep, rumbling growl, they were swallowed by the dark mist. The mist coiled and slowly wove into tall, humanoid figures; thirty-meters tall, purely dark, with a deep sunken eye between the eyebrows that was sparkling deeply with a red light.

Suddenly, all twelve tall figures opened their eyes and released strong blood-red light beams from them. The light beams landed on Ji Hao's body with an overwhelming sense of evilness and violence, that seemed powerful enough to destroy the entire universe. The power of destruction wrapping around Ji Hao's body was set ablaze. The red fire of destruction mixed with wisps of dark mist scorched Ji Hao's body, causing him an unbearable pain.

The long shirt given by Si Wen Ming was burned out, and so were his dragon leather boots. Ji Hao didn't manage to react timely. He sensed a sharp pain, then his skin was gone, exposing his crystalline, colorless muscles.

Snorting heavily in pain, Ji Hao hurried activated the Pan Gu bell.

Streams of Chaos power poured down like water streams, wrapping him tightly. The fire of destruction crazily attacked the Chaos power and generated dark bolts of thunder, ceaselessly releasing a dreadful sense of destruction which could be sensed by Ji Hao.

The world-destroying thunder was powerful enough to penetrate a world and kill all its living creatures.

An intense collision took place between the Pan Gu bell and the power of destruction from Pan Yu world. This was almost like a direct conflict bursting between Saint Pan Gu and Giant Pan Yu, through Ji Hao and the twelve Sun and Moon Knights, countless centuries after the two worlds were created.

It wasn't a large-scale conflict. However, the world-destroying thunder it generated was at a fairly high level, that even scared Ji Hao.

"Ji Hao!" Red Lei, who was now a single-eyed giant, laughed out loud. His voice was filled with the most original will of destruction, without even a spark of wisdom. At the moment, Red Lei was controlled by his will of destruction. His independent consciousness was suppressed completely, and he had already become a monster which knew nothing but destruction.

Or, he had become a clone of the terrifying giant who created Pan Yu world, inheriting a part of the giant's destructive instinct and power of destruction.

"This is the original primordial spirit from Pan Yu world, the noblest, strongest bloodline!" Red Lei roared with a hoarse voice, "We, all living creatures in Pan Yu world, our supreme goal is to trace to the origin and raise a primordial spirit!"

Red Lei growled as he marched to Ji Hao with one single step

along with rolling dark smoke, and swung a palm down towards his face.

Ji Hao gave a resonant shout. The Pan Gu sword split up and released two beams of sword light, with the nature of sun and the extreme negative. Red Lei' vision was blurred. One beam of sword light penetrated his palm, while the other beam flashed across the darkness and pierced into his erect eye before he even noticed.

Red Lei sneered. He punched on the Chaos power released from the Pan Gu bell, swiftly and violently.

"This is the ultimate power of the three suns and nine moons!" He roared, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, I am invincible now! You can't harm me!"

Buzz! The Pan Gu bell vibrated slightly, extracting a giant amount of energy from Ji Hao's body.

The Sun and Moon Samsara formation built by the twelve Sun and Moon knights isolated the space and dispelled all natural powers. Therefore, the Pan Gu bell couldn't extract energy from the surrounding environment either. To defend against Red Lei's punch, the bell could only use Ji Hao's power.

If Ji Hao were an ordinary Qi cultivator with limited power, even under the protection of the bell, defending against one punch from Red Lei could consume up all his energy. After that, he could only allow himself to be trampled under the feet of the twelve Sun and Moon knights.

Nevertheless, the current source of Ji Hao's energy was the Pan Jia sun. He had the power of an entire natural power.

Trapping Ji Hao with the Sun and Moon Samsara formation and wearing him out? The Twelve Sun and Moon knights indeed had a good plan, but, it wouldn't be so easy for them to actually implement it.

"That's all?" Ji Hao moved, forced back for about ten steps by Red

Lei's punch. But, he remained perfectly unharmed.

"That's all?" Red Lei laughed wildly, spreading the endless will and desire for destruction and violence with his laughter. "When your power is consumed up, when you can't control this bloody bell anymore, when you can only suffer the destructive power of the Sun and Moon Samsara with your body, I will break your bones one by one, pull our every tendon of yours, then cut you into pieces!"

Red Lei launched a thunderstorm-like series of punches while laughing. Each of his strikes was heavy enough to injure a Supreme Magus severely.

Ji Hao floated in the air and watched Red Lei's fists punching down over and over again. He opened his erect eye and locked Red Lei up with his strong spirit power. With the secret of the sky-opening move, he was trying to find Red Lei's fatal weakness.

The move of sky-opening was always successful, but today, it had become too slow.

The great Dao of destruction shielded Red Lei. It was a natural law from another world, the most original, core strength of Pan Yu world, the highest great Dao of nature of that world. Ji Hao attempted to find the weakness in Red Lei's destructive power within a short span of time, but it was difficult, awfully difficult, extremely difficult!

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man stood up, clenched his fists, and widely opened his eyes. From his eyes, two beams of blue light were released, illuminating Ji Hao's entire spiritual space. "Pan Yu?" The mysterious man snorted, "Create a world with the power of destruction? No, not only the power of destruction, but also the other disgusting powers! Rottenness, collapse, destruction, evilness... What a disgusting guy..."

"En, your Dao is interesting!" In the mysterious man's eyes, complicated marks of the great Dao poured down like waterfalls.

He was trembling slightly, as he had been observing the dark mist and sensing the power of great Dao contained in it, with all of his ability.

In Ji Hao's lower abdomen, the five-colored cauldron began beating like a heart. Earlier, the cauldron had swallowed a large number of non-humankind souls and forcibly sealed Great Liberty, and at the moment, it had been transforming all of them into the purest original soul power, for the mysterious man to absorb.

Replenished by the original soul power, the mysterious man's faint body turned clearer and clearer, and his sense of power grew stronger and stronger.

Ji Hao suddenly staggered forward, as Dim Cloud rushed up and threw a heavy kick at him.

The twelve single-eyed giants besieged him, beating him violently!

Chapter 1481: Race Difference

The twelve emperors in power, the surviving power elders, and the leaders of large non-humankind families stopped doing their work and looked at the rolling dark clouds of destruction in the sky, stunned.

"Sun and Moon Samsara!" Piji Nu trembled as he stutteringly squeezed out a few words through his gritted teeth, "The highest secret of natural law utilization! The largest difference between the high-grade nobles and us! If we had the power of the Sun and Moon Samsara...we would have occupied Pan Gu world long ago!"

"Unless we can learn it ourselves, how could the high-grade nobles and the great beings behind them ever give us this kind of an ultimate secret of destruction?" Polo Jia murmured, "What a scary power! What an intoxicating sense of power! I can even feel that every cell of my body is shaking because of the fear."

"Cut the crap!" As a female, based on her special power of intuition and the fragility buried deep in her bones, Yemo Luoye spoke out her major concern, "Twelve Sun and Moon knights, true Sun and Moon powerful beings, the strong ones showered under the lights of the three suns and nine moons...If Marquis Yao Ji Hao fails to stop them, and if Emperor Shun and the other human beings fail as well, what should we do?"

Trembling slightly, a trace of despair emerged on her beautiful face as she continued, "Do you still remember the manuscripts left by our ancestors? Do you still remember the endless despair they had when they were searching for resources to live in the endless Chaos?"

"People died moment after moment. Everyone could die at any time. There was no future, no hope to be seen, until they luckily came near Pan Gu world through a Chaos swirl."

"Do you remember their cries, their tears, their wails, their

despair in the manuscripts?"

"High-grade nobles are always heartless and cruel. We are 'sinners' who have been hiding Pan Gu world and all surrounding worlds from them. What will be our fate?"

Yemo Luoye looked at the others and continued tremblingly, "I don't want to be like our ancestors. I don't want to be forced out of this world, into the hopeless Chaos, living a vagrant life forever... vagrant forever!"

"Things are not so bad!" No one around Yemo Luoye responded. After a long, long while, Fan Hai squeezed a smile out of his face and said, "Let's see how the human beings will handle this. If they are strong enough to fight back, we will join hands with them and fight back together...If, if Sun and Moon knights are truly unstoppable, we...Perhaps, we can still be nobles!"

Slowly licking his lips, Fan Hai subconsciously lowered his voice and said, "If we are willing to become slaves, we may survive. After all, we're Yu Clan people, and we have noble Yu Clan bloodlines. If we are willing to become slaves, give up all our powers and resources, survival won't be so difficult!"

Before Dishi Yanluo and the other emperors made their voices be heard, Fan Hai hurriedly added, "I'm not afraid of death. I just want to say that there will be a hope as long as we're alive! Isn't that right? Back then, our ancestors nearly destroyed the humankind, but now their clan alliance is so powerful!"

The group of non-humankind beings glanced at each other. Yemo Luoye let out a long breath and said, "Hmm, let's see, let's see..."

Blinking her eyes, she suspiciously glanced at the people surrounding her, and said, "I have to warn you in advance, that right now, we have shared interests. If you have any decision to make, don't keep it from the others."

Blinking quickly, she continued with a proud smile and a bland

tone, "You all know that my dear younger sister, adorable Yemo Shanye, has a pretty good relationship with some human leaders. And my loyal, reliable old servant, my favorite old butler, the one I respected the most, Yemo Shayi, is in Ji Hao's service now!"

Yemo Luoye chuckled proudly.

'Damn you, b*tch!' Dishi Yanluo and the others cast slow glances at her blooming-flower-like, beautiful grinning face, and cursed in their heads.

Didn't everyone know how many hysterical tricks she played back then for bringing Yemo Shanye back? Now what? Yemo Shanye had actually become a good card for her to develop a relationship with the humankind?

On the wall of Liang Zhu City, Emperor Shun and four former human emperors stood in a line, silently looking at the dense dark cloud of destruction in the sky, which made everyone quite uncomfortable. Si Wen Ming and the other younger elites stood quietly behind the five emperors, also gazing at the sky with serious looks.

"Sun and Moon Samsara? A destructive power generated from the combination of the powers and the great Dao of the three suns and nine moons?" Shennong said blandly, "Back then, if the invaders had such power..."

"If so, we might have been destroyed already, right? Haha, back then, human beings were far weaker, far, far weaker. Back in that age, we weren't even as strong as these kids, like Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao!" Emperor Xuanyuan laughed delightfully.

Emperor Xuanyuan sighed and continued, "It has been so many years, and we have made it. We human beings are getting more and more powerful. Many kids are disappointing, but more and more are not. This is good, wonderful! Even if we may face more, stronger enemies, old people like us shall have no worries!"

Pressing his hands on an embattlement, Emperor Xuanyuan, the most combative one among all human emperors, slightly clenched his ten fingers. His fingers sank deep into the wall as he said, "Good! Let our boys give a try and see how strong, how capable are these so-called true Pan Yu world noble monsters!"

Raising his hand, Emperor Xuanyuan shouted with a bright voice, "Boys, get ready to fight. Are we going to watch our brother risk his life against the masters alone? Go, fight these new monsters. Every one of you should feel them out before their army arrives."

A sharp beam of light flashed across Emperor Xuanyuan's eyes as he continued mercilessly, "There are only twelve of them now. If you can't defeat twelve monsters...you shouldn't complain even if you die!"

Si Wen Ming silently pulled out his sword and stomped his foot heavily against the ground. A dense dark-yellow cloud condensed from pure earth power spread from under his feet. Treading on the cloud, he broke into the dark cloud like a reverse shooting star.

"Kill!" Si Wen Ming didn't make a speech. Instead, he gave a strong shout and swung his sword towards Red Lei.

Elite human beings flew up one after another and broke into the dark cloud.

As Emperor Xuanyuan said, Ji Hao was their brother. How could they watch their brother suffer the beating from a group of non-humankind monsters alone?

Taking advantage of number?

In Pan Gu world, which intelligent species had a larger population than the humankind?

While Yu Dynasty emperors were running a discussion about surrendering, human warriors had already pulled out their swords to fight!

Chapter 1482: Inhuman Beating

Following tens of muffled thuds, Si Wen Ming and a group of princes were sent flying backward while vomiting blood.

They attacked the twelve single-eyed giants transformed from Red Lei and the other Sun and Moon knights, but the latter with the original power of destruction from Pan Yu world didn't suffer any harm.

Without a world-destroying power, one could never 'destroy' 'destruction' itself!

This was an annoying paradox of natural laws. Red Lei and the other Sun and Moon Knights had the power of destruction, and the meaning of their existence was destruction. The powers of Si Wen Ming and the other human beings, the weakly destructive power generated from their spirit blood, landed on the bodies of these single-eyed giants like a large river pouring into a bottomless abyss, failing to deliver any effect.

On the contrary, the power of destruction belonging to the twelve giants grew stronger and stronger. By just waving their hands, they injured Si Wen Ming and the other human beings and sent them flying backward while vomiting blood.

Si Wen Ming attacked Red Lei and suffered a counterattack from him. Si Wen Ming's internal organs were vibrated badly, as a result of which blood was squeezed out of his mouth and sprayed to a long distance away. The other princes were all forced back and injured severely. Some of them had broken limbs, some had twisted bodies, while some had holes on their bodies.

At this moment, the strong Divine Magi showed their great self-healing ability. They breathed deeply and boosted up their thriving spirit blood energy, healing their wounds within a blink of an eye.

As the most outstanding batch of elites among human beings, the

powers of Si Wen and the group of princes erupted. Each of them activated at least three Divine-level magic treasures, and half of them even took out divine treasures from the heaven. Brightly glowing screens shielded their bodies; some even put on simply designed divine armors with prehistorical senses of power, then rushed up again with all their strengths.

These princes, who supported Si Wen Ming and were his close friends, had all played important roles in the wars against the non-humankind invasion and the flood-control mission. Therefore, they were also under the protection of a great natural reward power.

The power of destruction pressed down. From behind their bodies, golden light and purple mist rose, defending against it; the natural reward power was pure and inexhaustible.

The world was protecting Si Wen Ming and his brothers. The twelve single-eyed giants struck rampantly, yet, they could no longer hurt these human beings easily. Shining with a dazzling golden light, these human beings with sacred bodies of natural reward flashed through the dark cloud. Every bump against the twelve giants would force them back for a long distance, but they never gave up, as they fought against the giants determinedly.

Red Lei and the others temporarily forgot Ji Hao. They laughed wildly and launched crazy offensives against Si Wen Ming and the other human beings.

They punched heavily. Corroded by the power of destruction, the blinding glows of the defensive treasures of Si Wen Ming and the others had been dimming, while the violent strikes from the giants pushed the brave human warriors back further and further. No one could take even a single punch from these giants with ease.

If the situation went on, when the power of destruction destroyed their defensive treasures, Si Wen Ming and all the others would all be facing a life-threatening danger.

"They have no weakness."

Ji Hao was thinking as quickly as he could. The bodies of these single-eyed giants were condensed from the original power of destruction from Pan Gu world. Pan Yu world was a great world, no weaker than Pan Gu world. Therefore, the great Dao of destruction of Pan Yu world was no lower than the great Dao of Pan Gu world.

Even if the great Dao of Pan Yu world did have weaknesses, Ji Hao wouldn't be able to discover them, not at his current level. Not to mention Ji Hao, perhaps, not even Yu Yu could manage it.

Ji Hao guessed wildly that even the mysterious being, who hid behind Priest Dachi's Palace of Dao and silently helped to forge Ji Hao's four supreme treasures back then, might not be able to discover the weakness of the great Dao of destruction of Pan Yu world either.

If that mysterious power being were able to do that, he or she wouldn't have to stay in Pan Gu world!

Therefore, at least based on Ji Hao's move of sky-opening, these single-eyed giants had no weaknesses.

Nevertheless, this Sun and Moon Samsara formation did have weaknesses, mistakes, and flaws. Ji Hao already had his eyes on a fairly clear spot in the rolling dark cloud.

The twelve Sun and Moon knights had activated their powers from the three suns and nine moons. Based on the formation, they created a circulation of the powers of the three suns and nine moons to generate the original power of destruction. The design was perfect, and the formation was terrifyingly powerful; the formation itself had no weakness to be mentioned.

The formation's weaknesses were the twelve Sun and Moon Knights. Their powers were different, and so were their skills to control the formation.

It was not hard to tell that the twelve knights were carefully selected elites, at almost exactly the same cultivation level. But after all, they were independent individuals, and even based on the same level, some of them were stronger than the others.

They had the same height, the same figure; their cultivation level, even intelligence level were both the same. However, they understood the formation and controlled it in slightly different ways, for which reason, when they combined their powers, weaknesses would certainly arise.

The formation itself had no weakness until the people forming it became its largest weakness!

Ji Hao laughed out loud, raised the Pan Gu sword high, and combined the moves of sky-opening and earth splitting, releasing a water-clear stream of sword light. The sword light landed fiercely on the densest spot of the dark cloud.

Crack! The formation collapsed, and so did the twelve single-eyed giants. The twelve Sun and Moon knights were sent flying away. They howled in pain while their blood gushed out from their eyes, mouths, noses, and ears. They looked at Ji Hao without knowing what to do, growling meaninglessly.

They joined the invasion wars in over a hundred worlds. Together, they killed countless powerful beings from countless worlds. When they became single-eyed giants, the enemies, who were hundreds, or even thousands of times stronger, all died in their hands.

But today, their Sun and Moon Samsara formation was broken!

"How is this possible?" Red Lei shouted with a dry voice.

Si Wen Ming laughed brightly. Held in his hands, the Xuanyuan sword released a golden, dragon-like, tremendous stream of power, rushing towards Red Lei like a thunderstorm.

If Si Wen Ming were the only attacker, the situation would still

be controllable, because Red Lei was way stronger than him after all. As a Sun and Moon powerful being, Red Lei could easily kill Si Wen Ming with no more than three moves, even though the latter was under the protection of the Xuanyuan sword!

The problem was, other than Si Wen Ming, seven to eight princes had rushed up as well.

Things still wouldn't be so bad if these princes were fighting all by themselves. After all, with no more than twenty moves, Red Lei could destroy both the bodies and the souls of eight to nine peak-level Divine Magi. Nevertheless, on the ground, under Shaosi's direction, at least a million Maguspriests gathered together and built a tremendous scale formation, generating an overwhelming power through a magic curse.

In the meanwhile, under the strong will of Pan Gu world, the powers of Red Lei and the other Sun and Moon knights were suppressed to the level of the weakest power elder from Yu Dynasty. Suffering the suppression and the magic curse, the twelve knights' bodies were softened. All kinds of negative feelings even made them want to die!

After a quarter of an hour, Si Wen Ming and the other princes threw the twelve knights down from the sky, then pressed them on the ground and gave them the most terrible beating!

The twelve Sun and Moon knights had strong bones, such that when they were broken, the cracking noise was so bright and clear that it even echoed to hundreds of miles away along the wind!

Chapter 1483: Sad Captives

"No, no, no... It shouldn't be like this...No...!"

Red Lei lied on the ground, with the bones of his arms and legs all crushed. He widely opened his mouth and screamed in pain, but a prince with a big beard smashed a giant hammer on his mouth, which generated fire sparkles as it scrunched Red Lei's teeth.

"Such strong teeth!" A few shallow scratches were left on the hammer. The big bearded man who smashed Red Lei's face glanced at his treasure, then angrily threw a series of kicks violently on Red Lei's handsome face.

The buildings in Liang Zhu City were most incinerated, then flushed by water, forming a thick layer of mud that covered the streets. Wearing a pair of boots entirely stained with the dark and stinky mud, the beard prince left layers of large footprints on Red Lei's face with his foot. As most Yu Clan nobles, Red Lei was a cleanliness freak. The awful stench of the mud almost made him faint.

"I am a high-grade noble, I am a high-grade noble from the great Yu Clan!" Red Lei mumbled, "I demand you to treat me the way I deserve! Even as a captive, I shouldn't be treated like this!"

Ji Hao walked over with large steps. His body was still wrapped in a golden, melting-glass-like layer of fire. With every step, he left a deep, burning footprint on the ground. The mud around his footprints was even burned into glowing-red, transparent glass.

"High-grade nobles... Ah, you're right! You are so much stronger than the power elders and deputy elders from Yu Dynasty, so you have to be treated in a special way. Otherwise, what should we do if you escape or hurt our people?" Ji Hao waved his hands to Shaosi, who stood in a short distance away, and said, "Shaosi, find a way to make them more obedient."

Shaosi smiled faintly. Floating in the air with her feet half a foot away from the ground, she drifted over. As a dim light flashed across her eyes, she pointed at Red Lei and the other knights, then exclaimed in a low voice, "They have such a strong fortune, enough for them to do anything without difficulty. It's a shame though that they are suppressed by an even stronger fortune. That's why they're so unlucky.

Shaosi locked her fingers together and made a strange hand motion, then began incanting a spell.

Followed by her deep voice, which sounded like the rumbles from the sky or underground, wisps of nearly transparent mist gradually rose from the bodies of the twelve Sun and Moon knights. Their fortune, which could give them all kinds of positive energies and bring them infinite benefits, was drained by Shaosi. Shaosi left them with nothing but their bad luck.

By now, even if Ji Hao let them go, they would die on their way out of the city. They might fall to death while walking, or choke to death while drinking water.

"You, what magic is this?" shouted Flow Yue, the Sun and Moon Knight from Flow Moon, the family of keepers and protectors of the non-humankind civilization. He watched Shaosi drain his fortune. "Can you take away our fortune? No, how can this be possible? You are so undeveloped, you live in such a wild world... you ignorant barbarians with incomplete evolution, how can you possibly possess such a high-grade power?"

"Fortune, our fortune, you, you, you..." Flow Yue struggled desperately. He attempted to leap up to attack Shaosi, but ended up being stomped into the mud by Ji Hao. The fire burning on Ji Hao's feet scorched his chest and roasted his skin and muscles, along with a sizzling noise.

Flow Yue wailed in pain and struggled with his last strength. Ji Hao gave him an extreme pain, but his eyes were not on Ji Hao.

Instead, he stared straight at Shaosi with the greatest fear and shock.

He was like a fierce wolf who had its eyes on his prey, a rabbit. But all of a sudden, the rabbit transformed into the scariest Chaos monster. The sudden change of its prey frightened this wolf and gave the fragile heart of this wolf a heavy strike.

Judging by Flow Yue's expression, he was downhearted, and even seemed to have given up on himself.

Shaosi had just drained their fortune. Form now on, they would always be unlucky in Pan Gu world. No matter what they do, they would never succeed. But more terrifying things had yet to happen to them.

A few elderly Maguspriests walked over. Their badly wrinkled skins were covered in tattoos of poisonous bugs. Seeing these Maguspriests, even Ji Hao took a few steps backward because of the uncomfortable feeling given by them.

"These people... are strong... We have to be careful." murmured one elderly Maguspriest with a muffled, deep voice.

"We can't bring shame on ourselves. If they can still escape after we have cast Gu at them, we'd be too ashamed to see anyone in the world." said another elderly Maguspriest while seriously looking at Red Lei and the other knights.

"Make it hard, my old brothers. Don't hide your powers. Bring out the good things you have raised these years." Another Maguspriest laughed with a high-pitched voice. As gusts of frosty wind blew across, he took out an ice jade box and carefully opened it, then took out twelve bean-sized black bug eggs from it.

No one knew what kind of scary creatures existed in these eggs, but the eggs vibrated intensely on the old Maguspriest's palm even before hatching, letting out a shrill hissing noise.

The old Maguspriest hurriedly bit his tongue tip and sprayed a

few drops of spirit blood on these eggs, then said, "Aw, babies, my little babies... Hehe, you can soon taste some delicious meat... Haha, just a second, just a second. These people are strong, muscular, you can do whatever you want to them, as long as you don't kill them!"

The twelve Sun and Moon knights shrieked, crazily struggled, and twisted their bodies.

They came to conquer Pan Gu world. Without a doubt, they did their background research with great efforts. From Dishi Cha, a Yu Clan noble who was born in this world and served as their ears and eyes, these Sun and Moon knights learned quite a lot about the weirdness of human Maguspreists.

For example, the Gu masters among Maguspriests and their Gu bugs... To these Sun and Moon knights, all kinds of Gu bugs used by Gu masters could only show up in nightmares.

One could only imagine having billions of bug and bug eggs inside one's body, letting them drink the spirt blood, feeding them with one's flesh, even merging them with one's body through some mysterious power...If one wanted to remove them from one's body, one would have to harm one's own soul!

Even worse, some Gu masters hid their bugs in their brains, to keep their brains under constant threat!

"No, no, no...no!" The twelve knights shrieked hysterically.

A group of strong human warriors rushed up and violently forced open the twelve knights' mouths with their weapons. The old Maguspreist smilingly walked over and put a black egg into each of their mouths.

What was scary was that the eggs let out a loud sizzle and rolled down into the throats the moment they touched the knights' tongues.

Another old Maguspreist started rushing those warriors

impatiently. He didn't take out bug eggs. Instead, he prepared to use mature bugs!

Those bugs were weird-looking, half-inch long, with colorful centipede bodies and deep blue scorpion heads. Their mere appearance was scary enough to numb people' bodies. The old Mgauspreists laughed out loud and put the bugs into the knights' mouths. The bugs slowly moved their slim feet and drilled into their throats.

"No!" With a shrill wail, the twelve knights fainted together because of the fear.

Chapter 1484: Divine Commanders and Warriors

"Fainted?" Emperor Shun walked over while frowning as he looked at the twelve knights and said, "Those are just small Gu bugs. It's not like we're chopping off their heads, yet they fainted? With such a low psychological quality, no matter how strong they are, they are no one to be afraid of."

Emperor Xuanyuan snorted scornfully.

As an ancient human emperor who had slaughter countless evil beings, he looked down upon these weak beings who fainted because of a few tiny bugs. He agreed with Emperor Shun, that the ones who fainted because of a few bugs are not enough to be the humankind's enemies!

"Shun, ministers, go take a look. Something happened outside the town." Hao Tao walked over in a great rush and said with a deep and strong voice, having a strange tone.

Ji Hao and the others walked onto the city wall and gazed out.

They saw a group of divine commanders wearing golden Qilin armors leading countless sky warriors in silver flood dragon armors, raising a gale and sending countless bloody corpses to Liang Zhu City.

Three-eyed Yu Clan people, four-eyed Jia Clan people, five-eyed Xiu Clan people, dark-kind slave warriors, non-humankind slaves... Their corpses were piled up orderly into a straight wall, standing in the empty area ten miles away from the city.

The corpse wall had been growing higher slowly. The gale brought the strong scent of blood into the city, making people sick.

One whole hundred golden-armored divine commanders, and a hundred-thousand silver-armored divine warriors, guarded in a straight line by the southern side of Liang Zhu City, holding their

weapons and remaining silent. Their eyes were lusterless. From time to time, dim lights sparkled in those eyes, within which, spell symbols had been suppressing their independent consciousness.

"What are they doing?" Looking at the wall of non-humankind corpses, Emperor Shun seemed to be as surprised as Hao Tao.

"Gong Gong occupied the heaven, and Dishi Cha colluded with him. Did Dishi Cha take over the heaven after the Gong Gong Family failed?" Si Wen Ming rubbed his chin as he frowningly looked at these divine commanders and warriors and said, "That'll be a trouble. According to the elders in my family, the Divine Origin Pool in the heaven can continuously create new divine gods."

Large human families and clans with long histories, such as Si Wen Ming's You Chong Clan, all had numerous links with the ancient heaven. Therefore, they knew some deep secrets of the heaven.

The Divine Origin Pool had a dreadful power of creation. The regeneration of top-grade divine gods like the five divine emperors might be extremely slow, but lower-level divine commanders and warriors could grow like fragrant-flowered garlic in spring, with abundant resources.

Back then, all ancient divine gods had fallen, leaving no one to control the heaven. Therefore, the Divine Origin Pool was suppressed to an extreme level.

If Dishi Cha knew how to activate the pool and make it run at full-speed, he would have a strong army of divine commanders and warriors under his control. Among the ones guarding outside the city, the golden armored ones were at the level of Divine Magi, while the silver armored one were all as strong as high-level Magus Kings!

Human armies, core commanders, and elite Senior-level warriors could not be compared with these freaks from the Divine Origin

Pool in the heaven! Besides, all human warriors were born with fragile bodies, and needed to cultivate themselves severely for their current strength. Unlike human beings, the bodies of divine warriors and commanders from the Divine Origin Pool were all generated by pure natural powers, while their spirits were given by the heaven itself.

In terms of military force wastage, human beings might not be able to rival a fully activated Divine Origin Pool.

Piji Nu and the other non-humankind emperors walked over quickly. Seeing the wall of corpses standing by the city, the faces of all eleven male emperors paled immediately. They immediately figured out the whole thing and began cursing Dishi Cha with the evilest language they knew.

Only Yemo Luoye showed a weird smile when she saw those corpses outside the city. What a narrow-minded woman! Most of core members of her Yemo Family had gone missing. Today, seeing the corpses of so many landlords who lived outside the city, she actually felt balanced, much more comfortable than before!

More and more corpses were sent up.

Everything stuck to Red lei's plan. He planned to scare all non-humankind beings in Liang Zhu City with violence and blood, and make them despair, letting them suffer endlessly before their fates were finally decided.

Piji Nu snorted, then turned around and bowed to Emperor Shun, "Your Majesty, as your allies, we hope that the humankind can help us to destroy the enemies outside the city, and save our people. If they continue slaughtering our people so rampantly, we would suffer too serious a loss."

Emperor Shun frowned. Pointing at those divine commanders and warriors in golden and silver armors, he asked coldly, "Do you know where they are from?"

Piji Nu and the other Yu Dynasty emperors glanced at each other. When the non-humankind invaded Pan Gu world, numerous world-shaking wars were started between the non-humankind and the heaven. Back then, human beings were weak, and the heaven was the main force fighting against the non-humankind.

If the divine families represented by the five divine emperors didn't have internal conflicts and consumed too much of their strengths, the non-humankind force that invaded Pan Gu world back then might not have been able to break the ancient heaven. Therefore, how could Piji Nu and the other Yu Dynasty emperors not recognize these expressionless, man-shaped battling machines?

"We are willing to offer whatever we can afford for you to help us defending against these powerful enemies." Piji Nu sighed helplessly. "This time, we have already suffered a severe loss. We have to save our strength, otherwise..."

Emperor Shun nodded slowly. With a bright and strong voice, he gave his order. "Gather the army and prepare for the war...Send all newly incorporated warriors to the battlefield!"

Hao Tao pointed out his finger. Following his move, a fiery light rose into the sky and reached tens of thousands of miles high, then exploded. A dazzling sphere of fiery light covered the sky with a radius of nearly a million miles. Every human warrior in Liang Zhu City saw the fiery light.

Sonorous horns could be heard from every area of the city. Marquises and earls in the city roared passionately and gathered their troops.

Ji Hao split up the crowd, then came to Piji Nu and the other emperors. Emperor Shun was a kind and generous person, Si Wen Ming was too ashamed to mention some certain kinds of things, while the four former emperors were too scornful to do it. Therefore, as a young human being, Ji Hao was left to handle some 'dirty' things.

"This time, we will help you...Our humankind wants a half of all dark-kind slave warriors you have, and non-humankind slaves, ten for each slave warrior family. We also want twenty years of food rations for all these slave warriors and slaves. What do you think?" Ji Hao put forward his condition.

Only slaves and slave warriors, and a small amount of food, which was not even worth mentioning?

The twelve Yu Clan emperors glanced at each other and signed the agreement with Ji Hao right on the wall.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows, then picked up the agreement scroll, walked to Emperor Shun, and put it into his sleeve. Afterward, he began shouting and yelling as he led a group of Yao Mountain warriors and marched down the wall.

"Good kid...What a cheeky boy...You need to learn from him!" Emperor Xuanyuan laughed very loudly.

Chapter 1485: The World's Edict

When the first cannon fodder troop of dark-kind slave warriors and non-humankind warriors marched out of Liang Zhu City, all divine warriors and commanders guarding outside the city moved simultaneously.

They raised their long spears high, while the surrounding natural powers were activated and condensed into small tornados above their heads, drilling into their weapons.

Bright spell symbols flickered quickly on their long spears. Followed by deafening thunders, bowl-thick thunderbolts were released from their weapons, immediately drowning the non-humankind troop coming out of the city.

Some of the tens of thousands of dark-kind warriors and hundreds of thousands of non-humankind slaves were blown into ashes, while some had their chests ripped open. Some lost their limbs, lying on the ground while screaming in pain. A layer of earth was peeled off by the divine thunder, now covered in tens of thousands of differently sized hole.

Watching this, all human leaders and non-humankind leaders on the city wall gasped in shock. The divine army hadn't descended to the mortal world for many years. Today, with a small move, these divine warriors and commanders gave everyone on the scene a soul-deep shock.

They were powerful; they attacked fiercely, with especially neat and uniform moves, as if they all shared one mind. Looking at them, all the others' had their hearts sinking.

"Your Majesty!" Piji Nu shouted.

Deep and rumbling drums could be heard. The gates on the southern side of the city opened, from which, heavily armored human warriors marched out in perfectly ordered arrays. In the

air, the shrill screams of large fierce battle birds echoed through the clouds. These strong birds flapped their wings and carried up Eastern Wasteland archers, disappearing into the clouds.

Yi Di trod on the back of a giant eagle, holding his thunder-running bow as he whistled resoundingly. Hearing his whistle, countless Eastern Wasteland archers raised their bows and whistled sonorously as well. Their whistles mixed with the birds' screams and created a tense atmosphere.

Hundreds of thousands of metal plates dazzled deafeningly with electric lights as they silently rose into the sky. Standing on each plate was a Jia Clan warrior in heavy armor. They were holding all kinds of weapon, staring at the divine warriors and commanders outside the city with twisted faces.

All non-humankind warriors were so angry by now. Liang Zhu City was already miserable enough. Countless people had gone missing, and landlords that lived around the city were slaughtered. The heavy losses had been driving these Jia Clan warriors crazy and turning them into bloodthirsty beasts.

On the city wall, tens of judges under Hao Hao's lead carried up Red Lei and the other Sun and Moon Knights, who were still unconscious. Someone slapped them violently and tried to wake them up. Divine warriors and commanders suddenly showed up outside the city, which must have everything to do with the twelve of them. If Red Lei and his teammates could order them to put down their weapons and surrender, a cruel battle would be saved.

However, the twelve knights were frightened too badly, added with the fact that they suffered a brutal beating from Si Wen Ming and a group of prince earlier. The few judges tried their best, but the twelve remained unconscious, never showing a sign of waking up.

Ji Hao and hundreds of Yao Mountain warrior commanders marched out of the city. He activated the nine dragons chariot once

he stepped out of the city. A hundreds of meters wide fiery cloud carried up all Yao Mountain commanders and himself.

Yao Mountain warriors leaped up from the ground and landed on the fiery cloud. In the rolling cloud, wisps of blazing light condensed into red spell symbols, imprinting on their armors. This was a support system provided by the chariot, that all warriors under its owner's command would be protected by the magical essence sun fire on the fiery cloud.

Standing before the throne on top of the chariot, Ji Hao narrowed his eyes.

The power of the great Dao of sun descending from the East Emperor Taiyi filled up Ji Hao's entire body. He spread his arms and let extremely thin beams of golden light shine from his pores, merging with the warm light of the Pan Gu sun, which was rising from the east.

The great Dao of sun, which belonged to the East Emperor Taiyi, merged perfectly with the Pan Jia sun. Ji Hao's body glowed with a blinding light as he seemed to become the second sun in this world. The nine dragons chariot immediately sensed the great Dao power from Ji Hao. As a result, the enormous chariot gave a resonant buzz and suddenly came 'alive'.

The nine dragons drawing the chariot raised their heads and roared towards the sky.

From the chariot, rosy clouds rose and quickly shifted shapes in the sky, forming layers of flame-like spell symbols. Back in the ancient time, East Emperor Taiyi ruled the world and awed all living beings, and now, his majestic power burst from the nine dragons chariot again.

High up above the masses, Ji Hao was looking down at all creatures. The soul-level pressure, the terrifying waves of soul power spread out overwhelmingly like a tsunami.

On the ground, divine warriors and commanders had gathered and formed a giant battle formation already. But all of a sudden, a tremor went through their bodies. Over ten-thousand divine commanders and a million divine warriors were frozen. They raised their heads and looked at Ji Hao, who stood on the chariot, glowing with an eye-piercing golden light, surrounded by an immeasurably great natural reward power.

On this day, at this moment, the heaven had a new ruler!

Ji Hao inherited East Emperor Tayi's great Dao of sun and his supreme treasure, the nine dragons chariot. Additionally, he inherited East Emperor's majestic power. If this were all, these divine warriors and commanders would be awed at most, and wouldn't dare to attack him. But above all, Ji Hao made his contribution to the world, and had attained a tremendous natural reward power.

In this era of chaos, when the world had no ruler, Ji Hao met all conditions to be the East Emperor!

The East Emperor Taiyi was an ancient emperor created by the world itself. These divine warriors and commanders were also created by the world through the Divine Origin Pool, as guardians of the world's highest power. When the heaven was not ruled by anyone, and when the power of East Emperor Taiyi was seen again in the world, something that even Ji Hao never expected happened.

The dim light flickered quickly and intensely in the eyes of all divine warriors and commanders while they trembled intensely.

With an exotic magic treasure, Dishi Cha sealed their minds. But now, the seals were broken. Their eyes dazzled. Those lusterless, unfocused eyes were suddenly brightened up, as glittering as the stars in the night sky.

"Your Majesty!" Tsunami-like roars erupted from the chests of all divine warriors and commanders, whose minds were freed. They

agitated the natural powers and burst into thunderous shouts, kneeling under the nine dragon chariot in happiness.

Suddenly, the golden light of natural reward power surrounding Ji Hao's body flew out. The golden light and the purple mist twisted and interwove in front of him, while an indescribable natural will descended from the heaven. The Pan Gu sun released a splendid, even brighter golden light, which landed on the interweaving golden light and purple mist.

Ji Hao's natural reward power slowly condensed into a golden seal, shaped like a three-clawed Gold Crow with spread wings.

"Wo-w!" Having spent quite a lot of time with Ji Hao, Si Wen Ming had learned some strange words from him. At the moment, seeing Ji Hao's natural reward power condensing into a seal, Si Wen Ming exclaimed out loud. He didn't even know what else to say.

"The world's edict!" murmured Emperor Xuanyuan, "Good boy! The world admires him. He has succeeded East Emperor's throne!"

"Da-Damn!" In a long distance away, Wuzhi Qi, who gave the nine dragons chariot to Ji Hao, shouted out. His eyes nearly flew out of his sockets.

Chapter 1486: The Proud Ones, the Frustrated Ones

Above the sky, in an unfathomable place in the starry void, a purple mist had been flowing like water streams. Within the mist, beautiful cranes hovered leisurely, holding Ganoderma and spirit herbs with their beaks.

In the boundless purple mist was a virid mountain, covered in caves, with mist coiling up from them. Clearly, countless rare spirit herbs and plants were growing in them.

On top of the mountain was a towering old-growth tree. Large, crystalline, white flowers bloomed on its dragon-like twisted branches, while a refreshing aroma spread along the wind. Sniffing it, one would cool down, and the spirit and soul would both be comforted and settled.

Under the tree was an oddly shaped large stone, serving as a natural tea table, surrounded by three stone blocks. Sitting on the stone blocks were Spirit Wa, Donggong, and Ximu. Spirit Wa made the tea herself, pouring Donggong and Ximu each a cup of tea with a lovely green color.

When the will of the world merged with the golden light of the Pan Gu sun, condensing Ji Hao's natural reward power into a seal, Spirit Wa raised her pair of long and slim eyebrows. She then chuckled and said, "This kid, I've been paying close attention to him since he was born in Southern Wasteland. I thought, even though he is meant to be someone special, he would have to go through a very long period of time before that."

Slightly narrowing her almond eyes, Spirit Wa picked up her teacup, took a slight sip, and continued, "Unexpectedly, this kid grew so fast and reached such a high achievement. Succeeding to the throne of the East Emperor Taiyi? Good!"

Spirit Wa smiled glanced at Pan Gu Motherland, then said, "Wuzhi Qi, that monkey did a good job this time! I need to think about how to reward him when the disaster is overcome."

"Spirit Wa, is Wuzhi Qi under your guidance?" Hearing her, Donggong raised his eyebrows too and asked.

Spirit Wa again gave a faint smile. She didn't admit it, but neither did she deny. However, her mysterious smile seemed to give all the answers.

Ximu was shaking her head slowly. Slightly frowning, she emptied her teacup, then gave a muffled-thunder-like deep growl. Looking at Spirit Wa in confusion, she asked, "Spirit Wa, why did you pay attention to Ji Hao kid? Hundreds of millions of barbarian kids like him will be born in Southern Wasteland each year, isn't that right? Yet, you paid attention to him since he was born? You did have the spare time and mood, didn't you?"

Spirit Wa chuckled, but didn't explain. Fiddling with the exquisite teacup in her hands with her ten slim fingers, she turned to the west side of Pan Gu Motherland and said, "Back Then, brother Pan Gu created the world, and we guarded him. Brother Pan Gu didn't have to fall. Those two played dirty tricks in the darkness, don't I know that?"

"Pan Yu world people invaded. Except for us, only that silly Yu Yu truly fought against the invaders. Sadly, we hadn't recovered from the injuries yet. As for Yu Yu, hm, the one who stabbed him in the back and nearly killed him..." Spirit Wa stopped taking. Her ten fingers sparkled with a bright light, and the teacup held in her hands, as well as the tea contained in it, disappeared suddenly, but reappeared in the following moment.

"Donggong, Ximu," A long while later, Spirit Wa smiled and continued, "This time, we won't make a move until they beg us to. We honest people can't suffer the loss every time, can we? This time, they have to promise us enough benefits. Otherwise, their

Dao will no longer pass on in Pan Gu world."

Donggong and Ximu looked at Spirit Wa thoughtfully.

Spirit Wa chuckled and kept talking for a short while. Abruptly, she threw the teacup outside the purple mist. Her movements seemed to be easy and convenient.

A violent thunderbolt tore apart the starry void. Along with a shrilling noise, the teacup struck on the heaven, as heavily as a mountain.

Dishi Cha stood by the Divine Origin Pool, with a long-necked golden bottle held in his hand. He had been carefully pouring a dark, sticky liquid into the pool from the bottle. A nice aroma was emitted from the liquid. At that time, he heard the rumbling thunder suddenly, and sensed a terrifying power coming straight at him. Instinctively, he raised the golden bottle to defend himself against the teacup.

Followed by a thunderous bang, the golden bottle burst with layers of dazzling golden light and condensed into a strong defensive screen. The teacup sparkled brightly, then penetrated one-hundred and twenty thousand layers of golden defensive screens created by the bottle, shattering the bottle instantly. Thin cracks appeared on the teacup, but still, it remained tough as it crushed Dishi Cha's hands and landed on his chest.

A thick golden armor appeared on Dishi Cha's body. The teacup broke the armor and generated a shrill series of growls from Dishi Cha. Following his voice, the teacup penetrated his body and flew out from his back, leaving a human-head-sized hole in his body.

Vomiting blood, Dishi Cha thudded against the ground, twitching without being able to control his body anymore.

Above the sky, in the starry void, Donggong and Ximu looked at Spirit Wa in surprise. "Spirit Wa, why did you make a move yourself to deal with someone like that?"

Spirit Wa carelessly crooked her finger. A new teacup appeared in his hands as she smilingly raised her head, looked at the higher sky, and said, "For an unknown reason, I am in an especially good mood today. So...I beat someone for fun!"

In the Westernmost side of Pan Gu Motherland, above a barren mountain area in a silent space, which was surrounded by thick linden woods created with a great magic power, Priest Mu leaped up suddenly.

A clear light flew inside his eyes. Through the immeasurable space, he saw what happened outside Liang Zhu City.

"An Edict of the world? The throne of a divine emperor? Damnit! How can Ji Hao kid deserve a worlds' edict?" Priest Mu's never-changing bitter, wrinkled face twisted. A despairing power of quietus spread from him, dragging the entire silent space into a suffocating stillness.

Remaining silent for a long while, Priest Mu finally breathed out a steaming hot stream of air, and sat down slowly under the linden tree.

Not far away, sitting in front of him, Priest Hua suddenly opened his eyes and began talking slowly, "Brother, we have to depend on the humankind to develop our great sect. We need to merge the natural fortune of the humankind with our great Dao, upon which, we can control the world and rule nature. If we had attained the supreme results of Dao and become the rulers of Pan Gu world, how could Ji Hao kid ever be lucky enough to receive a worlds' edict?"

Priest Mu slowly nodded and said in a bland tone, "Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth did a good job this time. They broke into Liang Zhu City and saved countless human slaves. From now on, all those people are our pious disciples. They have also taken a large number of non-humankind beings captive, and killed countless non-humankind beings. I have already sensed that the

natural fortune belonging to our sect has enhanced further."

Showing a faint smile on his bitter face, Priest Mu continued slowly, "The great Dao is long, difficult to pursue. We can only walk step by step forward, with determination. The ocean of fire, the mountain of blades, the thorns, the poisonous snakes, we will step over them all."

Raising his head and looking in a certain direction above the sky, Priest Mu carried on, "We will kill anyone who dares to hinder us."

A bright five-colored glow emerged on Priest Hua's face. His voice suddenly changed as he cursed, "That kid Ji Hao is so annoying. How could he ever ascend to the divine throne? He really should die..."

Priest Hua giggled and narrowed his eyes at Priest Mu, as he said evilly and flirtingly, "Brother, how about you and me kill Ji Hao together? Hehe, you and me together, who should we be afraid of?"

Priest Mu's expression changed immediately, as he hurriedly gave a heavy slap on Priest Hua's forehead.

Chapter 1487: The Power of a Divine Emperor

Over ten-thousand divine commanders, and a million divine warriors, arrayed orderly under Ji Hao's nine dragons chariot.

In hundred neat square arrays, all divine commanders and warriors looked passionately at Ji Hao, who was standing on the chariot, holding the Gold Crow seal. They were creatures generated from the will of the world, and the meaning of their lives was — Following orders and discipline, fighting for the heaven.

In the current Pan Gu heaven, Ji Hao was the only divine emperor with an edict from the world itself.

Immediately, these divine commanders and warriors pledged all their loyalty and passion to Ji Hao. Under Ji Hao's order, they would go through the most dangerous area in the universe; under Ji Hao's order, they would even forget about themselves.

Divine warriors and commanders were the most terrifying war machines in Pan Gu world. Except for the instincts of following orders, they had nothing left but the will of fighting. They had no sense of fear, hunger, or tiredness. Under the will of the world, they would fight to the death!

Looking at this strong divine force, that even the word 'elite' was not enough to describe, Ji Hao was delighted, but also a little panicked. So suddenly, he had received an edict from the world. He had truly done quite a lot good things these years, hadn't he?

However, Ji Hao had no time to do much of thinking at the moment.

The moment he held the seal in his hands, he sensed the deepest, most original will of the entire Pan Gu world. The world was cheering for the emergence of a new divine emperor. The pure,

strong happiness soon occupied Ji Hao's mind and made him laugh with all of his heart.

The power of the Pan Jia sun inside Ji Hao's body had been rising ceaselessly, and so was its quality. It had been achieving the level of the Pan Gu sun.

The natural powers in Pan Gu world surged to Ji Hao and drilled into his body. He didn't need to make an effort to absorb the natural powers. The Pan Jia sun served like an enormous stove; it swallowed all natural powers, easily transformed them into the sun power, and stored them inside Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao spread his palm. Under his will, a wisp of golden sunlight flew into his palm and soon condensed into a golden liquid. Within the blink of an eye, the golden liquid became a fist-sized golden crystal.

A crystal condensed from the pure sun power! Sensing the scorching power contained the crystal, Ji Hao soon came up with tens of methods to create spell symbols and fire bombs for mass destruction.

A Jia Clan commander with four red eyes marched to Ji Hao, roaring in rage. Without saying a word to Ji Hao, he raised his giant hammer and smashed at the head of a golden-armored divine commander while yelling, "You damnable things! You killed my families!"

The moment this Jia Clan commander attacked, he died.

He was no stronger than an ordinary Magus King. Seeing these golden-armored divine commanders arrayed so obediently, he thought they wouldn't fight back anymore!

He didn't know that these divine commanders followed nothing but Ji Hao's orders.

The moment he swung down his hammer, the eyes of the golden-armored divine commander turned purely golden, completely

emotionless. The long spear held in the divine commander's hands penetrated the Jia Clan commander's chest, just as the latter raised his hammer. A shrill swishing noise was caused.

Surrounding the divine commander, another eight divine commanders moved simultaneously. Following the high-pitched swishing noises, eight long spears sank into the Jia Clan commander's body. As the nine divine commanders shook their wrists together, his body was torn apart.

The non-humankind army marching out of the city burst into raging growls!

Just now, they all saw these scary golden and silver armored warriors slaughter all landlords and their families around the city, piling their corpses up outside Liang Zhu City.

When these scary enemies suddenly kneeled and saluted to Ji Hao, non-humankind warriors had already suspected if Ji Hao, if the humankind had actually ordered these golden and silver armors to slaughter non-humankind landlords!

When a non-humankind warrior rushed up in fury and attempted to take revenge against these golden and silver armors for his families and was killed easily, all non-humankind warriors who witnessed the whole process were infuriated.

"This is a scheme! Damnit! This is a scheme of these lowly barbarians!" a Yu Clan commander, whose families all lived in a mansion outside the city, screamed in his family territory.

He pulled out his sword and shouted, "Kill these lowly barbarians! And, Marquis Yao Ji Hao is the planner of the whole thing!"

High up in the air, countless metal plates dazzled with eye-piercing electric light, diving down towards Ji Hao and the arrays down on the ground.

From the higher sky, Yi Di burst into resonant growls. Under his

order, groups of Eastern Wasteland archers and their fierce flying mounts encircled these Jia Clan warriors from all directions. Ji Hao was Yi Di's brother. He would never watch anyone bully Ji Hao, even though it now appeared that Ji Hao was the bully.

On the ground, non-humankind troops marched towards the divine arrays.

In the meanwhile, all marquises and earls who were friendly with Ji Hao gave their orders and sent out their troops against the non-humankind army. The human force and non-humankind force quickly interwove, as all swords were pulled out and all bows were pulled open. A cruel war was right on the verge of breaking out.

On the city wall, Piji Nu and the other Yu Dynasty emperors had been shouting and yelling at Emperor Shun. They could not understand why on earth did those fierce, brutal divine warriors suddenly become obedient rabbits the moment they saw Ji Hao.

Was this truly a scheme of the humankind? Did they send out an elite force to slaughter all non-humankind landlords around the city to weaken the non-humankind?

But, that elite force was from the heaven!

Piji Nu and the other eleven non-humankind emperors were so confused that they were even being driven crazy.

Ji Hao snorted coldly. Sensing the warm and intimate will of Pan Gu world, he slowly raised the seal held in his hands.

Three-hundred miles away, above a ten-miles-tall mountain, a strange sparkle emerged. Next, a human-head-sized golden thunder bomb appeared in the sky. Quietly, the small golden thunder bomb landed on the mountaintop at lightning speed.

An earth-shaking boom was generated. The ground quaked intensely, and the ten-miles-tall mountain disappeared instantaneously, amidst the blinding golden light.

A golden mushroom cloud rose, expanding slowly in the air.

Visibly, a golden impact wave spread in all directions, reaching to Liang Zhu City within the span of a couple of breaths. It raised a hurricane and swept across the ground, peeling off a half-foot-thick layer of earth.

Swoosh! When the impact wave brushed across the bodies of the twelve emperors, they were completely suffocated.

Ji Hao silently raised his hand. Following his move, thirty-six-thousand golden thunder bombs appeared in the sky, above Liang Zhu City!

All non-humankind beings immediately stopped shouting and yelling, but stared at all thunder bombs condensed from the golden essence sun fire in a blue funk.

"Do I need a scheme?" Ji Hao dropped his hand and asked the twelve emperors calmly. "Wake up Red Lei and his teammates. Let's get the answers!"

Chapter 1488: They Only Follow Strength

Threatened by Ji Hao's golden sun thunder bombs, all non-humankind being shut their mouths. After that, Ji Hao released one hundred thousand half-dragon warriors and a million blood pool ghosts.

Fierce-looking half-dragon warriors growled rumblingly as they released a strong power vibration, and caused a heavy pressure to shake the hearts of nearly everyone on the scene. Blood pool ghosts had hazy figures like real ghosts. They flickered through the air, giving people a sharp coldness with their frosty eyes.

Every half-dragon warrior was as strong as a high-level Divine Magus, while a blood-pool ghosts were as powerful as high-level Magus Kings.

They arrayed neatly beside the divine commanders in golden armors and divine warriors in silver armors. Seeing them, not only were the non-humankind beings shocked, the expressions of quite some marquises and earls turned strange as well.

Yao Mountain territory rose way less than a hundred years ago, but unknowingly, the force under Ji Hao's direct command had improved to such a terrifying level, hadn't it? Not to mention those divine warriors and commanders from the heaven, which ordinary human clan could ever afford one-hundred-thousand high-Divine-Magus-level half-dragon warriors? Furthermore, it was all added with Ji Hao's ridiculously great individual power. As a true Supreme Magus, his spirit star was actually a natural sun, which was thousands of times more powerful than any natural star in the world. In addition to that, Ji Hao's father, Ji Xia, had inherited the legacy from an ancestor, and could become a true Supreme Magus at any moment!

With two Supreme-level powerful beings, Ji Hao's Yao Mountain territory would still be slightly weaker than super families like the

You Xiong Family, but it was already strong enough to be listed as a top-grade human clan.

Especially worth mentioning was the fact that Ji Hao received a world's edict. Same as Emperor Fuxi, he had actually become a divine emperor, from a human being. Based on this fact, the future of Yao Mountain territory was hard to predict, even to super families like the You Xiong Family and the High Cloud Family.

Treading on a fiery cloud, Ji Hao flew to the wall of Liang Zhu City and politely bowed to Emperor Shun and the other human leaders. Emperor Shun and the other four emperors hurriedly bowed back to him, as they were on equal footing now. As human emperors, they needed to carefully follow every etiquette. Even though Ji Hao was a young human being, since he succeeded to the divine throne, he had to be respected as a divine emperor.

But when Ji Hao bowed to Si Wen Ming, Si Wen Ming laughed out loud and punched on his chest.

They grinned at each other, just like before.

Emperor Shun grinned as well. At one tme, human emperors and divine emperors never stood on the same side, and intense conflicts happened frequently. Now, as a new divine emperor, Ji Hao had such a friendly relationship with Si Wen Ming, the next human emperor cut and dried. To the entire humankind, to the whole world...this was terrific.

An old Maguspriest took out some mugwort, which had been soaked in the spirit blood of a hundred types of poisonous creatures for countless years. He rubbed the mugwort into a ball, and sprayed a handful of powdered scorpions, spiders, centipedes and other poisonous bugs, then set fire to it. Dense black smoke rose from the mugwort ball and drilled into Red Mei's nostrils like living creatures.

Red Lei instantly made a sky-shaking sneeze, and couldn't stop sneezing after that. Because of the intense sneezing, his body was

shaking, and his broken bones rubbed against each other, causing him a great pain that made him howl.

Ji Hao brought a few golden armored divine commanders onto the city wall. They looked down at Red Lei with cold faces. They were divine commanders, generated from the will of Pan Gu world. They were guardians of the natural laws, executors of the power of this world.

Earlier, their minds were sealed by Dishi Cha with an exotic treasure. Back then, they followed Dishi Cha and his people' order uncontrollably, but remembered everything they had done.

Specifically, they were not only the strongest war machines in this world, but also perfect recorders. Their skins, their hair, every cell of their bodies would keep a full record of every single thing they had been through. With a special divine magic, their memories could be pulled up by the heaven leaders to be analyzed, so that the leaders could make plans based on their experiences.

Even when they couldn't control their bodies and were forced to be under the wrong people's orders, their bodies had been instinctively recording all their experiences.

Under the powers of the natural will and the divine seal, the strong minds of these divine commanders and warriors broke the seals cast by Dishi Cha with the exotic treasure, freeing themselves. Afterward, they quickly looked back at the memories of their bodies and figured out the whole thing.

They glared at Red Lei in anger, staring at this unforgivable evil being, who dared to fake divine orders and control divine force.

At this point, Red Lei finally woke up. Before he clearly saw the things in the surroundingss, he had his eyes on the few divine commanders in golden armors, who stared at him in a cold, unfriendly way. Without much thinking, he yelled out, "You slaves, did you take out those people? Did you drive them away? Scums! Why don't you come help me? Don't you see that I'm

injured? Dishi Cha is an idiot! Our Master gave him the 'spirit-confusing bottle', yet he used it to control you stupid things!"

The divine commanders remained motionless, but all surrounding leaders from both sides burst into loud shouts together.

Dishi Cha! It was him! He controlled the Divine Origin Pool and turned all divine beings from it into his tools.

"Piji Nu, and the other emperors, you all heard him. Regarding the fact that these divine warriors slaughtered the non-humankind landlords, Dishi Cha, one of your people, is the one to blame. And the one behind him is that so-called 'Blood Crown' you've mentioned before." Ji Hao looked at the twelve emperors' angry faces calmly and said.

"Therefore, I reject all your accusations towards these divine warriors. They didn't want to slaughter your people, and neither is this a scheme of our humankind." Ji Hao nodded to them smilingly and said, "Now, this is clear. I hope you can restrain your members. Don't do any stupid things to hurt your own people and please your enemies."

Piji Nu and the other emperors were lost in their thoughts. But, Yemo Luoye couldn't bear watching Ji Hao's proud face. She sneered and said, "No matter what, these so-called divine warriors have indeed killed many of our innocent people. Even if they're only weapons, they should be destroyed, shouldn't they?"

Yemo Luoye curved her lips upwards and looked at Ji Hao. Ji Hao humiliated her many times, and now, she attempted to cause him some trouble.

"Many... of your... innocent... people?" Ji Hao dropped his face. That face of his gradually turned cold and serious. He took two steps towards Yemo Luoye, put his mouth near her face, and responded with a frosty voice, word by word, "You... Are you saying that your people are innocent? If so, how will you clear the

debt for so many human beings you have killed and enslaved all these years?"

"Perhaps, I should kill you right now and destroy all your weapons, shouldn't I?"

A dreadful sense of power entangled Yemo Luoye's soul like countless poisonous snakes. Her face paled, as she took a quick series of step backward instinctively.

At this very moment, she did not even dare to straighten her body in front of Ji Hao.

Chapter 1489: Passionate Dragons and Phoenixes

Ji Hao approached Yemo Luoye step by step. Facing him, her beautiful face was awfully pasty. She looked at him in fear, sensing the suffocating pressure from him, which was nearly crushing her soul. Eventually, she lowered her proud head.

"Dear Lord Ji Hao, I am deeply sorry. I believe, under your leadership, these brave and strong heaven warriors will become our most loyal, most reliable friends." Yemo Xiu hurriedly stepped out and gave a large fake smile, trying to ease the tension.

Meanwhile, she threw an unpleasant glance at Yemo Luoye. How dare she offend Ji Hao under such a terrible situation?

Ji Hao laughed and stopped threatening Yemo Luoye. He ran a quick discussion with Emperor Shun and the other human leaders, after which, a series of orders were given.

Thirty-thousand half-dragon warriors served as the guards. Treading on a blood-red cloud, they rose straight to the sky. About ten-thousand golden-armored divine commanders led a million divine warriors and followed behind them, raising dense and warm clouds. The warm clouds neutralized a large part of the fierce vibe created by the blood-red cloud, at least keeping the ordinary human beings down below from being frightened by the scary blood-red clouds in the air, while the army flew over the Pan Gu Motherland.

Ji Hao led an enormous army, composed by elites from Yao Mountain territory, Eastern Wasteland archers under Yi Di's commands, Water-kind forces led by Yuan Li, shrimp and crab warriors led by Shermie, and brave warriors from the west.

As the main force, this army was guarded by seventy thousand half-dragon warriors distributed on both sides, and a million blood

pool ghosts behind them. The formidable army raised dense clouds that extended for thousands of miles, while approaching the core area of Pan Gu Motherland speedily, towards the old location of Buzhou Mountain.

The front gate of the heaven was right above Buzhou Mountain. Ji Hao prepared to break into the heaven with his army through the front gate. The heaven belonged to Pan Gu world, and any uninvited evil guest should just disappear!

Ji Hao led the army and marched towards the heaven. The twelve Yu Dynasty emperors didn't say a word about this, as if nothing was happening at all.

At the moment, they only wished Ji Hao could raise an even stronger army, and the alliance of human clans could be more powerful.

The formidable army flew upon the clouds and traveled far away from Liang Zhu City and Pu Ban City. On this particular day, when the army flew across the sky above a large lake, giant waves were suddenly raised.

Miles thick water columns rose from the lake, straight into the sky, looking like crystal pillars. A large group of water-kind warriors in luxurious armors stood on each water column.

Compared to the water-kind creatures under Gong Gong's command, this great water-kind force was strong-looking and perfectly ordered. Clearly, this was a well-trained elite force. What was especially surprising was the sense of power released from these water-kind warriors, which was pure and strong, even delivering a faint trace of majesty that belonged to true dragons.

Gong Gong's water-kind army had aggressive spirit creature power, but this water-kind force, which blocked Ji Hao's way, seemed to be no weaker than the one million divine warriors under Ji Hao's command.

In Pan Gu world, only the dragon-kind could raise an army like this.

In Pan Gu world, only the dragon kind was wealthy enough to equip their warriors with such high-quality armors and weapons.

A whole hundred brightly glowing, pure alloy flying forts rose from the lake. Each flying fort was embossed with the ferocious-looking portraits of the nine legendary descendants of the dragon ancestor. All embossments were exquisitely carved, pure golden, and dazzling under the sunshine while seeming fairly lifelike.

A whole hundred flying forts produced by the non-humankind! Judging by the embossments, these forts were obviously customized!

The dragon-kind was indeed super rich, and Yu Clan nobles indeed dared to sell anything. Ji Hao scanned through these forts with his spirit power. Judging by the strong power vibrations detected from each fort, these forts were at least thirty-percent stronger than the standard ones used by the regular Yu Clan armies!

The weapons they sold to their enemies were actually thirty-percent stronger than the ones used by their own armies! Did those Yu Clan nobles feed their moral principles to wild dogs?

Four elderly dragons flew out from a flying fort. Their senses of powers were prehistorical, and their horns were covered in scars and speckles. One of them, whose scales had a colorful luster, laughed out loud and said, "Where is Emperor Ji Hao? I heard from the boys in our family that Emperor Ji Hao is retrieving the sacred heaven, which has been stained by the Gong Gong Family. As the strongest species in Pan Gu world, we will surely do all we can to help!"

The four elderly dragons, who seemed to be countless years old, and were certainly as powerful as Supreme Magi, flashed across the space. Their ridiculously strong muscles cracked the space, and

brought them to before Ji Hao's face.

Such a violent way of moving. Among over a million elites marching before Ji Hao, no one managed to stop the four elderly dragons timely. They showed up before the nine dragons chariot grinningly, as if they had done nothing inappropriate.

The dragon with five-colored scales slapped his chest loudly and yelled, "Emperor Hao, don't you worry. With our dragon warriors as your spearhead, retrieving the heaven will be as easy as batting my eye. Emperor Hao, you don't even have to do it yourself, so your hands won't be stained!"

The old dragon narrowed his eyes as he looked at Ji Hao and laughed, "But, we heard that in the sacred heaven, except for the divine water army, four water gods existed. Haha, reasonably, the one leading them should be a divine emperor who is familiar with the water power...Hehe!"

The four old dragons fixed their eyes on Ji Hao, without saying another word.

Ji Hao suddenly figured this out. During the never-ending wars between the humankind and the non-humankind, the dragon-kind had only sent out some of their younger generations to help. When human beings risked their lives and fought the disastrous flood, these dragons simply hid in their nests, without making a move. That time, when the non-humankind brought their entire military force to Chi Ban Mountain, the dragon-kind sent no one but Ao Hao, a nearly banished, muddlehead dragon king.

However, when Ji Hao received an edict from the world based on his natural reward power and became a divine emperor, preparing to retrieve the heaven with his army, these dragons showed up. Were they trying to create a divine dragon emperor?

Before Ji Hao figured out how to deal with these dragons, the sky in the east turned rosy. Upon dense fiery clouds, tens of thousands of enormous phenixes, Luan birds, swans, peacocks, rocs, and all

the other strong bird, flew over in formidable arrays.

The four golden and shiny phoenixes leading this flying army began talking in chorus.

"Emperor Hao, please hold for a second. Hearing that Emperor Hao is guarding the natural laws and retrieving the heaven, we phoenix-kind came all the way here to help. This time, we will fight as your spearhead, and you shall have no worry!"

Ji Hao was angry, but he could only laugh due to his anger.

Chapter 1490: Three Emperors Swallowed Two Species

On the nine dragons chariot, Ji Hao smilingly sat on the throne.

Four ancient dragon gods, who, according to the legends, had fallen many years ago, and four ancient phoenix gods, who, according to the stories, had reincarnated in the endless raging fire, sat straight on large fiery armchairs as they stared at each other. They all knew each other; they were all old friends.

They came to Ji Hao, coincidently together. In front of each other, they didn't know how to ask Ji Hao any actual question that they were concerned about. At first, they stared at the familiar faces of each other, and later on, one of them started talking. Soon after that, the atmosphere on the chariot turned tenser and tenser.

Ji Hao remained silent while the four dragon gods and the four phoenix gods laughed at and attacked each other in speech.

"Old dragon head, I heard that you died of old age. I even shed three drops of tears for you. Hah, we've been friends forever, but you faked your death...Our friendship is worth no more than three drops of tears of mine!"

"Old feather, you make yourself sound like someone who actually treasures friendships. Didn't you reincarnate long ago? Didn't you go through the nirvana of a phoenix, didn't you become an egg? Didn't you lose all your memories? Yet, you still remember me. Should I be so touched and give three drops of tears back to you?"

"Ah, ah, you old scum, we need to clear our debt!"

"Yeah, let's clear it. How? With blades? With fists? We dragon men never fear! Not to mention the fact that we're facing you bunch of phoenix girls!"

"What did you say? Old scum, how dare you insult us?"

"I insulted you, so what? We brothers will insult you together, so what? Don't you like it? Come beat us then, will you? Haha, I'll fight you with one hand. I'll slap you back to a bird egg, do you believe it?"

"You old wicked creatures, we will pull off your scales and turn you into dead pond loaches! Do you believe that?"

"Eh? Can you phoenix girls do that? Come one, come on, we are right here. You four old feathers, come on, do it, come on! We're not scared of you!"

The eight rude ancient creatures started a verbal war. Behind Ji Hao's army, the atmosphere between the dragon-kind army and phoenix-kind army grew tense as well.

The birds flying high in the sky naturally had an opposite relation with the water-kind creatures living in the water. For example, many birds fed on shrimps and fishes, and rocs, peacocks, and other fierce birds even fed on flood dragons, boas, and other scaled water-kind creatures.

The opposite relation naturally existed between low-grade creatures from these two broad kinds. By the time these creatures grew to a certain level and attained the great powers and human-level wits, the natural opposition would cause countless conflicts between them.

Suppressed by the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, even though small conflicts had never stopped bursting between birds and water-kind creatures, real wars rarely happened. But today, as team leaders, the eight ancient creatures started such an intense verbal battle, hearing which, the warriors from both sides, who always hated each other, surely began cursing each other with passion.

Soon, the bad language turned into personal abuse. Dirty words could be heard from everywhere like a storm. Some cruel and mean words even stunned the 'richly experienced' human

warriors.

Stroking the pair of fire dragons coiled on his arms, Ji Hao sent wisps of essence sun fire into their bodies, which slowly improved their original souls and strengthened their original powers. The louder the eight ancient creatures cursed each other, the higher Ji Hao raised his eyebrows, and the more he wanted to laugh.

'You were so proud, so arrogant! You acted like you were above the masses!' Thought Ji Hao.

The humankind, dragon-kind, and phoenix-kind shared the same origin. When the non-humankind invaded Pan Gu world, under pressure, the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind deployed their elites and joined the war. But, in the countless years afterward, the alliance of humankind had been taking all the pressure from the non-humankind, virtually alone.

Dragons and phoenixes stayed far away from all worldly affairs. They watched countless elite human warriors die in battles, witnessed generations of human beings being crushed for the future of human bloodline, but remained unmoved.

Even worse, they had constantly been making requirements to extort the humankind. Every time they sent a small troop to help the humankind, they would act like they were saving the world, and would seize the chance to make the most out of the humankind.

During the past countless years, dragons and phoenixes had squeezed giant profits from the humankind.

Ji Hao smilingly looked at these eight angry ancient creatures and remained silent.

Abruptly, the old dragon with five-colored scales burst into a raging growl and slapped his fiery armchair into pieces, then leaped up. Eyes filled with an intent of killing, he gave a twisted grin to the phoenix in front of him and said, "We all know what we

are here for! Hah, cut the crap. Let's decide with our strength! Let's see who will become the future leader of Pan Gu world!"

Two ancient phoenixes and two ancient dragons stood up, each pulling out a staff made from ancient Fuso tree hearts. Dazzling fires suddenly erupted from their bodies. The fire burning on the bodies of the two female phoenixes was golden in color. That was the purest true phoenix fire, which could destroy, and could also regenerate everything in the world.

The fire burning on the bodies of the two male dragons was vividly red, looking like melting glass. That was the divine Nanming fire, the purest, strongest fire in the world, the natural enemy of all evils. Its largest power was turning everything back to its purest state, tracing back to the origin.

In other words, the divine Nanming fire was the strongest purifying fire in the world. In mere terms of lethality, it was much stronger than the phoenix true fire.

Seeing a real battle was about to break out, Ji Hao coughed loudly and said, "Eight, eight elders, cool down, cool down. What are we doing? What are we doing here? What, are we doing? You're all friends, old friends. Why will you fight each other? Cool down, just cool down."

Ji Hao chuckled and evilly buried a needle in the hearts of each of them by saying, "Ao Li and Feng Qinxin, they already had a baby! You're families...Don't always shout that you'll kill each other. Think about the young ones!"

All eight of them were stunned.

Ao Li? Feng Qinxin? The ninth son of the current Dragon Emperor? The youngest phoenix princess?

They had a baby? When? Why didn't they know? What happened? What was going on? The dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind intermarrying with each other? What a joke! Without the

permission of elders like them, which young dragon or phoenix dared to marry an enemy?

Ji Hao didn't care what these ancient creatures were thinking. Slowly, he continued speaking, "I know why you are here. So, I will be generous. After all, I am now the only divine emperor in Pan Gu world, so my words should be effective."

"I have decided that I will earn your full support to the humankind with the thrones of three divine emperors!"

The eight ancient creatures' expressions changed again. Three thrones? But how should they split it?

They threw a threatening glance at each other, 'It's all these four old things' fault!'

Chapter 1491: A Sacred Contract

Ji Hao patted on Mr. Crow's back. Mr. Crow had absorbed a large amount of essence sun fire, and had learned a small part of the great Dao of sun. As he gave a resonant shout, his luxurious golden feather blazed into fist-sized fire flakes and fell off from his body, drifting before Ji Hao's face.

Ji Hao pointed out his finger. The pair of fire dragons coiled on his arms roared in chorus. Their strong and scorching golden scales fell off and shattered into the tiniest grains of ash, condensing into extremely thin beams of golden light.

The feather-shaped fire flakes gradually quieted down and wove into a three-meters and two-feet-long, six-feet wide scroll.

The golden light beams transformed from dragon scales floated in the air. Ji Hao bit his tongue broken and sprayed a golden stream of spirit blood, filled with a strong sense of natural will and natural reward power, merging into the golden light.

The extremely thin beam of golden light landed on the scroll. Clear, straight ancient divine characters appeared on the scroll one after another and released a majestic sense of power. Strong gusts of wind were raised, blowing crazily around the nine dragons chariot.

The sky became weird, as golden clouds flew like running horses. The sky was split into two, a half that was brightly sunny, while the other half was raining heavily. Sonorous howls echoed through the sky. Those sounds were the roars of the surrounding mountains and earth, sounding like the growls of human beings.

According to the legend, the ancient saint Cangjie created the characters, which were currently used by the humankind, based on the divine characters, created by the world itself. Once Cangjie created the characters, the world quaked, as all ghosts and gods cried. Back then, all living beings understood that from that

moment on, the humankind was freed from the confused, uncultured state, and had stepped into the civilized era.

Earning a chance to record and pass on the culture, human beings became the true owners of the natural fortune, the main characters of this world.

The characters Ji Hao was using now were created by nature when the first generation of divine gods was created. These divine characters were immemorial and complicated, and every single one of them contained infinite mystery. Ancient human beings could not understand these divine characters, neither could their souls withstand the pressure given off by them. Therefore, human beings weren't able to use these divine characters.

Every single divine character was corresponding with a natural law, connected with a star and an earth meridian. This divine set of characters was the most original, powerful, and magical writing system in Pan Gu world. Each character was a natural spell symbol, that could deliver an unpredictable, immeasurable power.

When Ji Hao's natural reward power condensed into a seal, this set of ancient divine characters was imprinted deep in his soul. This was a gift from the world, a benefit of being a divine emperor. If that didn't happen, Ji Hao wouldn't be able to read these divine characters, which were so immemorial that even the Magi Palace had the handwritten copies of no more than fifty of these characters in their collection, neither would he be able to write this contract on the scroll with these characters.

The eight ancient beings, who had been staring at each other with daggers drawn, now curiously walked to Ji Hao and carefully looked at the golden characters left on the scroll by him.

By taking one quick glimpse at the scroll, the eyes of the relatively weaker two dragon gods and two phoenix gods turned slightly bloodshot, while a tremor went through their bodies.

Ji Hao kept writing, leaving more and more characters on the

scroll. The contents of the contract got longer and longer, more and more complicated, and the majestic natural power released from it grew more and more tremendous.

Among all the eight ancient beings, only the dragon god with five-colored scales and a beautiful phoenix lady, who looked about thirty years old, had still been staring at the scroll, as if they had no strange feeling at all. The other six of them all turned their heads around with difficulty, forcing themselves to swallow the mouthful of blood which had surged up to their throats.

They weren't divine gods acknowledged by the world. They were strong, both in their bodies and souls. But still, they couldn't take too much pressure from these divine characters.

The dragon god with five colored scales withstood the pressure because his physical body was way too strong. Even though his soul had been suffering all the time, his thriving spirit blood was constantly healing the soul and replenishing it. Therefore, he could take it.

The beautify phoenix lady endured the pressure because her soul was extraordinarily powerful. Her original soul was unimaginably strong, and her soul power was as vast as a sea. Therefore, even if the divine characters stirred her souls intensely, her unbound soul swallowed the wild strike with ease.

Through different ways, these two supremely powerful beings witnessed the whole writing process performed by Ji Hao.

When Ji Hao finished the last character, he sighed slightly, raised his head, and smiled to the dragon and the phoenix, "Have you seen it clearly? I didn't play any tricks, and this contract is fair and reasonable. As long as you agree, the dragon-kind and the phoenix will each ascend to one throne of divine emperor now."

"I am Ao Gu!" The dragon god with five-colored scales looked at Ji Hao seriously and gave his name.

"I am Feng Ling!" The beautiful phoenix lady also glanced at Ji Hao with a serious look and gave her name.

To these elderly beings, their pride was even more important than their lives. As they gave their names to Ji Hao, a young human being, they admitted that he was qualified to be on an equal footing with themselves, and negotiate with them.

Ji Hao's conditions had been written clearly on the large scroll.

A contract of the world, the fairest way to sign a contract since the era of the ancient heaven...

Signing a contract under the witness of the world was more than a thousand times more reliable than making a blood swear or any other type of contract or agreement. Anyone who violated a contract like this would be hunted by Pan Gu world with all of its power. Unless one could destroy the great Dao of Pan Gu world, one should never, ever violate a contract of the world.

Ji Hao's conditions were simple. He required the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind to each send out an elite force, composed of their pure-blooded members, to be under Ji Hao, a new divine emperor's command forever. As long as Ji Hao was satisfied by the number and quality of warriors of these two forces, he would make the decision. Based upon that, the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind would each have a throne in the heaven in the future.

As for the third throne, Ji Hao would give it to the most supportive one of them.

Dragons or phoenixes, whoever supported Ji Hao the most, provided him with the strongest army and the most resources, would have the third throne that Ji Hao promised.

Ji Hao swore that he would use the forces provided by the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind appropriately, to strive for the highest achievements on the battleground against invaders.

Once everything was settled, Ji Hao would communicate with

the world with his privilege of a divine emperor and let the world descend the edicts, forging new seals and promoting new divine emperors.

But of course, Ji Hao made it very clear — The natural reward power for forging the divine seals had to be provided by the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind themselves!

In other words, dragons and phoenixes must contribute as much as they needed to in the coming great wars, to earn enough natural rewards and to actually ascend to the thrones.

"Now, elders, I have just ascended to the throne, and I am in desperate need of helpers. How many people are you preparing to send out to support me?"

Chapter 1492: The Right to Bargain

Ao Gu and Feng Ling didn't respond.

They almost laid their cheeks against the scroll while they carefully studied every single word and character written down by Ji Hao, and discussing if any sentence would possibly contain a hidden disadvantageous clause that might injure their interests.

Nevertheless, the divine characters were magical, created by the world under its own will. As long as one's soul was powerful enough to take all the pressure given by the vast, mysterious natural power, one would be able to penetrate every single character with one glimpse.

Having studied for a long while, Ao Gu and Feng Ling finally nodded. They raised their heads and glanced at each other.

Ji Hao remained silent, holding his hands behind his body while quietly looking at Ao Gu and Feng Ling. He tried his best to make the conditions in the contract be as beneficial to the humankind and himself as possible. For facing the 'Blood Crown', who would soon arrive in this world, wiping out all non-humankind invaders, and even ensuring Si Wen Ming's throne after the coming great war, Ji Hao had considered it all.

Strength and power were always needed. Currently, Ji Hao had attained a mentionable individual strength, but he still needed an even greater power to face all possible dangerous situations that might occur in the future.

The dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind hankered after the divine thrones and came to Ji Hao. For what they wanted, they had to pay a certain price. They had always been aggressive to the humankind, and were used to taking benefits from them. But this time, they wouldn't be able to take any advantage out of Ji Hao.

They had to pay an actual price to earn an equal result. If Ji Hao

were satisfied by what they provided, divine emperors from the humankind, the dragon-kind, the phoenix-kind, or even from other species, would have no different meaning to the humankind.

Therefore, the conditions he put forward were fairly clear, without any trap. This was the fairest, brightest, most selfless contract that Ji Hao had ever drafted in his life.

"The conditions are simple and clear." Ao Gu flicked his fingers on the scroll and looked at Ji Hao, saying slowly, "But, I don't quite feel the same way."

"This is clear." Feng Ling sounded just like Ao Gu. She shook his head at Ji Hao with an interrogatory look, and the special pride and scorn that belonged only to ancient creatures like herself, as she continued, "But, I don't understand, Emperor Hao. Why do you think you can bargain for conditions with us?"

With a dark face, Ao Gu said, "Emperor Hao, even though you have luckily received a natural edict and become the only divine emperor in the current world, in the end, you are nothing but a human marquis. Your territory is small, your people are poor, your military force is weak. You are weak, with no strong supporters... How dare you extort us like this?" While he was talking, an indescribably fierce sense of power silently pressed down on Ji Hao like the surging undercurrents in a bottomless ocean deep.

"Ao Gu, don't be angry. He's a child. He doesn't know how to behave properly yet." Feng Ling said while slightly shaking her head, "Emperor Hao, why don't we make some changes in these conditions? Such as, you will be the central divine emperor, while we take the rest four thrones?"

Feng Ling smiled, then warmly pulled a sleeve of Ji Hao's long shirt, which was made from a coarse cloth. She gently flattened a few wrinkles on it while continuing, "You shall not put forward any other condition either. We, the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, will help you to seize the throne, and in return, you

communicate with the world and bring us the natural edicts to promote our people to the new divine emperors. How about that?"

Ji Hao looked at Ao Gu and Feng Ling, not knowing what to say.

They were the one who bared the road, but why were they accusing Ji Hao of extortion now?

Besides, the meaning of Feng Ling's words was pretty clear — 'Kid, you're not strong enough. If you don't do exactly what we said, you should be careful, because you might lose your throne.'

Back in the ancient era, ambitions dragon emperors and phoenix emperor did emerge. They led their army and marched to the sky, challenging the heaven. As descendants of Pan Gu, with their natural given powers and abilities, they never fell into a disadvantage when fighting against the heaven. On the contrary, they had gained small advantages several times.

Their previous achievements built their pride and arrogance.

They didn't even take the real ancient divine emperors seriously, not to mention Ji Hao, a young human being who luckily ascended to the throne...They were willing to run an equal communication with him, which was already the greatest respect they could show to him. But, how dare he put forward conditions?

Ji Hao gave a bitter grin and said, "Elders, you made me a little speechless. You're not..."

Ji Hao's polite tone suddenly changed, while the grin faded on his face. Fiercely and blandly, he continued, "You're not thinking about hurting me, are you? Elders, haven't you been thinking too much? Aren't you taking this as too easy a thing?"

The other six powerful dragons and phoenixes, who were forced to turn around their heads by the divine characters, looked at Ji Hao simultaneously. Eight powerful beings surrounded Ji Hao, and snorted scornfully and coldly.

The other beautiful phoenix lady pointed at the scroll in Ji Hao's

hands and said in a frosty tone, "Ji Hao kid, we respected you, but you shouldn't push it. Destroy this contract and do what we said, then we will help you to ensure your throne. Otherwise..."

"Otherwise, your grandpa Ao Ku will let you know why the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind ruled the world back in the ancient time, while human beings could only cry under our feet!" Standing behind Ao Gu, another old dragon said with a weird tone.

Licking his mouth corner, Ao Ku continued proudly, "You don't want to watch your grandpa Ao Ku chop off your father's head, do you? You don't want to watch your father cry and scream in my arms either, do you? Hehe, I wonder if you have kids. If you do, your grandpa Ao Ku likes little human beings too!"

Ao Gu smilingly shook his head and interrupted Ao Ku, "Alright, alright, you're an ancestor now. Don't scare children with your follies of youth."

Ao Gu smiled and looked at Ji Hao, then sighed, "Emperor Hao... Ji Hao kid, you aren't qualified to bargain with us. So, you should better listen to us, like the old lady Feng Ling said. Hehe, phoenixes are more or less softhearted, but we, dragons, for the result we want, we won't be afraid to do anything."

Ao Ku laughed out loud. Looked around, he abruptly saw Shaosi on the nine dragons chariot.

Pointing at her, he laughed, "Ji Hao kid, this girl had your smell! Is she your woman? Haha, if don't do what we said... Haha, I will now give you a fantastic show!"

Ao Gu laughed aloud too, and so did the other two ancient dragons.

"Pah!" Feng Ling and the other three powerful phoenixes slightly curved down their lips.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, then grinned and responded, "The qualification to bargain? Is this enough?"

The Pan Gu bell suddenly appeared in Ji Hao's hands. He raised the bell and smashed it on Ao Ku's head.

Along with a thunderous howl which vibrated the air and forced the million warriors surrounding the nine dragons chariot to fly up, a big half of Ao Ku's head was crushed. He fell from above the clouds while crying and created a giant hole in the ground.

Chapter 1493: Failed to Negotiate

His horns were shattered along with a big half of his head. Boiling hot dragon blood spurted out like a fountain. Suffering the unbreakable pain, Ao Ku screamed uncontrollably and showed his original figure in the ten-miles-wide hole on the ground.

He was a thousand miles long dragon, with a body covered with purely black scales. A strangely brutal and fierce power could be sensed from every scale of his.

He was an evil dragon. Back in the ancient era, he used to be a disaster to human beings. He flooded human territories and slaughtered human beings for fun. He liked to grind his teeth with human bones and fulfill his appetite with human blood.

Ji Hao gave Ao Ku a deep gaze. This damnable old creature, he had actually imprisoned the souls of all human beings who were killed or eaten by him in his scales with an extremely dark secret magic. Every scale of his was a giant prison, with tens of millions of human souls kept in it!

How many scales did a thousand-mile-long dragon have? Tens of millions of souls were imprisoned in his every scale, then how many human beings had this evil creature killed in total? From this long distance away, Ji Hao heard the despairing screams of countless human souls, from his body.

"Do you, want to die?" Ji Hao showed a ferocious look while staring straight at Ao Gu, Feng Ling, and the other elderly dragons and phoenixes, said, "You, the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, do you want to die?"

Ao Ku was thrown to the ground by Ji Hao with the Pan Gu bell without any resistance. By now, he was lying on the ground, screaming in pain. He tried but failed to struggle back up. Ao Gu and Feng Ling were both stunned. They couldn't believe their eyes.

Ao Ku was a powerful dragon, as strong as Supreme Magi. Relying on their strong physical bodies, dragons had no fear of any living being in Pan Gu world. Their scales were natural armors, and their muscles were unbreakable. They could fight any enemy by rushing up against the enemies' attacks, then destroying the enemies with their incomparably sharp claws, teeth, and horns.

Nevertheless, with a gray, lusterless small bell, which seemed to be nothing special, Ji Hao put Ao Ku to the ground. Was this even real?

Was Ao Tu too weak? Or Was Ji Hao too strong?

"We phoenixes have always been mild and harmless. We will not take part in the conflict between you two, for now." On behalf of the phoenix-kind, Feng Ling smartly, and also shamelessly abandoned the dragon-kind, as a temporary ally. She gave up on forcing Ji Hao, but stepped back with the other three elderly phoenixes and smiled, prepared to watch in safety while the others were fighting.

Ji Hao was delighted to see this happen. He forced a smile out of his face and nodded to Feng Ling.

Ao Gu and the other three dragons stared at Feng Ling in an unfriendly way. 'Phoenixes have always been mild and harmless'? Who would buy that? During the past countless years, hadn't phoenixes drawn their swords against dragons for rare natural treasures, like a thousand times?

Phoenixes didn't have strong physical bodies, but their souls were scarily powerful. Relying on their greatly powerful souls and strong, natural-given fires, they had also been acting aggressively in the whole world. They were never nicer and more generous than those muscular dragons. However, they were indeed much smarter and sneakier than dragons. Before they saw the truth about a thing or a person, they would never make any hasty decision.

"Emperor Hao! You, you hurt one of us." Ao Gu turned away from those unreliable phoenixes and growled at Ji Hao, "You refused our kindness and ruined the friendship that had lasted for thousands of years between your kind and our dragon-kind! You! Are you trying to start a great war between the humankind and the dragon-kind?"

"If we fight, I guarantee you that the dragon-kind will be annihilated!" Ji Hao made a step forward, showing no sign of weakness. Along with a series of bone creaking noise, his sense of power grew stronger, and his body grew taller, reaching the height of Ao Gu.

Putting his forehead heavily against Ao Gu's, Ji Hao yelled back at him, "Remember this, you old scaled animal. We, human beings, are the owner of the natural fortune in Pan Gu world! We are... not dragons!"

"Want to bully someone? Wrong choice of target!" Ji Hao sneered at Ao Gu and continued, "If you want to fight, bring it on. I, Ji Hao, am right here! I'll keep you company! You brought such a strong army, shall we give it a try?"

Earlier, Ao Ku landed on the ground quite loudly. In the distance, all warriors from the dragon army and the phoenix army saw him clearly. The birds in the phoenix army applauded, screamed excitedly, and whistled shrilly, while the fierce-looking dragons from the dragon army began yelling and shouting. Following the orders of a few elderly dragon kings, thirty percent of the dragon army was left behind to confront the phoenix army, while the others marched towards Ji Hao's army.

Down below in the boundless lake, strong waves rolled, as crystalline water columns moved swiftly, and soon encircled Ji Hao's army from all directions. A great number of Divine towers dazzled blindingly on the hundred flying forts. Meanwhile, the dragon statues standing on the walls of each fort slowly opened their mouths. Spheres of eye-piercing light emerged in the mouths

of these dragon statues, seeming to erupt at any moment.

Shaosi stood on a high place. With one hand, she grabbed Man Man, who itched to jump out, and in the meantime, had been giving orders with a silvery voice.

Led by Yi Di, Eastern Wasteland archers hopped onto the back of their fierce flying mounts. The flying mounts screamed shrilly while rising into the sky. Shrimp and crab warriors under Shermie's command growled out loud and descended into the water, releasing clouds of spirit creature power that raised the same giant waves to face the water-kind warriors from the dragon army.

One hundred thousand half-dragon warriors burst into thunderous growls and formed two blade-like battle formations for offense, while a million blood pool ghosts merged into the air. No one could see them, but a strong scent of blood could be sensed from the air. Sensing the blood scent, a large number of dragon warrior quivered slightly, as they felt that they were weakening rapidly.

"Not even Emperor Shun dares to take to our dragon-kind like this!" Ao Gu looked at Ji Hao's army, which seemed to be ready for a war. His face even turned blue in anger.

"I'm not a human emperor!" Ji Hao laughed loudly to Ao Gu, "I am a divine emperor! I am chosen by the world to be a divine emperor!"

A twisted intent of killing flashed through Ao Gu's eyes. To ancient dragons like him, who still lived in the endless previous glory of the dragon-kind, divine emperors were nothing. Hadn't the dragon-kind fought the heaven? Every time that happened, they managed to take considerable advantages! They were a powerful species generated from Saint Pan Gu's strong body. They bullied all the time, but they were never bullied by anyone!

"Ji Hao...In our eyes, you, as a divine emperor, are a fart!" Ao Gu

finally said what he had been wanting to say all this time, "Unless it's a dragon elder sitting in the throne of a divine emperor, unless the world is ruled by our dragon kind, divine emperors are farts!"

"If you don't do what we said, you, my little friend, will learn your lesson." Ao Gu laughed viciously. Suddenly, he reached his arms towards Ji Hao's shoulders.

The Pan Gu bell buzzed rumblingly. Streams of Chaos power poured down and shielded Ji Hao's entire body. Ji Hao silently pulled out the Pan Gu sword and controlled it with the extreme negative power, merging it into the air and lunging it fiercely towards Ao Gu's heart.

There was not much to do or say, except fighting

Chapter 1494: Dragons Cry

Following a clear series of cracking noise, all five-colored scales on Ao Gu's fingers were crushed.

He stared at the Pan Gu bell, without being able to believe his own eyes. The defensive power possessed by the bell made him despair, and so did the terrifying counterforce delivered by it. In Ao Gu's long span of life, he had seen countless top-grade defensive treasures, and heard about the most famous few pre-world pieces in the world. But, he never knew about the Pan Gu bell, an ordinary-looking, small bell.

The Pan Gu bell reached Ao Gu's chest without making the slightest sound. Ao Gu was a brave, combative dragon. The keen sense of danger that he attained through countless life-risking battles now saved his life. He suddenly quivered, then turned away from Ji Hao and drew back immediately.

His silver shirt split up quietly, and a shallow slash was left on the five-colored scales on his chest. He was shocked, and also enraged. He lowered his head and looked at the wound on his chest, cursing angrily.

Along with a series of deep growls, about ten Jia Clan warriors guarding around the nine dragons chariot rushed up. They raised their dark, heavy, and dimly shiny swords with both arms, and launched a wild series of attacks on Ao Gu. Ao Gu scornfully snorted and moved his arms abruptly. Tens of shreds of afterimages were left in the air while Ao Gu's palms landed on all weapons coming at him, almost simultaneously.

Ten large swords covered in sparkling spell symbols shattered thunderously; sharp metal pieces fell on the bodies and faces of the Jia Clan warriors, sinking deeply into their bodies. These Divine-Magus-level Jia Clan warriors were covered in blood, yet never drew back for a single step. They spread their arms and lunged

towards Ao Gu.

The intent of killing grew obvious on Ao Gu's face, discovering which, Ji Hao immediately shouted, "Ao Gu, if you dare to touch one living being from my Yao Mountain territory..."

"Hah!" Ao Gu laughed wildly. His upper body expanded weirdly; his arms grew especially long and thick, while his ten fingers became curved claws. He burst into a roar and swung his arms down.

The Jia Clan warriors howled in pain. Their skulls were ripped open by Ao Gu's claws; five-colored dragon flame blazed in their brains and incinerated their upper bodies within a blink of an eye.

The remaining parts of their bodies fell from the sky and thudded on the ground, denting the earth.

Ao Gu scornfully raised his chin to Ji Hao and said, "I killed them. What can you do?"

Ji Hao's eyes suddenly turned purely golden. He gave a raging growl. Hearing his voice, high up in the air, the Pan Gu sun suddenly burst with an even brighter light; the sun seemed to even expand. The sunlight poured down from the sky like lava, as an inexhaustible sun power began gathering rapidly to a tiny spot in the sky, and so did the heat.

Within a twinkling of an eye, thousands of human-head sized golden sun thunder bombs emerged in the air, descending towards Ji Hao's army. Soon, a golden sun thunder bomb floated upon each water column raised by the dragons. Each of their flying fort was surrounded by thirty-six thunder bombs by now.

In order to make a show of their power, the dragon-kind had created a spectacular scene. Other than the four ancient dragon gods, one-hundred-thousand elite water-kind warriors were gathered on each water column.

"Ji Hao! Don't you dare!" Ao Gu ad the other two dragon gods

immediately popped out their eyes and stared at Ji Hao as they roared.

Ji Hao grinned. Raising the Pan Gu sword horizontally with his right hand, he elegantly, slightly bowed to the three old dragons, and said, "Do you think I dare not or ...dare to do it? I mean, I really dare to. Why don't I? You dragons do take yourselves too seriously, don't you?"

Hiding under Ji Hao's tongue-twister-like words was the fierce intent of killing, 'You bloody long worms, you claim to be Pan Gu's descendants, but in the past countless centuries, you've been watching the humankind struggle against the non-humankind all alone.'

'You never truly helped, but are lingering around human beings, sucking their lifeblood and squeezing every little bit profits out of them. You never truly helped the humankind; you let human beings bleed, you watched the field littered with the corpses of human beings.'

'But, every single time, when anything good happened to the humankind, you would come to us to seize the most benefits.'

Same as always, this time, the dragon-kind came immediately to Ji Hao when they sensed a huge profit from him.

Ji Hao raised his left hand and laughed out loud, then punched heavily on the Pan Gu bell. The bell ring echoed through the sky. Chaos powers burst in strong streams, surrounding all of Ji Hao's warriors. In the meanwhile, thousands of golden sun thunder bombs dazzled, then went off simultaneously.

Raging fires roaringly spread out. The destructive essence sun fire evaporated the bodies of countless water-kind warriors instantly; even their armors were melted, splashing along the wind.

Countless dragons screamed in the blazing fire and the golden

light. Their scales were melted, and muscles were burned. Their strong bodies allowed them to survive for a longer time under the power of the golden sun thunder bombs, but for this exact reason, they would have to suffer a much crueler and longer pain.

"Ji Hao! You will die!" Watching the young dragons vanish in the fire and golden light, Ao Gu and the other old dragons burst into tears. The tears even squirted from their eyes.

The dragon-kind inherited Saint Pan Gu's strong body. Dragons were incomparably strong, but they didn't have Saint Pan Gu's fertility, which belonged to the humankind. Therefore, same as the phoenix-kind, reproduction was extremely difficult for dragons.

A dragon couple could be pregnant with one baby in a century, if they were lucky. If they didn't have the luck, they might need to wait for a thousand years for their child, which was not a rare thing in the dragon world. Therefore, despite the power of the dragon-kind, the number of pure-blood dragons was not as many as one in ten thousands of the total population of the humankind.

Ao Gu and his people brought a huge water-kind army, but among all their warriors, the number of pure-blood dragon was only about ten-thousand.

Ao Gu witnessed over a thousand young dragons become ashes in the blinding golden light. He howled in tears and released bright light streams from his palms to save those awfully burned young dragons as quickly as he could. Those young dragons were already injured to a state too ghastly to look at directly.

Three old dragons all made their moves, saving nearly ten-thousands young dragons from the edge of death. Nearly ten-thousand dragons wailed together. Their voices echoed through the clouds, mixed with despair, pain, and the great fear. Someone actually dared to hurt them. Was this real? A young human being, he actually dared to hurt dragons!

"How dare he? How dare he?"

The resonant dragon roars quickly turned into earth-shaking cries.

It was painful, too painful. Ao Gu and the other two old dragons saved those young dragons from the exploding golden sun thunder bombs, yet the essence sun fire had already drilled into their bodies, and was cruelly burning their internal organs and marrow.

Painful, it was unbearably painful! These spoiled young dragons were all like Ao Li; when had they ever suffered such a pain?

Ten-thousand dragons cried together. Their tears fell from the sky, and all of a sudden, the sky was darkened, the gale was raised, and a rainstorm started.

Chapter 1495: Nourish Them with Dragon Blood

The rain was heavy. Lightning flashed, and thunder rumbled.

Surrounded by thunderbolts, Ji Hao walked out of the nine dragons chariot with big steps. The contract of the world floated in front of him. He reached out his hands and pushed slightly, sending the contract to Ao Gu, who stood in a distance away.

Teasingly, he said in a bland voice, "Ao Gu, you have merely lost some low-grade water-kind beings now. Sign the contract, and the promised conditions can still be effective. This is your last chance!"

Ao Gu trembled in fury.

'Have merely lost some low-grade water-kind beings'? He didn't care how many of those cheap fishes, turtles, shrimps died. But, the problem was, other than those insignificant water-kind creatures, over a thousand pure-blooded dragons were incinerated!

The dragonkind was wealthy, with abundant natural treasures. If the souls of those young dragons remained, their bodies could still be rebuilt with all kinds of natural treasures. In the worst case, they would lose a slight little bit of longevity. Nevertheless, Ji Hao's thunder bombs were too powerful. Those young dragons' bodies were destroyed, and their relatively weaker souls perished in the fire before they managed to escape.

Over a thousand pure-blooded dragons!

The dragonkind had never lost so many members during one fight, not even when the non-humankind invaded Pan Gu world for the first time!

"Ji Hao, forget it. From now on, we, the dragonkind...and you are at daggers drawn." Ao Gu was prepared to say that the dragonkind and the humankind were going to be at daggers drawn, but suddenly, he lost the confidence. These years, the humankind had

grown stronger and stronger. All large human families were more and more thriving. Therefore, Ao Gu had no courage to actually say it out.

He could only point at Ji Hao.

The dragonkind was strong. Ao Gu was confident in suppressing Ji Hao, a human being. Suppressing Ji Hao, the dragonkind could even use this as an excuse to earn more profits from the humankind. For example, didn't the humankind occupied Liang Zhu City? The dragonkind had no interest in non-humankind knowledge, but it wouldn't mind using those for reference!

"At daggers drawn!" Ao Gu angrily punched the contract away and growled, "You, Ji Hao, who luckily ascended to a divine throne, you will die! And that's because you offended our dragonkind. In Pan Gu world, no one can offend us and stay alive afterward!"

Ji Hao clenched his fingers in the air. The contract flew back into his hands, then he glanced at Feng Ling and the other three old phoenixes, who had been remaining silent the whole time. Seeing Ji Hao look at them, Feng Ling coughed slightly, then flew up with the other three, back to the phoenix army.

The birds screamed and followed pure-blooded phoenixes slowly backward. Drawing back for about a thousand miles, they finally stopped, looking at Ji Hao and the dragons through a long distance.

On the ground, Ao Ku roared hoarsely. His broken head had recovered already, and his broken horns had regrown. The new horns were smooth, without all the signs of aging.

Rubbing his new horn, Ao Ku gritted his teeth tight, even caused a creaking noise. Gave a deep growl, he stomped his feet against the ground, rose like a reverse shooting star, fiercely lunging to the nine dragons chariot.

"Ji Hao! How dare you sneak attack me? Whatever bullsh*t divine emperor you are, I will tear you apart today!" Ao Hao roared wildly and raised his arms. A purely dark long spear appeared in his hands, releasing a strong sense of fierceness.

The nine-meters long spear vibrated intensively. On the spearhead, a spark of starlight broke the space and left a long dark space crack in the sky, seeming to pierce the nine dragons chariot.

Ji Hao wielded his arm. The chariot released a strong fire, while Ji Hao flashed across the sky and showed up right before Ao Ku's face as he launched the sky-opening move.

Ao Ku gave a twisted grin. Did Ji Hao truly dare to pick up a close combat against him? Didn't Ji Hao know that the dragons were the strongest creatures in Pan Gu world? As one of the strongest among all dragons, Ao Ku believed that his strength represented the greatest strength of Pan Gu world.

Therefore, he put forth his strength through his arms and sent the spear forward more and more aggressively.'

Puff! It sounded like cutting a carrot with a sharp knife when Ao Ku's spear, which was a pre-world spirit treasure, was cut into two by Ji Hao's sword. The grey-colored, lusterless Pan Gu sword cut directly into the spear, broke Ao Ku's palms, and sliced his arms into four.

Ao Gu and the other two old dragons exclaimed out loud. They seriously could not believe their own eyes!

Dragons inherited Saint Pan Gu's incomparably strong body. No ordinary weapon could ever break dragon scales, not even the scales of a newborn dragon. For mature dragons, nothing at a lower grade than holy weapons could hurt their bodies. At the level of ancient dragon kings, no weapon but pre-world spirit treasures could possibly harm the scales of a dragon.

For ancient dragon gods like Ao Gu, whose scales had been

strengthened for countless years, average-level pre-world spirit treasure could leave marks on their scales at most. Except for the handful of truly powerful beings in Pan Gu world, who had the best, fiercest supreme treasures, no force in the world could threaten the lives of these dragon gods.

Especially Ao Ku, this old evil dragon... As a black dragon, his scales were even thirty percent stronger than Ao Gu's five-colored scales!

Where did Ji Hao find that sword in his hands? Ao Ku had been strengthening his body for countless years, yet Ji Hao broke that body so easily? Ao Ku's spear was a genuine top-grade spirit treasure, but how could it fail to take even one sword strike from Ji Hao?

Was it a top-grade pre-world supreme treasure? No, the number of top-grade pre-world supreme treasures in Pan Gu world was limited. Some of those were possessed by the dragonkind, and some weren't. But, dragons knew clearly who the owners of those treasures were!

"Ji Hao!" Ao Hao shouted in pain.

His body was so strong, for which reason, when his arms were cut up, he sensed such a great pain.

Ji Hao violently gripped Ao Ku's neck before he could struggle.

The Pan Gu sword had already pierced his heart.

Large amounts of blood gushed out of his body. Right in front of everyone else, Ji Hao cast a spell. Following his voice, streams of dragon blood flew into the mouths of the pair of fire dragons coiled on Ji Hao's arms, along with a loud clattering noise.

The pair of fire dragons roared in happiness as they greedily gulped the purest, strongest dragon spirit blood flowing out of Ao Ku's body. The others, who had been watching all this, clearly sensed the rapid growth of the powers of the two small fire

dragons. The fire dragons' dragon bloodline had been improving soaringly.

"Ji Hao, how dare you!" Ao Gu almost vomited blood.

In front of so many people, how dare Ji Hao hurt a dragon god so severely and feed his pets with the dragon god's blood to improve them?

Unbridled, cruel, violent, brutal, fierce... Ao Gu couldn't even find an appropriate word to describe Ji Hao's terrible behavior.

Chapter 1496: Ao Bai

Ji Hao didn't stop letting out Ao Ku's blood.

Even as an extra strong being, Ao Ku was only able to struggle weakly at the moment, as his heart was penetrated by the Pan Gu sword. Ji Hao's strength was greater than his, facing which, he had no chance to escape.

The tremendous dragon army was nearly crushed by Ji Hao's golden sun thunder bombs. A whole hundred flying forts were melted into liquid, splashing onto the ground. Ji Hao's army proceeded to surround Ao Gu and the other dragons from all directions. Ao Gu and the other two dragon gods dared not to make any move, even though they were powerful ancient beings.

From time to time, they roared in fury. Ao Gu released an overwhelming dragon power to awe the warriors coming at him from every direction. However, as the main force under Ji Hao's command, those half-dragon warriors, blood-pool ghosts, and divine commanders and warriors from the heaven had no sense of fear. They moved forward based on their instincts of fighting, and Ao Gu's threat was completely ineffective on them.

On the contrary, Ao Gu's power stimulated those half-dragon warriors. They stared at Ao Gu with blood-red eyes, waiting for Ji Hao's order. They wanted nothing but to rush up, tear him into pieces, then swallow him up.

Ao Gu dared not to move, and either did the other two dragon gods standing beside him.

They could start a massacre regardless of anything else, but what would happen to those badly injured young dragons? Wounded by the golden sun thunder bombs, these young dragons now had no strength to defend themselves, such that any few half-dragon warriors could kill them all as easily as chopping watermelons. No matter what kind of high position they were in, these dragon gods

couldn't take the responsibility for that.

Ao Gu's eyes rolled in his sockets. He looked at Man Man and Shaosi, who both had Ji Hao's smell. He wanted to kidnap the two girls and threaten Ji Hao with their lives. But, Man Man and Shaosi vigilantly stayed on the chariot, under the protection of layers of fire.

The nine dragons chariot belonged to the ancient East Emperor Taiyi, and was as powerful as top-grade pre-world supreme treasure. Ao Gu might be powerful, but he couldn't possibly break the defense of the chariot and capture Man Man and Shaosi within a short span of time.

In anger, he turned to the phoenix army in a distance away.

If Feng Ling and her people were willing to help and break in from the outer circle, the dragon-kind might have a chance to reverse the situation. However, on glancing at Feng Ling and her people, Ao Gu found the four old phoenixes were pointing their fingers at the dragons while smiling and talking. Obviously, Feng Ling and her people were glad to see the dragon-kind fall into disadvantages.

'Old b*tch!' Ao Gu cursed in his head. He seemed to even explode with wrath. Ever since the ancient time, the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind were top among all species in Pan Gu world. Speaking of the dragon-kind, one would certainly think of the phoenix-kind as well, vice versa.

The relationship between the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind was tight and complicated. If the dragon-kind fell at a disadvantage and was humiliated by Ji Hao, would Feng Ling feel proud?

Ao Ku was howling.

Ji Hao had been letting out Ao Ku's blood for about ten minutes. As an ancient dragon god with a thriving life-force, who had a thousand-miles-long, strong body, Ao Ku suffered an unbearable

pain, but remained strengthful.

To Ao Ku, losing this small amount of blood was nothing to be mentioned, because he could easily regenerate the blood by taking some nourishing natural treasures. However, his face, his dignity!

Ao Ku screamed madly. His broken arms and legs had all been twitching intensively. At the moment, he truly wanted to die. Ao Gu and the other dragons saw him like this, fine. But the four old phoenixes were also watching, weren't they? Back when they were younger, two of the four old phoenixes had awful relationships with Ao Ku!

Ao Ku could even imagine the two with sharp beaks telling everyone in the world about what happened to him when things were settled!

Ao Ku really wanted to die!

He seriously couldn't understand how could Ji Hao, a human being, be so powerful. How could he?

Not to mention that ridiculously sharp sword of his, Ji Hao's physical strength was even scarier. Judging by the tremendous pressure he sensed from his neck, Ao Ku clearly knew that Ji Hao's physical strength was twice as great as his!

Ji Hao was a human being, a human being, a lowly, weak human being! Since when could human beings have even greater physical strength than dragons? Not even ancient human emperors could achieve that. Emperor Shennong, Emperor Xuanyuan, even Emperor Fuxi, the first human emperor, they were all brave, wise and powerful, but their physical strengths were far weaker than same-level dragons!

Ao Ku could not understand this. Did dragons truly inherit Saint Pan Gu's strong body? Or, had it always been human beings?

The pair of fire dragons were no longer satisfied with drinking the blood Ji Hao sent into their mouths. They left Ji Hao's arms

and coiled on Ao Ku's broken arms. Then, they widely opened their jaws and bit on his wounds, sucking his spirit blood directly.

Ao Ku quivered in pain. Absorbing Ao Ku's blood, the pair of fire dragon grew stronger and stronger, while Ao Ku started feeling cold, even though he had a thousand-miles-long, strong body. Cold sweat oozed from under his scales. Because of the excessive loss of blood, his internal organs began twitching slowly.

"Emperor Ji Hao, for my sake, please spare the lives of these immature kids!"

From a distance away, a watery cloud drifted over. Earlier, nearly ten-thousand dragons burst into cries and wails together, because of which, the sky was dark and cloudy. But, as the watery cloud appeared, the dark clouds in the sky suddenly disappeared. Ao Gu and the others looked at the watery cloud, all shocked.

Standing on the watery cloud was a man in a white robe, with a mild smile, a handsome face, and elegant manners. He seemed like an ancient being. Ji Hao had a pretty good first impression of him. His long hair hung loosely on his back. The three-inches-long pair of horns on his forehead revealed his background. He was also a dragon.

The power that could be sensed from this man was weak, and the smell emitted from his body was refreshing. He was like a newborn, that not even the natural laws of Pan Gu world had left much of traces on or inside him.

However, the moment Ao Ku saw this man, he stopped struggling crazily, and politely lowered his head.

Ao Gu, the other two dragon gods, and nearly ten-thousand younger dragons behind bowed deeply and reverently to this man. They acted so politely and respectfully, not like arrogant and unbridled dragons at all.

"You are?" Without stopping the bloodletting, Ji Hao vigilantly

looked at the man.

The sense of power was weak, and even his soul power vibration was not steady. He was like a candle in a gale, that could die out at any moment. Nevertheless, Ji Hao dared not to be even a little careless, because he knew that a terrifying true face was hiding under the weak mask of this man.

"I am..." The man patted his own head, looked down at his white robe, then grinned and said, "I haven't used my name for long, and people might have forgotten it. You can call me Ao Bai[1]!"

Ji Hao remained silent. What a convenient way to name oneself!

"Alright, alright, is this a contract of the world?" Ao Bai looked at the contract. He scanned across it with an extremely weak spirit power, then seriously nodded and said, "This is a very fair contract. We are making this a deal, shall we?"

Ji Hao was surprised, and so were the four old phoenixes who had been watching this show from the distance.

———————

[1]Bai, literally means 'white'.

Chapter 1497: Someone with Real Wisdom

Amidst the shrill cries of nearly ten-thousand young dragons, Ji Hao and the eight representatives from the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind sat back on the nine dragons chariot.

Ao Bai brought a bottle of light golden ointment, which had a refreshing aroma. He asked Feng Ling to send out a group of her people and help to apply the ointment on the bodies of the young dragons, who were injured by the essence sun fire earlier. Soon, the fire power lingering in their bodies faded, and their carbonized skins and muscles were healed. Weakly, the young dragons curled up on the watery cloud.

They were exhausted, but at least, they stopped crying.

Ao Hao, who had lost a massive amount of spirit blood, now had a sulky face. He swallowed a few highly replenishing pills, then stood quietly behind Ao Bai. Not only him, Ao Gu and the other two ancient dragon gods, and the twelve dragon kings as the commanders of the great dragon army, all stood quietly behind Ao Bai. Clearly, they weren't on equal footing with Ao Bai.

Feng Ling and the other three ancient phoenixes sat straight on large fiery armchairs, looking at Ao Bai frowningly. They racked their brains to search the deepest, forgotten corners of their memories, but failed to find any information about him. This man in a white robe seemed to be even weaker than a newborn dragon, but who was he?

Ji Hao had also been looking at Ao Bai seriously.

This man was way too influential among dragons. The hysterical Ao Ku, the infuriated Ao Gu, and those dragon kings who were inconsolable because of their dead children, all quieted down after hearing a word from Ao Bai. They now looked so obedient, daring not to express any emotion of anger.

If he were merely influential, Ji Hao wouldn't be so surprised. But, from his eyes, Ji Hao discovered a 'light of wisdom' that normally had nothing to do with dragons. That warm, bright light in his eyes was generated from a natural-given wisdom, which was brewed by time for countless centuries. When Ji Hao and Ao Bai looked at each other in the eye, Ji Hao felt that he was penetrating him, while he failed to dig any useful information from Ao Bai.

Ji Hao wasn't afraid of brave dragons, who were as brainless as cannon fodders in any battleground. He wasn't afraid of greedy and selfish dragons either, because those dragons were blinded by profits, and were so easy to fool.

He did dread dragons with wisdom. With their strong bodies, great strengths, strict stratifications, if a leader with transcendent wisdom emerged among them, without a doubt, the dragon-kind would become the most terrifying species in Pan Gu world.

Stroking the pair of fire dragons, who had devoured a giant amount of spirit blood and fallen into the deep sleep of evolution, Ji Hao smiled nicely to Ao Bai and said, "Mr. Ao Bai, I am deeply sorry about the misunderstanding just now. Fortunately, you showed up timely, before a larger damage was caused. You are finally here. Otherwise, I wouldn't know how to wrap this up if anything happened to Ao Gu and the others of them."

Hearing him, the faces of Ao Gu, Ao Ku, and the other dragons turned blue with rage. What did he mean? That if Ao Bai didn't show, he would kill Ao Gu and the other dragons? Not to mention if Ji Hao had the guts to do it, he probably had, but was he capable of doing it? They were the four dragon gods after all. Ao Ku was sneakily attached by him and lost a great amount of spirit blood, but Ao Gu and the other two were perfectly uninjured and ready to fight!

Did he want to make anything happen to Ao Gu and his people? Was he able to do it?

Ao Bai smilingly nodded. With a gentle voice, he mildly said to Ji Hao, "Emperor Hao is right. These kids are with the salt of youth, so they can be very unreasonable sometimes. As for some misunderstandings, we shall just let them go. Emperor Hao, you shall not take it to heart."

Pausing for a short moment, Ao Bai continued straightforwardly, "I think, the contract Emperor Hao drafted is fairly appropriate. One-hundred thousand pure blood dragons, a billion elite water-kind warriors, with full sets of armors, weapons, and other equipment, they will all sign the contract to follow Emperor Hao forever. Even their descendants will follow Emperor Hao's lead, generation after generation. I wonder, will this offer earn us a divine throne?"

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and looked at Ao Bai in surprise.

Was this man truly so easy to talk to? Or, did he need a divine throne so eagerly?

Ji Hao looked calmly at Ao Bai, without any change of expression. He simply narrowed his eyes, seeming to fall into his deepest thoughts.

Sitting aside, Feng Xing became anxious. What a joke? If the dragon-kind accepted the terms, what about the phoenix-kind? One-hundred-thousand pure-blood dragons? Did that mean that the phoenix-kind had to give Ji Hao one-hundred-thousand pure-blood members too?

How many pure-blood phoenixes even existed in Pan Gu world in total?

The phoenix-kind could offer Ji Hao billions of the other birds like rocs and peacocks. Pan Gu world was so vasty, and those birds were as many as the stars in the sky. But, one-hundred-thousand pure-blood phoenixes? Feng Xing's mouth grew wider as she prepared to say something. Ao Bai abruptly raised his head smilingly, then elegantly nodded to Feng Ling and said, "If Qing

Qiang is here, she would agree with me."

Once he said 'Qing Qiang', Feng Ling's expression changed immediately. She looked at Ao Bai from head to toe, as if he were a ghost.

A long while later, Feng Ling and the other three elderly phoenixes sitting beside him finally calmed back down. They became extremely respectful and polite to Ao Bai. With a proud faint smile, Feng Ling slowly said to Ji Hao, "Since Bai...Great Ancestor Bai said so, we will give the same offer. One-hundred-thousand pure-blood phoenixes and a billion flying warriors will sign the contract for a divine throne. Emperor Hao, what do you think?"

'Great Ancestor Bai'?

Ji Hao smiled and nodded, responding blandly, "Great Ancestor Bai is so decisive. While you are here, I shall put forward my conditions. One-hundred-thousand pure-blood phoenixes and one-hundred-thousand pure-blood dragons sound a bit too less to the heaven. How should we say this, the heaven is mighty after all. How many warriors we need simply for the daily patrol?"

Straightening three fingers, Ji Hao grinned and continued, "I am not greedy. How about there, a billion elite water-kind warriors and a billion flying warriors, settled. But, I want three-hundred-thousand pure-blood dragons and three-hundred-thousand pure-blood phoenixes! If you agree, we will sign the contract now. If you don't, we'll forget about this."

Feng Ling remained silent and looked at Ao Bai.

Ao Bai smiled, then nodded to Ji Hao. As he pointed out his finger, wisps of golden light flew out his fingertips and wrote down the number Ji Hao said in the blank in the contract.

Ji Hao took a deep breath and slowly let it out. He smiled at Ao Bao, then nodded slowly and said, "Great! So, about the third

throne I promised, the dragon-kind, the phoenix-kind, if you're interested, you can start bidding now."

Before Feng Ling said a word, Ao Bai laughed, "How about we double these numbers? We will take the third throne too. Feng Ling girl, you shall not bid against me. I will talk to Qing Qiang about this later."

Feng Ling stood up and slightly bowed to Ao Bai, then released a golden light from her fingers and left a sign that represented the phoenix-kind on the contract.

Ji Hao smiled, and so did Ao Bai. Only Ao Ku viciously stared at Ji Hao while rubbing his chest, which was penetrated just now.

Chapter 1498: The Army Marched to the Heaven

In the old location of Buzhou Mountain, right below the heaven, Ji Hao's army was stationed for ten days.

The dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind must have built secret teleporting formations all over Pan Gu world, as they delivered the warriors they promised within merely ten days.

Six-hundred-thousand pure-blood dragons which were strong and brave, three-hundred thousand pure-blood phoenixes which were mysterious and proud, along with two billion water-kind and flying warriors under their leads were delivered, which were all top-grade elites. The dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind didn't make up the number with weak shrimp warriors or small birds. Among all water-kind warriors from the dragon-kind, the weakest ones were fierce tiger sharks, and among the flying warriors, spirit cranes were at the lowest grade.

Centered on Ji Hao's army, the dragon force and the phoenix force scattered on both sides. The dense dark clouds covered the sky, extending for tens of miles. Resonant dragon roars and bright bird screams could be heard every now and then. The dragons and phoenixes absorbed natural powers and created two enormous, warm clouds in the sky.

What caught Ji Hao's attention was the one leading the phoenix-force, who was a young girl with a tender face, wearing a long green dress and looking no older than fourteen years old. She was Qing Qiang. Clearly, she and Ao Bai were old friends. The moment they saw each other, they crowded together and began talking. No one knew what had they been talking about.

"There is a story about those two!" Ji Hao shook his head and chuckled.

Dragons and phoenixes weren't as friendly with each other as they looked like. Most of dragons and phoenixes were arrogant, bossy, and unreasonable. For treasures, for territories, for all kinds of small things, the conflicts between dragons and phoenixes never stopped.

However, when Ao Bai and Qing Qiang had their eyes on each other, Ji Hao clearly saw the sparks in their eyes. They ignored the younger ones around them and talked to each other closely. Their expressions were subtle and weird.

Ji Hao laughed evilly. Ao Gu, Feng Ling, and the other dragon and phoenix leaders were quite embarrassed. They dared not to even look at Ao Bai and Qing Qiang, who stood closely together. Instead, they brought up some unrelated topics, and when talking to Ji Hao, they stuttered with their eyes dazed. They looked around without making eye-contact with Ji Hao, seeming to be far less confident than before.

Ji Hao didn't want to waste too much time talking with them. Driving the nine dragons chariot, he rose into the sky and pointed out his finger. The contract of world, the one created by himself, flew up and transformed into a tremendous golden screen, floating in the sky.

"People from the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, each send a drop of spirit blood into the contract now. After this, I'll take you to do something great." Ji Hao grinned warmly. As he swept across the area with his purely golden eyes, all warriors from the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind couldn't help but lower their heads, daring not to look at him in the eye. They felt that his gaze was as sharp as daggers, cutting deeply through their faces.

Based on Ji Hao's requirement, all dragons and phoenixes, who were clearly aware of their mission, glanced at each other, then bit their tongues and shed a drop of spirit blood each. The spirit blood transformed into warm mists or sparks, flying into the contract. The water-kind warriors and flying warriors under their leads did

the same, merging their spirit blood into the contract.

When everyone finished, Ji Hao took out his divine seal and sent in a stream of original sun power, stamping on the contract.

The space quaked slightly. An indescribable soul pressure descended from the sky, slowly scanning across everyone on the scene. The ones who sighed the contract sensed a deep glance from an invisible eye, after which, they felt that they were connected with a terrifying being, that they could never turn against.

All of a sudden, the contract created by Ji Hao collapsed into countless, extremely thin beams of golden light. Under the control of an invisible, tremendous power, the light beams wove into a thousand-miles-long divine character.

The divine character was composed of simple and smooth lines. Less than a handful of people on the scene recognized this character. Nevertheless, everyone understood its meaning the moment it appeared. The contract was signed under the witness of the world. Anyone who violated it would be punished by the world!

The golden divine character faded gradually. When the dragons and phoenixes who signed the contract looked again at Ji Hao, they suddenly realized that things were different!

At first, when they followed the orders of their elders and came to this place with their warriors, many of these proud dragons and phoenixes never thought about truly following Ji Hao's lead. Why was Ji Hao the divine emperor chosen by the world? Why were they sold to him, to serve him, to be his slaves? Why could Ji Hao command them forever and ever, that even their descendants had to follow his words?

If Ao Gu, Feng Ling, and the other elders hadn't been restraining these young dragons and phoenixes, some bad-tempered ones among them would have done things to Ji Hao long ago.

Nevertheless, they had signed the contract now, and the contract was admitted by the world. At this moment, when they looked again at Ji Hao, for some reason, they felt a massive pressure coming straight at them. Uncontrollably, they suddenly had great respect for Ji Hao; a faint admiration for Ji Hao was growing rapidly in their hearts, and they didn't even notice it.

All negative thoughts about Ji Hao had vanished in their minds. Looking at him, they found him so perfect, so great, so noble, so majestic, so extraordinary. Ji Hao was like their only faith and only ruler, that with a word he said, they could shed their blood and give up their lives; they could die for a word from Ji Hao!

The power of a contract of the world was far beyond their imagination!

Before, most of these dragons and phoenixes prepared to play some small tricks to Ji Hao, like overtly agreeing but covertly opposing. But, they had no idea about the power of the contract. The contract was signed under the witness of the world. In other words, they signed it with the origin of this world. So, how could they ever have a chance to disobey?

From this day on, from their bodies to their souls, they would always be Ji Hao's loyal warriors. Not even their descendants could have a chance to go against Ji Hao.

"Emperor!" One of them did it the first, following which, all dragons and phoenixes who signed the contract kneeled on the ground together and kowtowed to Ji Hao. Water-kind and flying warriors kneeled too, looking at Ji Hao while roaring passionately and kowtowing without a stop.

Their roars rumbled like thunders as strong sound waves spread out. Witnessing all this, Ao Gu and Feng Ling popped out their eyes in shock. What was going on? Did their people truly, honestly follow Ji Hao?

"Rise! Target, the heaven!" From the contract, Ji Hao learned the

secrets buried in the hearts of these dragons and phoenixes before the contract was signed. He laughed out loud, then pointed at the sky and shouted, "Dragons on the left, phoenixes on the right, each select eighty-thousand elites to join my main troop. One-hundred-thousand half-dragon warriors as the spearhead, march to the heaven! Anyone who attempts to hinder... kill!"

The gigantic army rose, extending for hundreds of thousands of miles, marching swiftly to the heaven along with a violent gale.

Days later, by the front gate of the heaven, Ji Hao's warriors arrived wave after wave and surrounded the gate.

Chapter 1499: The Divine Sun Palace

"Move forward with me!" Ji Hao trod on a fiery cloud as he spread his left hand and let the Pan Gu bell float upon his palm, gripping the Pan Gu sword with his right hand. Flying above his head, Mr. Crow cawed resonantly while following him, as Ji Hao shouted to the boundless army behind him.

The ancient-styled, thick gate of heaven, which was thickly covered in mysterious embossments, was kicked open by Ji Hao. With giant steps, he broke into the heaven through the golden, dazzling path. Behind him, dragons and phoenixes breathed deeply. They roared out loud with excitement and followed Ji Hao, marching into the heaven in a formidable array. They still couldn't believe all this.

Back in the prehistorical era, the dragons and phoenixes, these two proud species, had allied many times and attempted to overturn the heaven. However, despite their strangeness, on facing the heaven which was created under the will of nature, the nature-bestowed heaven and earth great formation, and the first generation of divine gods which were also created by the world itself, dragons and phoenixes took advantages a couple of times, but all failed eventually.

Later on, the heaven fell, and the dragons and phoenixes lost interest in occupying the heaven. It was a useless thing by then, so what could they possibly use it for even if they occupied it?

But today, these young phoenixes and dragons had actually stepped into the heaven in broad daylight, and their leader was a new divine emperor, chosen by the world. Would the heaven rise again under his leadership?

Would they, the phoenixes and dragons, become divine gods, standing high above the masses and ruling the world?

Ji Hao proceeded along with big steps. Especially heavy Chaos

power forced away the warm lights of the heaven, keeping anything from the heaven away from Ji Hao. The bell buzzed deeply. Wherever Ji Hao reached, all defensive seals deactivated themselves, unable to cause any threat to him.

The army flooded into the heaven. Ji Hao shouted with a strong voice. Following his orders, troops of elite warriors rushed into all directions through different paths, taking over the most important areas of the heaven.

The moment Ji Hao stepped into the heaven, the structure of the entire heaven emerged in his embryo of Dao. All of a sudden, he knew everything about he heaven, including each brick, each tile, the location and function of each building. Based on all this information, he figured out which buildings needed to be heavily guarded, and which areas would remain safe with three to five warriors on patrol.

He quickly made the most appropriate arrangement. Under his orders, elite dragons and phoenixes scattered in all directions.

The heaven was boundlessly broad. Including all covered areas and small independent spaces, the heaven was as broad as the Southern Wasteland, with countless buildings, independent small spaces, mansions, and barracks.

Ji Hao brought six-hundred-thousand dragons, two billion elite water warriors, three-hundred-thousand phoenixes, and a billion elite flying warriors. This was a great army, but in comparison with the vast heaven, these warriors were like a handful of sesame seeds falling into a sea. What Ji Hao could do was no more than letting these warriors guard the core buildings there, for example, the palaces that belonged to the five divine emperors, the most important buildings in the heaven, and the largest few treasuries, which contained countless supreme treasures, and must be strictly guarded.

The few melting stoves in the heaven were all nature-crafted

spirit treasures. Not much manpower was needed in employing them. As long as all kinds of spirit materials were thrown into the stove, top-grade supreme weapons could be forged. Therefore, the stoves must be guarded by over a hundred million elite warriors, so Ji Hao wouldn't need to worry about them.

The heaven was vast, with too many treasures and good places. The forces Ji Hao extorted from the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind seemed tremendous in number, but once they scattered in the heaven, they seemed to even disappear. Before Ji Hao walked to the palace of the central divine emperor, only a small number of phoenixes and dragons remained behind him.

From a small distance away, he saw the palace coiling in rosy clouds. From the sky, a seven-colored stream of starlight poured straight down, covering the entire palace which was over ten-thousand-miles squared in area. From far away, Ji Hao saw about ten-thousand Jia Clan warriors tremblingly standing on the square before the palace, looking at him in panic.

These were Dishi Cha's warriors. They had every reason to panic, because they were no more than ten thousand in number, while Ji Hao had one-hundred-thousand half-dragon warriors, a million blood pool ghosts, and eight-thousand elite dragons, phoenixes, along with over a hundred-million water-kind warriors and flying warriors following closely behind him.

If these warriors weren't surrounded by battle formation composed of golden armored divine commanders and silver armored divine warriors, they might have fled already.

The divine commanders and warriors stared at Ji Hao with gray, lusterless eyes. Dim lights wove into spell symbols and covered their eyes while sparkling. They trembled slightly, because their consciousnesses were struggling intensely.

Ji Hao marched to the palace with large steps. Wherever he walked past, luxurious, magnificent palaces collapsed rumblingly

and warm clouds and glows rose into the sky, condensing into splendid golden swirls in the air.

Purple mist rolled. The heaven was like an enormous Chaos monster which had slept for countless years, and was waking up now, welcoming the new owner of the heaven.

A strong warmth flowed out in the air in streams, transforming into purple mists and pouring into Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao sensed his spirit power growing stronger, and the coverage of his spirit power expanding rapidly. When he stepped onto the square before the palace, his spirit power covered the entire heaven!

He was shocked by himself. The total area of the heaven was no smaller than the Southern Wasteland. Was his spirit power strong enough to cover such a large area? Based on Ji Hao's current cultivation, with the help of the Pan Gu sun, he managed to cover the area with a diameter of eight-million miles before. But, the heaven was thousands, even millions of times wider.

As a divine emperor, the heaven improved his power so greatly!

"What do you want?" Looking at the Jia Clan warriors arrayed on the square, Ji Hao smiled scornfully. A golden light shone from his head, as the divine seal floated within it while releasing blinding golden lights.

The colorfully glowing central palace quaked suddenly and turned entirely golden. A suffocating golden fire blazed, quickly wrapping up the central palace and tens of thousands of smaller buildings around it.

The golden fire was as quiet as water, as clear as glass; it was a pure essence sun fire!

The plaque hung above the front gate turned pure golden as well. From up to down, four divine characters were carved on it, 'The Divine Sun Palace'.

The heaven was indeed a supreme treasure created under the will

of the world. Currently, as the only divine emperor in the world, once Ji Hao stepped in, the nature of the entire palace changed immediately. Every brick and every tile in the palace was now condensed from the pure sun power; the entire palace was now filled with the purest sun power. Even the name of the palace changed because of Ji Hao into the Divine Sun Palace!

Before the palace, the essence sun fire blazed on the bodies of all divine commanders and warriors as well. The dim lights in their eyes disappeared in the fire, while their bodies turned golden. The fire burned ragingly from their pores.

"Emperor!" They kneeled on the ground reverently and saluted to Ji Hao.

Chapter 1500: Control the Heaven

Over ten-thousand Jia Clan warriors collapsed to the ground, losing the courage to fight.

Ji Hao looked at all the divine commanders and warriors kneeling in the surroundings, intoxicated by the fantastically pleasant sensation of the rapid and constant improvement of his cultivation delivered by the endless sun power surging into his body.

These divine commanders and warriors were war machines created by the Divine Origin Pool. They had different natures, thunder, wind, rain, fire. But, once Ji Hao let out his divine seal, their natures changed immediately.

Same as this Divine Sun Palace, their powers all transformed into pure sun power. Every hair, every muscle, every drop of blood of theirs was filled with the pure essence of sun. They were like creatures generated from the sun, dazzling and burning with a raging fire.

The moment their natures changed, Ji Hao understood — not to mention how destructive was the fire and heat released from their armors and weapons to the approaching enemies, their moving speed would be scarily high, as their bodies were now condensed from pure sun power. A million miles would take them no more than a second. When the Pan Gu sun shone in the sky, with its power, these divine commanders and warriors would be able to kill any enemy by taking advantage of their supremely high speed. No living being in the world would be able to surpass them in terms of speed.

Noises could be heard from the Divine Origin Pool. Troops of divine commanders and warriors flew swiftly over, treading on golden clouds. Their bodies were blazing with a golden fire. Their hair, eyebrows were golden and their skins shone with a dazzling

golden light, and their armors and weapons looked like golden crystals. They floated around the Divine Sun Palace, kneeling and kowtowing to Ji Hao.

More and more divine warriors and commanders rushed out of the Divine Origin Pool. Ji Hao raised his head and saw the Pan Gu sun release a ten-thousand-miles-thick, blinding golden beam of light into the Divine Origin Pool.

From all directions, the inexhaustible natural powers had been drawn into the pool. The rapidly flowing natural powers had already formed a million-miles-wide swirl in the sky.

With the power of the Pan Gu sun and the inexhaustible natural powers, the Divine Origin Pool had been ceaselessly creating divine commanders and warriors. These divine commanders and warriors had different natures, but the moment they walked out of the pool, the sun power would erupt from their bodies and turn them into pure creatures of sun.

More and more divine warriors and commanders gathered in front of Ji Hao. These newborns had no other thought but the most original instinct of devoting themselves to Ji Hao, and following every order of his.

All divine commanders and warriors looked passionately at Ji Hao. Suddenly, he sensed that he could not only command these divine beings to fight for him, more importantly, he could use their powers at any time. When these divine beings composed a battling formation, as long as Ji Hao stood among them, their powers could be used by Ji Hao. Also, Ji Hao could share his own power with them at any moment, to allow them to launch more effective attacks.

Ji Hao was astonished by the power of the heaven. It was such a magical treasure, and could deliver so many amazing possibilities. But, how on earth did it fall? Ji Hao wondered. Was it truly because of the invasion of the non-humankind? Those were a

group of poor, low-grade nobles, who left Pan Yu world hopelessly for an unpredictable adventure, who risked their lives to fight for survival. Were they really strong enough to defeat such a powerful heaven?

Nevertheless, although the heaven was indeed magical, it could not talk. Back in the ancient time, about the true cause for the downfall of the heaven, maybe...maybe somebody knew something? Ji Hao thought of Netherworld Priest, Priest Hua, Priest Mu, his Shifu, and the two uncles. Whatever happened in Pan Gu world, how could anything be hidden from them?

Shaking his head, Ji Hao knew that now wasn't the right time to dig into these things.

He snorted and looked at the Jia Clan warriors who sat on the ground with softened legs, without being able to move, and said, "Capture them all."

Tens of thousands of three-meters and two-feet tall divine commanders, who were feet taller than the divine warriors around them, walked out of the crowd and growled. The sun power surrounding their bodies condensed into golden chains and lunged along with the raging fire, quickly tying these Jia Clan warriors up.

The golden chains condensed from the sun power were scorching hot. These Jia Clan warriors had strong bodies too, but still, their skin and muscles were burned, which made them scream in pain. These golden chains were way too powerful, that the skin and muscles of some relatively weaker Jia Clan warriors were immediately incinerated. Then, the chains wrapped on their bones, burned, causing creaking noises.

Ten-thousand Jia Clan warriors howled together in pain, yet, the divine commanders and warriors had no sense of mercy. They expressionlessly broke the knees of these Jia Clan warriors, pressed their blazing hands on these Jia Clan warriors' shoulders and forcing them to kneel to Ji Hao.

"Where is Dishi Cha? Where is Yemo Tian? Where are they?" Ji Hao walked to the strongest Jia Clan warrior and asked this high-Divine-Magus-level Jia Clan warrior with a strong voice.

"Lord Dishi Cha was suddenly injured days ago. He was in the Divine Origin Pool, controlling divine warriors with a treasure. But suddenly, he was...injured, very badly. We don't know what happened." This Jia Clan warrior looked at Ji Hao in fear and said, "Lord Yemo Tian said something about tactical withdrawal, but the heaven has to be guarded. So, he left us in here and then retreated with Lord Dishi Cha."

'Tactical withdrawal'? Ji Hao opened his mouth, but didn't know what to say. He looked at this Jia Clan warrior speechlessly.

He fled, but did he have to make this sound so less bad? Yemo Tian was a smart one though. Red Lei and the other Sun and Moon knights were captured alive, and Dishi Cha was injured suddenly for a mysterious reason. But, he fled as fast as he could. Very smart!

"What exactly happened to Dishi Cha that injured him so badly?" Ji Hao kept asking.

"A teacup!" In shock and confusion, this Jia Clan warrior looked at Ji Hao and said, "A teacup dropped from the sky, landed on Lord Dishi Cha's chest, and nearly killed him!"

Ji Hao remained silent. He slowly raised his head and looked at the boundless golden and purple clouds above the heaven. A teacup injured Dishi Cha? Which powerful being made a move? Ji Hao felt this was quite absurd and unspeakable.

Ji Hao sneered and shook his head, pointing at these Jia Clan warriors as he shouted, "Take them down and control their souls with a spell. They will all become slave warriors."

Holding the dazzling golden divine seal, Ji Hao gave a word to the followers behind him, then walked to the Divine Sun Palace in big

steps. When Ji Hao sat on the throne in the palace, he heard an especially resonant sound from the center of the heaven.

All stars shone brightly, illuminating the entire Pan Gu world.

Information flooded into Ji Hao's mind, as all the secrets of the heaven revealed themselves to Ji Hao. The heaven was now entirely under his control.

Table of Contents

- The Magus Era
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 1401: For What Purpose
  - Chapter 1402: Perfect Offense and Defense
  - Chapter 1403: Facing Fan Hai
  - Chapter 1404: A Woman’s Hatred
  - Chapter 1405: Fan Gu
  - Chapter 1406: The Shame of A Sword Strike
  - Chapter 1407: The Non-humankind’s Sincerity
  - Chapter 1408: The Same Master Shifu
  - Chapter 1409: White Lotus Altar
  - Chapter 1410: A Messy Start
  - Chapter 1411: Feel Each Other Out
  - Chapter 1412: Ao Hao Fails
  - Chapter 1413: Suppress the Spirit Beast with the Cauldron
  - Chapter 1414: Yu Clan’s Aphorism
  - Chapter 1415: Fight Together
  - Chapter 1416: The Glorious Domination
  - Chapter 1417: The City of Domination
  - Chapter 1418: The Domination Legion
  - Chapter 1419: No War in Liang Zhu City
  - Chapter 1420: Enemy At Liang Zhu City
  - Chapter 1421: Dangerous People Coming in
  - Chapter 1422: Poisoned Tea
  - Chapter 1423: Occupying the Nest
  - Chapter 1424: Meeting by Chance
  - Chapter 1425: Walking into the Trap
  - Chapter 1426: Swim With the Current
  - Chapter 1427: The Highest Conference Hall
  - Chapter 1428: Force on Entrance
  - Chapter 1429: Stepping into Liang Zhu City
  - Chapter 1430: Burn Liang Zhu City
  - Chapter 1431: Countless Captives
  - Chapter 1432: Terrifying Weapon

Chapter 1433: Kill Him Together
Chapter 1434: Destructive Slaughter
Chapter 1435: Fall One After Another
Chapter 1436: Ever-changing
Chapter 1437: Polo Do Changed
Chapter 1438: The Hidden Worry of Destruction
Chapter 1439: Immortal Spirit
Chapter 1440: Great Liberty Arrived
Chapter 1441: Earn Natural Award
Chapter 1442: Invite them to the City
Chapter 1443: Great Liberty Dies
Chapter 1444: The Great Dao of True Water
Chapter 1445: Full-Scale Assault
Chapter 1446: Wrangling
Chapter 1447: Yemo Luoye's Analysis
Chapter 1448: With A Dilemma
Chapter 1449: Dim Glory
Chapter 1450: Leave When It's Finished
Chapter 1451: A Shaking Bad News
Chapter 1452: Reverse the Situation
Chapter 1453: A Fair Covenant
Chapter 1454: A Secret Agreement
Chapter 1455: Liang Zhi in Chaos
Chapter 1456: Secret Discussion
Chapter 1457: Escape Alone
Chapter 1458: Break the Weapon With the Sword
Chapter 1459: Destruction and Thunder Trial
Chapter 1460: Meeting Chi You Again
Chapter 1461: The Scouts are Here
Chapter 1462: Sun and Moon Knights
Chapter 1463: First Fight Against The Sun and Moon Knights
Chapter 1464: True Strong Enemy
Chapter 1465: Maul Shayi Heavily
Chapter 1466: A Chance for a Breakthrough
Chapter 1467: A Man Shaped Sun
Chapter 1468: Joyful
Chapter 1469: Demand An Exorbitant Price
Chapter 1470: Break the City with One Strike
Chapter 1471: A Sleepless Night

Chapter 1472: Pan Gu Mother Land
Chapter 1473: Natural Reward Descends Again
Chapter 1474: Gaze At the World
Chapter 1475: Reforge the Treasures
Chapter 1476: Slaughtering, Challenging
Chapter 1477: Gathering the Light, Launching a Strike
Chapter 1478: The Sun and Moon Samsara
Chapter 1479: Pan Yu Genesis
Chapter 1480: One-eyed Primordial Spirit
Chapter 1481: Race Difference
Chapter 1482: Inhuman Beating
Chapter 1483: Sad Captives
Chapter 1484: Divine Commanders and Warriors
Chapter 1485: The World's Edict
Chapter 1486: The Proud Ones, the Frustrated Ones
Chapter 1487: The Power of a Divine Emperor
Chapter 1488: They Only Follow Strength
Chapter 1489: Passionate Dragons and Phoenixes
Chapter 1490: Three Emperors Swallowed Two Species
Chapter 1491: A Sacred Contract
Chapter 1492: The Right to Bargain
Chapter 1493: Failed to Negotiate
Chapter 1494: Dragons Cry
Chapter 1495: Nourish Them with Dragon Blood
Chapter 1496: Ao Bai
Chapter 1497: Someone with Real Wisdom
Chapter 1498: The Army Marched to the Heaven
Chapter 1499: The Divine Sun Palace
Chapter 1500: Control the Heaven